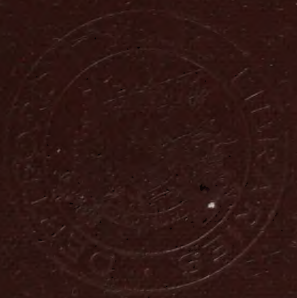


M.S.C

TOUT, T.F.
THE PLACE OF
REIGN OF

12 MSC
TOU
2/D 825.3

LONDON BOROUGH OF LEWISHAM

LIBRARIES DEPARTMENT

BOOK STORE

Books must be returned on or before the last date stamped below or on the date card. Fines on overdue books will be charged:– ~~½d per day for the first week (1d minimum), 1d per day for the second week, 2d per day thereafter~~.

Books are renewable by phone, letter or personal call unless required by another reader.

ALL LIBRARIES are closed on Sundays, Good Friday, Christmas Day, Bank Holidays, and the Saturdays prior to Bank Holidays.

METROPOLITAN SPECIAL COLLECTION

1) 7·9·70
(6) 16/6/-

21. SEP. 1971
(4) 24/2/77

LASER due:
24/7/80+2
BROMLEY

LASER due:
30/4/842
BROMLEY

PUBLICATIONS OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER

HISTORICAL SERIES, No. XXI

The Place of the Reign of Edward II in English History

Sherratt & Hughes
Publishers to the University of Manchester
Manchester: 34 Cross Street
London: 33 Soho Square, W.

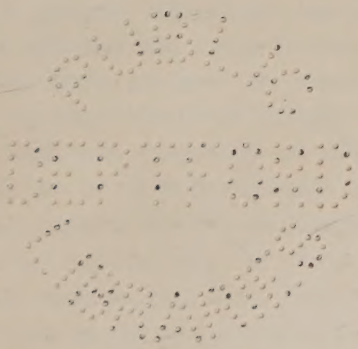
Agents for the United States
Longmans, Green & Co.
443-449 Fourth Avenue, New York

THE PLACE OF THE REIGN OF EDWARD II IN ENGLISH HISTORY

BASED UPON THE FORD LECTURES
DELIVERED IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD IN 1913

BY

T. F. TOUT, M.A., F.B.A.
Bishop Fraser Professor of Mediæval and Ecclesiastical History



MANCHESTER
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS
1914

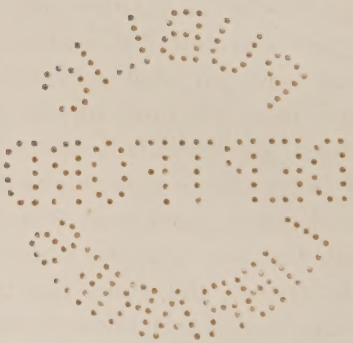
F 63
48

CENTRAL
24343.
LIBRARY

B.3253

942.036

UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER PUBLICATIONS
No. LXXXIX



24343

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

PREFACE.

This book is an expansion and re-arrangement of the Ford Lectures, delivered by me at Oxford in the Hilary term, 1913. It differs, however, considerably from the text of the lectures. This is largely because of my conviction that there is an essential diversity of aim and method between oral discourses and a printed book, which should compel in all cases a certain readjustment of treatment and focus, when the former are made the basis of the latter. I have not indeed scrupled to retain conversational turns of phrase, and other features which suggest the spoken rather than the written word. But in revising the course for the press I have thought it desirable to enter into much greater detail than was possible, or expedient, in a short course of lectures, and to add a large number of notes and two long appendices, which necessarily could not, even in rough outline, be put before the most long suffering of academic audiences. In both the lectures and the book, a general familiarity has been assumed with the ordinary political and constitutional history of the reign. There has been no need to relate once more a narrative which has been often told already. The last two chapters of the book are essentially an addition, being a free expansion of two or three paragraphs only of the last lecture. In these chapters, notably as regards the dealings of Clement V with Gascony and the whole genesis of the compulsory staple system, the story has been related at some length, because, so far as I know, it has never before been told. Generally however, I have aimed, not so much at narrative, as the setting forth of a special point of view. I give details only when they seem to be directly illustrative of that point of view. This will explain a certain arbitrari-

ness in some of the topics selected for fuller illustration, and the varying scale on which they have been treated.

When asked to deliver the Ford Lectures last year, I was absorbed in a study that has seldom been far away from my thoughts since 1909, though the end of it unfortunately seems hardly in sight. I have been attempting to investigate the extent to which the English king's court and household remained a chief centre of national administration and finance, even after the development of the constitution had brought about the beginnings of the parliamentary system and the consequential separation from the court of the two great administrative departments of state, the exchequer and the chancery, which by that process were tending to become to a considerable extent amenable to aristocratic, if not to parliamentary, control. Under these circumstances, the survival of the quasi-autocratic position of the monarchy in most regions of administration, and even to some extent in finance, seemed to me to require explanation. Accordingly I strove to find that explanation by examining in such detail as the sources allowed, the history of those branches of the household most concerned in the general work of governing the nation, namely the king's wardrobe and the king's chamber. Closely associated with these was the history of the various "small seals," such as the "privy seal," the "secret seal," the "signet," which were the instruments of these two organs of domestic administration. Their significance had first been suggested to me by M. Déprez's stimulating and interesting introduction to the diplomatic of the small seals.[1] Pursuing these subjects as far as the Revolution of 1399, I was

1. Eugène Déprez, *Etudes de Diplomatique anglaise, 1272—1485. Le sceau privé; le sceau secret; le signet*, Paris, 1908. My views on this book have been expressed in *English Historical Review*, xxiii, 556—559. I may take this opportunity of saying that I have now convinced myself that there were "rolls of privy seals," as M. Déprez suggested; but they were of course not "chancery enrolments," but made in the privy seal office, and now, I fear, entirely lost.

impressed with the exceptional importance of the reign of Edward II in the history of administrative development in England, and notably as the point in which the marked differentiation of what may roughly be called "court administration" and "national administration," first became accentuated. It seemed to me that this short and turbulent period was the turning point of the whole process. It was natural, then, when I put aside for a time my chief task, in order to fulfil the pleasant duty which my old University had imposed upon me, that I should willingly embrace the opportunity of studying, alongside with the administrative history of Edward II, such other aspects of his reign as would enable me to ascertain whether my doctrine of a turning-point might not be extended from the administrative to the general history of the period. Fuller investigation has convinced me that this can safely be done. I should add that the material, collected for the purpose of the larger book, allowed me to anticipate in outline its conclusions when speaking of administrative history. A further amplification and justification of these views will, I trust, in due course appear in the forthcoming work.

How far I have succeeded in establishing my theory of the turning-point, my readers will judge better than I can. I have not, however, gone over the whole vast field with such minuteness as to be in a position to offer more than studies of an avowedly provisional character. I shall be satisfied if I suggest a standpoint which future workers may examine and criticize. When the detailed series of monographs, which, I hope, will soon be devoted to this reign, have seen the light, I shall be equally content, whether further investigation confirms or rejects the very provisional theories I have ventured to put forth. But I sincerely trust that both the book and the appendices will be found of some use to future workers on the period.

I have endeavoured to make my book more practical, by indicating, as I go along, what work is, to my knowledge, being done on the reign, and I am glad here to record that a not inconsiderable portion of that work is being undertaken by my colleagues and pupils. If the first results of some of this had not been before me, I should have found my task much harder than it has been. I have mentioned the names of some such workers, as occasion has arisen in the course of my discussions. If I do not set down here their names, or the names of others who have helped me, I am none the less grateful for their assistance and advice. I hope that by making this reign, for the next few years, the centre of the "seminar" studies of my pupils here, we shall some of us have opportunities of testing its soundness.

To many other friends I owe no small measure of thanks, and notably to numerous members of the staff of the Public Record Office, who have never grudged trouble in smoothing my path for me. Here I should wish to express a particular obligation to Mr. C. G. Crump, Mr. Charles Johnson and Mr. C. Hilary Jenkinson, all of the Public Record Office.

To sound a still more personal note in conclusion, I should like to say—after intimate association with the work of the Publications Committee of the University of Manchester during the ten years the Committee has existed, —how great a pleasure it is to me to issue this book with its imprint. In instituting this Committee in 1904, and providing it with a regular income, the Council of the University made a real contribution to the "endowment of research" in all faculties of the University, notably in the faculty of arts and not least in the department of history. If there is gradually growing up a "Manchester school of history," it is in no small measure due to the wise liberality that has made it possible for twenty-two volumes

of an historical series to be printed for the University within the last ten years. Our publications are still in their infancy, and we have still much to learn. Two years ago, however, we had the good fortune to secure the services of Mr. H. M. McKechnie as our secretary. Every author, who has published a volume under his auspices, knows well the debt under which he lies to Mr. McKechnie's watchfulness and precision in all that relates to seeing his book through the press. But only the Chairman of the Publications Committee is in a position to see in its fulness the secretary's devotion and success, and he would feel that he was neglecting a duty if he omitted to express here his appreciation of Mr. McKechnie's work.

I am indebted for the index to my old pupil and present secretary, Miss Jennie M. Potter, B.A.

T. F. TOUT.

The University,
Manchester,
25 March, 1914.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE	PAGE
PREFACE		v-ix
LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS		xvi
Chapter I.		
INTRODUCTORY		1–35
(1) Authorities	1–8	
(2) The Personal Aspects of the reign	9–25	
(3) The General Scope of the Work	25–35	
Chapter II.		
THE INHERITANCE OF EDWARD II.		36–73
(1) Policy and Administration in General	36–43	
(2) The Exchequer under Edward I.	43–57	
(3) The Chancery under Edward I.	58–62	
(4) The Wardrobe under Edward I.	62–73	
Chapter III.		
THE STRUGGLE FOR THE ORDINANCES		74–110
(1) The Three Periods of the Reign	74–76	
(2) The Changes after Edward II's Accession	76–85	
(3) The Ordinances and the Ordainers	85–93	
(4) The Execution of the Ordinances (1311—1314)	93–100	
(5) Changes after Bannockburn	100–110	
Chapter IV.		
THE LATER YEARS OF THE REIGN (1318—1327)		111–156
(1) The Rise of the Middle Party (1316—1318)	111–121	
(2) The Treaty of Leake and the York Parliaments of 1318, 1319 and 1320	121–136	
(3) The Revolt of the March and the Fall of the Despensers (1320—1321)	136–146	
(4) The Fall of Lancaster and the Reaction of 1322—1326	146–156	

PAGE PAGE

Chapter V.

THE ADMINISTRATIVE REFORMS OF EDWARD II 157–204

(1) The Methods and Authors of the Reforms - - - - 157–161
(2) The Household Reforms - - 161–180
A. The Privy Seal - - 161–168
B. The Chamber - - - 168–175
C. The Wardrobe - - 175–180
(3) The Chancery Reforms - - 180–186
(4) The Exchequer Reforms - - 187–204

Chapter VI.

FOREIGN AND IMPERIAL POLICY, WARFARE AND THE CHURCH - - - - 205–235

(1) External Policy - - - 205–224
A. Scotland - - - 206–207
B. Ireland - - - 207–208
C. Wales - - - - 209–211
D. France and Gascony - - 212–224
(2) The Art of War - - - 224–228
(3) Ecclesiastical Policy - - 228–235

Chapter VII.

SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC HISTORY, ORIGINS OF THE STAPLE - - - - - 236–266

(1) State of Society under Edward II 236–241
(2) The Establishment of the Compulsory Staple - - - - 241–266

Appendix I.

THE HOUSEHOLD ORDINANCES OF EDWARD II. 267–318

INTRODUCTORY - - - - 267–270
A. THE HOUSEHOLD ORDINANCE OF YORK, 6 Dec., 1318 - - - 270–314
B. THE HOUSEHOLD ORDINANCE OF YORK, June, 1323 - - - 314–318

Appendix II.

PAGE PAGE

LISTS OF OFFICIALS UNDER EDWARD II - - 319–398

A. OFFICERS OF THE CHANCERY - - 319–330

(1) Chancellors and Keepers of the Great Seal - - - - 319–328

(2) The Keepers of the Chancery Rolls and of the House of Converts - 328–330

B. OFFICERS OF THE EXCHEQUER - 330–351

(1) Treasurers - - - - 331–333
(2) Barons - - - - 333–344
(3) Chancellors of the Exchequer - 344–345
(4) Remembrancers of the Exchequer 345–349
(5) Chamberlains of the Receipt - 349–351

C. OFFICERS OF THE WARDROBE AND HOUSEHOLD - - - - 351–357

(1) Lay Officers of the Household (Stewards and Chamberlains) - - 353–355

(2) Chief Clerks of the Wardrobe (keepers, controllers and cofferers of the wardrobe, keepers of the privy seal and keepers of the great wardrobe) 355–357

D. MISCELLANEOUS OFFICERS - - 357–366

(1) Justices and Keepers of the Forest 357–360
(2) Escheators - -- - - 361–364
(3) Keepers of the Exchanges of London and Canterbury - - - 364–366
(4) Mayors of the Merchants of the Staple - - - - 366

E. OFFICERS OF THE TWO BENCHES - 366–374

(1) Chief Justices, Justices and Chief Clerks of the Bench for Common Pleas 366–373

(2) Chief Justices and Justices of Pleas *coram rege* - - - 373–374

PAGE PAGE

F. Officers of the Principality of Wales and of the Earldom of Chester 374–384

(1) Justices of North and South Wales 379
(2) Justices of Chester - - - 379–380
(3) Chamberlains of North Wales - 380–381
(4) Chamberlains of South Wales - 381–383
(5) Chamberlains of Chester - - 383–384

G. Officers of Ireland - - - 384–389

(1) Justices and Lieutenants - - 387–388
(2) Chancellors - - - - 388
(3) Treasurers of the Exchequer at Dublin 388–389

H. Officers of Scotland - - 389–392

(1) Keepers and Lieutenants - - - 391
(2) Chancellors - - - - 391
(3) Chamberlains and Receivers - 391–392

I. Officers of the Duchy of Gascony 392–398

(1) Seneschals of Gascony - - 394–396
(2) Constables of Bordeaux - - 397–398

J. Seneschals of Ponthieu and Montreuil - 398

Index - - - - - - - 399-421

LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS.

The abbreviations commonly used are too obvious to need explanation, but for motives of space, especially in the lists in Appendix II, a severe form of abbreviation has been occasionally adopted that might lead to confusion without notification. In cases where the dates are omitted in the references to the various calendars, it is always to be understood that the year is that which is mentioned in the relevant text.

Calendar of Patent Rolls, *C.P.R.* and *P.*
Calendar of Close Rolls, *C.C.R.* and *Cl.*
Calendar of Charter Rolls, *C. Chart. R.*
Charter Rolls, *Ch. R.*
Calendar of Fine Rolls, *C. Fine R.* and *F.*
Calendar of Documents, relating to Scotland, *C.D.S.*
Calendar of Inquisitions, *Inq.*
Gascon Rolls (the originals), *G. R.*
Bémont's Rôles Gascons, *R. G.*
Issue Rolls, *I. R.*
Receipt Rolls, *R. R.*
Liberate Rolls, *Lib.*
Pipe Rolls, *Pipe.*
Chancery Warrants, *Chanc. War.*
Enrolled Exchequer Accounts (Wardrobe and Household), *Enr. Accts.* (*W. and H.*).
Exchequer Accounts, King's Remembrancer, *Exch. Accts. K.R.*
Miscellaneous Books of the Exchequer, Treasury of Receipt, *Misc. Books Exch., T. R.*
Historical Documents relating to Scotland, *Hist. Doc. Scot.*
Palgrave's Parliamentary Writs of Edward II, *Parl. Writs* and *P.W.*
Hall's Red Book of the Exchequer, Rolls Series, *R. B. Exch.*
Year Books of Edward II, Selden Society, *Y. B.*
Madox's History of the Exchequer, Madox.
Ormerod's History of Cheshire, Ormerod.
R. Stewart Brown's Cheshire Chamberlains' Accounts, 1301–60, Brown.
Arthur Jones' Flintshire Ministers' Accounts, 1301—1328, Jones.
Foss' Biographia Juridica, Foss, or Foss, *Biog. Jur.*
Dugdale's Origines Juridiciales, Chronica Series, *Chron. Ser.*

PUBLIC
DEPTFORD
LIBRARIES

THE PLACE OF THE REIGN OF EDWARD II IN ENGLISH HISTORY.

I.

INTRODUCTORY.

(1) Authorities.

I have followed the fashion in devoting my chief attention to record sources, none of which, old or new, printed or unprinted, can be regarded as having yielded up all its fruit to the harvester. I have found much that is illuminating, and something that has been disregarded, even in the ancient collections of printed documents, notably in Rymer's *Foedera,*[1] Palgrave's *Parliamentary Writs,*[2] in the Statute Book[3] and the *Rolls of Parliament,*[4] among which latter I must particularly emphasise the extremely valuable and little-known rolls of the parliaments of 1318 and 1319, printed more than sixty years ago by Cole.[5] I also spent much time on the numerous calendars of chancery rolls for which historians are indebted to the present deputy keeper of the records, Sir Henry Maxwell-Lyte. Of these the calendars of patent, close, fine and charter rolls are now complete for the reign, as is the almost equally valuable calendar of inquisitions *post mortem*.[6] From these indispensable calendars we obtain an insight into the methods and working of Edward II's chancery such as was denied to all our predecessors. Moreover, they afford a mass of detail, illustrating every

1. *Foedera*, vol. ii, pt. i (1818), Record Com.
2. *Parliamentary Writs*, vol. ii, pts. i, ii, iii, Record Com. (1830-4).
3. *Statutes of the Realm*, i, 153-196 (1810).
4. *Rotuli Parliamentorum*, i, 273-479 (after 1777) and Index (1832).
5. Henry Cole, *Documents illustrative of English History selected from the Records of the Exchequer*, (1844), Record Com., commonly quoted as Cole's *Records*, especially pp. 1-46 and 47-54.
6. *Calendar of the Patent Rolls of Edward II*, 5 vols., 1894-1904; *Calendar of the Close Rolls of Edward II*, 4 vols., 1892-1898; *Calendar of the Fine Rolls*, ii and iii, 1912; *Calendar of the Charter Rolls*, iii, 107-757 (1908); *Calendar of Inquisitions post mortem*, vols., v and vi (1908-1910). To these should be added *Calendars of Various Chancery Rolls, 1277-1326* (1912).

aspect of early fourteenth century history, which has up to now been very little used, but which will enable careful workers to study in detail nearly every branch of the history of the time. No doubt the calendars have their limitations. They have been exposed to much fair, and to some unfair criticism, but they are of such enormous value to historical students that their blemishes are but as spots on the sun. Those who criticise the calendars most are those who use them most, and all workers on them, who have any sense of proportion, will lay little stress on the occasional shortcomings of the bold pioneers whose labours have hewn a path, which all may follow, through the tangled underwoods of our ancient chancery records. It is, however, necessary to warn the student of the history of institutions and administration that, especially as regards the earlier published calendars, he can never feel sure that he has collected all the information that they contain until he has worked through the text for himself, since he cannot entirely rely upon the indexes in this relation. The one thing, however, about these publications, which it is hard to forgive, is the ill-judged parsimony which has printed many of the early volumes of the calendars upon paper of so poor a quality that many pages are already crumbling into yellow dust upon our bookshelves. We are still in need of a calendar of the *Gascon Rolls*, and of the other chancery series which especially illustrate the extra-English activities of the administration of Edward II. The *Rotuli Scotiae* of the Record Commission do something to supply one side of this deficiency,[1] as does the *Calendar of Documents concerning Scotland*, which covers all this reign.[2]

Not less important than the chancery records are the records of the exchequer, among which are also included documents of special importance for us, the remaining archives of the king's wardrobe and the king's chamber. These have no surviving records of their own, but they had

1. *Rotuli Scotiae, 1291-1516*, Record Com., i, 55-205 (1814).
2. *Calendar of Documents relating to Scotland*, iii, 1—164 (1887).

to submit their accounts to the exchequer, and the care of exchequer officers has preserved so many of them among their own archives that we can obtain from the records of the exchequer almost as much insight into the working of the wardrobe and the chamber, as we can into the operation of the national treasury itself. Unluckily each student of the exchequer records has still to do his pioneer work with his own axe, though there is good reason for believing that the authorities of the Public Record Office are now taking in hand the business of calendaring the chief exchequer series of enrolments. Meanwhile, however, the exchequer records are so numerous and diversified, and so bewildering in their variety, that no single individual can hope to do more than sample them for himself. The scholar must here make a selection, and his selection will be determined, partly by the probabilities of the particular series yielding him the information that he wants, and partly by the bulk of that series. For my part I must confess that I paid very slight attention to the pipe rolls, the oldest and most famous of exchequer records. This is not because the pipe rolls of the fourteenth century are of little value. I believe that the pipe rolls of the Edwards are quite as important as the pipe rolls of the twelfth century, though few scholars have worked through them and no society has ever been started to set them forth in print. It is rather because their extraordinary bulk has terrified me, and because a series of individual accounts between the king and his numerous sheriffs, bailiffs and ministers, is ill-adapted to give that general conspectus of finance and administration for which I have been seeking. For analogous reasons I have dealt very little with the memoranda rolls, the most puzzling and difficult to study of all the records of the exchequer. I have rather sought for information by working through the more manageable receipt rolls and issue rolls, and I think that my examination of these documents has not been wholly without fruit. These have recently been re-arranged and re-numbered on more scholarly lines than those of the

traditional classification, and my references are in each case to the new numbers.[1] Existing references to the earlier numeration make it desirable also to preserve it.

I have also gone carefully through a large number of wardrobe and chamber accounts. These are partly to be found in the exchequer enrolments, still appended to the pipe rolls for the greater part of this period, but soon, as the result of one of the administrative reforms of this reign, to be enrolled separately as a new series of "foreign" accounts.[2] The exchequer enrolments of wardrobe accounts are, however, always short and summary. Fuller information as to the doings of wardrobe and chamber is preferentially to be sought in the more elaborate documents which responsible clerks of these departments handed in to the exchequer. These have to be brought together from very different quarters. The greater bulk of them are to be found among the records preserved for the exchequer by the king's remembrancer,[3] but some lurk in other collections of the exchequer and chancery and many have perished altogether, and some of the best that survive have escaped from official custody and are to be found in the British Museum, and even further afield. It is from these sources that I have chiefly gathered my material, but I should add to them the very numerous original writs of privy and secret seal, still to be found in the archives of the chancery and exchequer, where they have been preserved as warrants or vouchers for the issue of writs from the chancery, or for the delivery of money or money's worth from the exchequer.

1. These for Edward II. are now, Issue Rolls, nos. 141-216; Receipt Rolls, nos. 176-266. Mr. C. H. Jenkinson has given me much help with these.

2. A list of the enrolments under this head can be found in the *List of Enrolled Foreign Accounts*, pp. 102-9, (*P.R.O. Lists and Indexes*, no. xi, 1900).

3. What now survive are roughly indicated in *List of Various Accounts*, notably pp. 220-270, (*P.R.O. Lists and Indexes*, No. xxxv, 1912). Modern rearrangements, from the times of Joseph Hunter onwards, have played havoc with the traditional classifications, and greatly add to the difficulties of the modern researcher, who is liable to take the present system for more than it is worth, and who finds, not in this relation only, that the ancient references are now extremely difficult to verify.

The chief chronicles for Edward II's reign are well known, but before briefly dealing with them I should like to remark in passing that re-reading even the best known chronicles in the light of the study of records, many passages that hitherto had suggested very little become full of meaning. Later on, we shall see in more than one case, how an obscure passage in a poor chronicle is of real value in illustrating administrative growth, but to appreciate its importance we have to know what roughly were the chief administrative developments of the reign. I have been struck in particular with the interest which the intelligent London annalists shew in the working of the machine of government, and the value of their occasional references to it. For the extra-administrative aspects of the reign we could not do without the chroniclers, and we may well be thankful that some of the best of them have been so conveniently brought together in Stubbs' masterly two volumes of the *Chronicles of the Reigns of Edward I and Edward II.* Of these the *Annals of London* are invaluable up to 1317;[1] the trustworthy and detailed *Annals of St. Paul's* cover the whole period;[2] the canon of Bridlington's *Deeds of Edward of Carnarvon,* though compiled more than 40 years after Edward's death, are of special importance for the critical events that took place in the north;[3] and the *Life of Edward II,* ascribed on slight evidence to a monk of Malmesbury, is the most human, most coloured, and in some ways the most sympathetic and most critical of a not very strong series of chronicles.[4] We may no longer speak of, or use, a life of Edward II which even Stubbs was content to accept as written by Sir Thomas de la More; but the early sections of Geoffrey le Baker's *Chronicle,* of which the so-called life by More is but an

1. *Annales Londonienses* in Stubbs, *Chronicles of the reigns of Edward I and Edward II,* i, 151-241 (Rolls Series, 1882).
2. *Annales Paulini* in *Ib.*, i, 255-324.
3. *Gesta Edwardi de Carnarvan* in *Ib.*, ii, 25-95.
4. *Vita Edward II monachi cujusdam Malmesburiensis* in *Ib.*, ii, 155-289.

excerpt, have independent value for the last three years of the reign. They can now be read in Sir Edward Maunde Thompson's elaborate edition, and, though Baker, the most journalistic and most rabidly patriotic of the Edwardian annalists, is at his worst in dealing with a period somewhat before his own personal memory, we may still find in this history, written after the battle of Poitiers, some touches of sound tradition, some long fragments based, like More's relation of the deposition of Edward II, on trustworthy contemporary documents, which in any other form are never likely to be known to us.[1] Unluckily it is extremely improbable that we shall ever be able to ascertain what measure of truth there is in the moving story of the doing to death of Edward II, by which the early portion of Baker's chronicle will always be best remembered.

The nucleus of Baker's history comes from Adam Murimuth[2]; and Murimuth, with a few personal touches after 1325, is for this period essentially a reproduction of the *Flores Historiarum*, which, so far as this reign is concerned, emanate not from St. Albans, but from Westminster Abbey,[3] where they were written from 1307 to 1325 by Robert of Reading, one of the monks. Robert's chronicle is valuable as that of a close but bitterly partial observer, the most thoroughgoing and unscrupulous of the literary enemies of Edward II, who hated Templars and Dominicans as profoundly as he disliked the king and his courtiers, and strove to cloak his literary aridity by a pompous and artificial diction that sometimes makes him hard to understand. The Rochester version [4] adds a few, and the Tintern version [5] a good many new details to the

1. *Chronicon Galfridi le Baker de Swynebroke* pp. 3-34, ed. E. M. Thompson, Oxford (1889).

2. *Chronicon Adae Murimuth*, pp. 11-54, ed. E. M. Thompson, Rolls Series, 1889.

3. *Flores Historiarum*, iii, 137-232, ed. Luard, Rolls Series, 1890. The Chetham MS., the chief source for this, was started at St. Alban's but went to Westminster about 1265; *ib.*, i, xiii.

4. *Ib.* iii, 327-9.

5. *Ib.* iii, 328-348. This MS., originally at St. Benet's Holme in Norfolk, went about 1304 to Tintern. It is another interesting illustration of the way in which these continuations of Matthew Paris were hawked about; *ib.* i, xxii.

Westminster narrative, the latter being of special value for the march of Wales, a district seldom happy in possessing anything approaching to a local chronicle.

The true St. Albans chroniclers of Edward II are John Trokelowe, who extends to 1322, and Henry Blaneford, who mainly deals with the year 1323.[1] Both are somewhat meagre, but both, especially Trokelowe, take a more favourable view of Edward and his friends than most of the contemporary annalists. Trokelowe is wanting in chronological precision and method, while Blaneford, in his surviving shape, is but a brief and mutilated fragment. As regards northern affairs we may add to the annals of Bridlington, the chronicle of the Cistercian abbey of Meaux in the East Riding of Yorkshire,[2] and the so-called chronicle of Lanercost, which is more likely to have emanated from a Franciscan convent, probably at Carlisle, possibly at Berwick.[3] A few valuable northern details can also be gleaned from the early passages of the *Scalacronica* of Sir Thomas Gray of Heaton, the only lay annalist of this reign.[4] The inaccessibility of the limited editions of these last two writers, makes the recent translations of Sir Herbert Maxwell useful, though their scholarship cannot always be implicitly relied upon.[5] A great mass of Scottish detail is in Barbour's *Bruce*,[6] but that epic of Scottish nationality was composed fifty years later, and requires

1. *Chronica Monasterii S. Albani. J. de Trokelowe et H. de Blaneford, nec non quorundam anonymorum, Chronica*, ed. H. T. Riley, Rolls Series, 1866; Trokelowe, pp. 63-127; Blaneford, pp. 131-152.

2. *Chronicon Monasterii de Melsa*, ii, 279-354, ed. E. A. Bond, Rolls Series, 1867.

3. *Chronicon de Lanercost*, ii, 209-258, ed. Joseph Stevenson, Maitland Club, 1839. Stevenson's attribution of the chronicle to the Carlisle Franciscans is now questioned by Dr. James Wilson, who gives reasons for the traditional view, or, in the case of its proving untenable, prefers to assign it to the Franciscans of Berwick. The internal evidence is somewhat contradictory, and the problem can hardly be regarded as settled.

4. *Scalacronica*, pp. 136-153, Maitland Club, 1836.

5. *The Chronicle of Lanercost*, Glasgow, 1913. A discussion of the authorship by Dr. Wilson is on pp. ix-xxxi. *Scalacronica as recorded by Sir Thomas Gray*, pp. 45-78, Glasgow, 1907.

6. There are many good editions of Barbour's *Bruce*. The most recent, and one of the most handy and scholarly, is that edited by Mr. W. M. Mackenzie (1909).

caution in its use, though it should in no wise be wholly rejected, notably as regards the great mass of detail related in it about the fight of Bannockburn. The only other chronicles worth mention are the *Polychronicon* of Higden,[1] the last chapters of Walter of Hemingburgh,[2] and some short passages, of special value to us, in a continuation of Trevet, only published in the first edition of that writer, issued in 1719, and therefore not easily accessible.[3]

It would take us too far from our special purpose to dwell upon the mass of ecclesiastical correspondence, such as that contained in the letter books of Christ Church, Canterbury,[4] in the various printed episcopal registers of the reign,[5] or the large amount of material for the history of the dissolution of the Templars. Still less relevant is the legal material, notable among which are the *Year Books*, published by the Selden Society through the impulse of the late F. W. Maitland.[6] A last word may refer to the municipal material, some of the most important for us being that contained in the *Munimenta Gildhallae Londoniensis*.[7]

1. *Polychronicon Ranulphi Higden*, viii, 296-323, ed. J. R. Lumby, Rolls Series (1882).

2. *Chronicon Walteri de Hemingburgh*, ii, 269-296. This hardly extends to 1315.

3. *Nicholai Trevet Annales*, ed. Anthony Hall, Oxford, 1719.

4. *Literae Cantuarienses*, i, 32-204, ed. Sheppard, Rolls Series (1887), of special importance for the last years of the reign.

5. Among the most useful printed episcopal registers of the reign may be mentioned Walter Stapeldon's *Exeter Register* (1307-26), ed. Hingeston-Randolph (1892); John Sandall and Rigaud of Assier's [de Asserio] *Winchester Registers* (1316-18 and 1320-3), ed. Baigent, Hampshire Record Soc. (1897); Richard Swinfield and Adam Orleton's *Hereford Registers* (1307-17 and 1317-26), C. and Y. Soc., ed. Capes and Bannister (1909 and 1908); the *London Registers* of Ralph Baldock (1307-13), Gilbert Seagrave (1314-16), Richard Newport (1317-18), and Stephen Gravesend (1318-27), ed. Fowler, C. & Y. Soc. (1911); John Halton's *Carlisle Register* (1307-24), C. & Y. Soc. with an introduction by T. F. Tout (1913), and John Droxford's [Drokensford] *Wells Register* (1309-27), ed. Hobhouse, Somerset Record Soc. (1887). Of even greater importance is the Record Office *Calendar of Papal Registers, Letters*, ii, 25-253, which covers this reign.

6. *Year Books of Edward II*, Selden Soc., seven volumes, extending to 1314, have already been published, edited by Maitland, Turner, Vernon-Harcourt and Bolland (1903-13).

7. *Munimenta Gildhallae Londoniensis*, ed. H. T. Riley, Rolls Series, especially vol. ii, (1860), the *Liber Custumarum*, compiled at the end of Edward II's reign.

(2) The Personal Aspects of the Reign.

The personal aspects of any mediæval period have mainly to be learnt from the chronicles and similar material for narrative history. It is only very occasionally that a record throws a direct light on any problem of personal character, though the abundant details records give us, as to external acts, may often afford new material for the study of motives and therefore for appreciation of character. Nevertheless we have no need to go to unpublished records to ascertain new facts that help us to determine the character of Edward II and his contemporaries. If then, I begin what I have to say by a few reflections on the personality of the king and of some of his chief agents and enemies, it is not because there is anything very new to offer on this aspect of my theme. There is little fresh to be said as to the personal deficiencies of the unlucky Edward II, that first king after the Norman Conquest, as Stubbs has truly said, who was "not a man of business well acquainted with the routine of government."[1] Chroniclers do not often all agree, but their agreement is absolutely wonderful in dealing with the character of Edward of Carnarvon.[2] They all present the same general picture of that strong, handsome, weak-willed and frivolous king who cared neither for battles nor tournaments, neither politics nor business, and had no other wish than to amuse himself. What contemporaries found hardest to understand was that Edward was not content with seeking his distractions after a royal fashion by participating with his barons in such

1. Stubbs, *Cons. Hist.*, ii, 328 (1887).

2. The most famous passage in the chronicles on this subject is that in *Polychronicon*, viii, 298-300. This is copied out, word for word, in Knighton, i, 407-8, and with omissions and verbal changes in Canon of Bridlington, p. 91, and *Chron. de Melsa*, iii, 280-1. Other important personal illustrations are in Monk of Malmesbury, pp. 191-2; Lanercost, p. 236; *Scalacronica*, p. 136; and *Cont. Trevet*, p. 18. There is some risk in arguing what were Edward's personal tastes from records such as the correspondence summarised in *Deputy Keeper of Records, Ninth Report*, app. ii, 246-9, and entries of expenses in wardrobe books, whether of the king or the prince. All great men's households had their minstrels, stud, kennel, etc.

recognised dissipations as public opinion allowed. He drank and gambled, it is true, and his taste for country pursuits included the traditional delight of his race in hunting, and in the breeding of horses and hounds. As prince he was as well able to cheer his solitude with the company of his high-born nephew, Gilbert of Clare, as with that of Peter of Gaveston, the Gascon adventurer.[1] Yet as king he systematically avoided the society of his nobles for the upstart courtiers who successfully turned his heart from his natural counsellors, the magnates of the land. In the suspected society of his personal favourites about the court, Edward gratified his love of such ignoble sports as racing, rowing, driving, play-acting, farming, smith's work, thatching, digging and similar "mechanic arts," such as no mediæval gentleman had ever affected.

So far all the chroniclers are agreed, though they may vary in tone from bitter malignity to easy-going tolerance or charitable contempt. At one end of the scale is the sympathetic annalist whom we agree without much reason to call the monk of Malmesbury. This writer finds in the king's backslidings excellent material for gratifying his taste for moralising, but his good wishes culminate only in the pious hope that as the king's best friends get killed off, or are compulsorily relegated to private life, Edward will not do so badly in the future as he had admittedly done in the past. A somewhat more charitable estimate is given by Trokelowe, the St. Albans chronicler. While most writers suggest that Edward was no better than a coward, notably when he fled in a panic from the defeat of Bannockburn, Trokelowe describes in vivid phrase how Edward, roused by the spectacle of his friends' slaughter, rushed, like a lioness bereft of her cubs, on the victorious Scots and drained the life blood of his enemies with his glittering sword, until his escort dragged him against his will to a place of safety.[3] But St. Albans monks thought

1. *Deputy Keeper's Ninth Report*, app. ii. p. 248.
2. Malmesbury, pp. 237-40.
3. Trokelowe, p. 86.

well of a king who ever loved to visit their house and to propitiate the convent with rich gifts and offerings. In striking contrast to the benevolence of Trokelowe stands the malignity of the Westminster chronicler, Robert of Reading, who resented Edward's aversion to Westminster[1] as bitterly as the barons resented his dislike to their society. But we need not trust too much Robert of Reading, for what are we to think of the fairness of a partisan who believed—I quote his words—that the Dayspring from on High visited Earl Guy of Warwick[2] when that ruffianly partisan, regardless of the plighted word of the associated earls, sought out and murdered Gaveston in utter defiance of the terms of his capitulation?

It was not so much the king's vices as his idleness and incompetence which his subjects complained of. After all, the business of a mediæval king was to govern, and a monarch, who would not take the trouble to do his appointed work, had no right to go on reigning at all. We have therefore to make some allowance for the austerity and the grim earnestness of the mediæval mind, which took life and work so seriously, and found so little room for distraction and pleasure in its theory of the universe. Perhaps we more frivolous moderns might judge Edward of Carnarvon less severely than his ascetic contemporaries. If he did not like work, he was not very vicious; he stuck loyally to his friends and was fairly harmless, being nobody's enemy so much as his own. Had the mediæval point of view allowed a lay prince to study at Oxford, and

1. In *Flores Hist.*, iii, 169, Reading notes in 1315 how "rex manerium de Insula. . . a conventu Westmonasterii violenter detinuit, nihil solvens pro eodem," and in 1320, records on p. 193, the king's seizure of "quoddam tigurium de patrimonio sancti Petri . . . Burgundia nuncupatum, non sine nota sacrilegii, violenter occupavit." On p. 232 he is equally severe on the division in 1325 of the exchequer at Westminster, and the holding of parliaments at Lincoln and elsewhere away from the capital (p. 173). The bad government of the abbey and the total suspension of the rebuilding operations, shew that Westminster in those days left much to be desired.

2. *Ib.*, iii, 151. "A paterno solio respexit afflictum populum *Oriens ex alto* gratiam infundens in corde militis sui, domini Gwidonis de Warewyk, etc." The previous remark, how Pembroke had left Gaveston at Deddington "casui dativo dictum Petrum relinquens ad ablativum vero in brevi transferendum" is as brutal in idea as it is execrable as a jest.

had fourteenth century Oxford known the meaning of sports and pastimes, Edward would likely have distinguished himself as a driver of fours-in-hand and as an athlete. He would have shewn his skill in "mechanic arts" by his knowledge of motor cars and perhaps even have rowed in the University eight. Unluckily his ignorance of Latin would have made it impossible for him ever to have passed Responsions.

Even Edward's friends were not so black as they have been painted. Gaveston himself has been singularly unfortunate in the modern writers who have essayed to depict his character and career.[1] The worst that can be certainly said against him is that he was not a serious politician, that he never aspired to office in the state,[2] that he had too keen an eye to the main chance, that he looked too closely after the financial interests of his Gascon

1. These are W. P. Dodge, *Piers Gaveston. A chapter in early constitutional history*, 1899, and M. Dimitresco, *Pierre de Gaveston : sa biographie et son rôle*, 1898. The former is altogether unsatisfactory, and the latter in no wise represents the school of Paris at its best.

2. Gaveston is often spoken of as Edward II's chamberlain, but the evidence is more than doubtful. The best comes from *Annales Paulini*, p. 258, which say that on his accession Edward II "Petrum . . . . fecit secretarium et camerarium regni summum," and afterwards earl of Cornwall. This is important, for it is almost inconceivable that Gaveston continued to act as chamberlain after he had become earl of Cornwall. As he became earl on 6 Aug., he could only have been chamberlain for less than a month. Geoffrey the Baker, p. 6, who wrote after 1356, is the first to suggest that Gaveston remained chamberlain for the whole of his subsequent career (Hugo Despenser filius fuit ordinatus camerarius regis loco Petri), but Baker is at his worst in dealing with details, as his account of Despenser's appointment, which he puts five years too early, clearly shews. *Ann. London.*, p. 151, speak of Peter as "regium domum tenens," a vague phrase, which might suggest the chamberlainship. I have found no record evidence that Gaveston was ever chamberlain, but that office is so seldom mentioned in the records of the reign that the argument of silence is worthless. The monk of Malmesbury suggests a possible solution when he says, p. 155, that Gaveston was "vivente rege Edwardo sene, juvenis Edwardi . . . camerarius familiarissimus." Unluckily, the extant household accounts of the prince of Wales do not bear this statement out. I am inclined to account for all these vague assertions of the chroniclers by the fact that "camerarius" was often still used in a vague sense for any officer of the *camera*, not in the precise sense of "king's or prince's chamberlain." Gaveston was at one time "valettus" and then "miles" of the prince of Wales' *camera*. I know not the authority for the precise statement in Doyle's *Official Baronage*, i, 438. *Ann. Paul.* suggest the hereditary office.

kinsfolk,[1] that his head was so turned by his elevation that he became offensively bumptious, and that he had a pretty but dangerous gift of affixing stinging nicknames alike on his friends and enemies.[2] Of the graver charges, which

1. Conspicuous among these was Bertrand Calhau, his nephew. See *MS. Cotton, Nero C.* viii, f. 88 d., a grant to Gaveston of 500 marks "per manus Bertrandi Caillau nepotis sui." This Bertrand was "valettus regis" from at least 1309 (*C.P.R., 1307-13*, p. 159) until the end of 1312 after his uncle's death (*Ib.*, pp. 484, 514). He often received moneys in the wardrobe, negociated foreign loans, and served on a mission to the papal court. I imagine that he was the son of Peter Calhau, the younger, of Rua nera, citizen and mayor of Bordeaux, 1305-1307, who married Navarra, daughter of Bertrand, lord of Podensac, and of his wife Miramonde Calhau, daughter of an elder Bertrand Calhau. Her full sister was Clarmonde, lady of Marsan and Louvigny, the wife of Arnold de Gaveston and the mother of Peter. The Calhau family, whose name in its northern form is Caillau, was one of the greater civic houses of Bordeaux. The first cousin of Peter Calhau, another grandson of the elder Bertrand, was the Arnold Calhau, mayor of Bordeaux (1304), seneschal of Saintonge, and keeper of Oléron (1316-1326), who played a loyal but somewhat questionable part in Anglo-Gascon history in the later years of the reign. The connexion of Gaveston with both the urban aristocracy of Bordeaux and the territorial houses of Gascony and Béarn is perhaps typical. Materials for working out his family relations could be found in *Rôles Gascons, Archives historiques de la Gironde*, and such sources. For the Calhaus, see also later pp. 83-84.

2. The various nicknames given by Gaveston to the magnates are stated in curiously various forms. The strictly contemporary monk of Malmesbury, p. 161, speaks of his habit of affixing "turpia cognomina" to earls and barons. Warwick's description as "black dog of Arden" has the contemporary authority of Robert of Reading, *Flores Hist.*, iii, 152, and the somewhat later testimony of the *Lanercost Chronicle*, p. 216, which says that Gaveston gave other nicknames, though it specifies none of them. The earliest sources for the other names date from the reign of Edward III, and include the French and English "Brute" chronicles, which up to 1333, were written not long after that date, and so are nearly as contemporary as Reading himself. *The English Brute* (*The Brute Chronicle of England*, ed. F. W. D. Brie, p. 207, Early Eng. Text Soc., 1906) calls Gloucester "horesone," Lincoln "broste bely," Warwick "blanke hounde of Arderne" and Lancaster "cherl." The even earlier *French Brute*, quoted by Sir E. Maunde Thompson on p. 184 of his edition of Geoffrey le Baker, gives these in French as "filz a puteyne," "boele crevée," "noir chien d'Ardene" and "fielers," *i.e.*, "fiddler" not "churl." Next comes William of Pakington's French Chronicle, which was written before 1376, because dedicated to the Black Prince, whose treasurer, Pakington (d. 1390) had been. It is only known from the summary in Leland's *Collectanea*, ii, 461 (1770). It agrees with the *French Brute*, but it translates the harsh reflection on Gloucester's mother as "cocolds byrde" and explaining "fielers" as "porceo quil est greles et de bel entaille," *i.e.*, "slim and tall." Walsingham, *Hist. Angl.*, i, 415, here based upon the King's Library MS., not much later than 1392, agrees in calling Warwick "black dog," but styles Lancaster "the player" and Pembroke "Joseph the Jew" "eo quod pallidus esset et longus." This latter now appears for the first time. It looks as if Gaveston varied his nicknames on occasion, but there seems plenty of good evidence for his foolish habit. The *English Brute* suggests that he was not consistent in his

have taken classic shape in Marlowe's powerful but unhistorical tragedy, there is no more evidence than the gossip of several prejudiced chroniclers. I know not whether the saying that the more mud you throw the more is likely to stick goes back, like much of our proverbial philosophy, to the middle ages. In any case it was a principle seldom lost sight of in mediæval controversy.

A few years earlier the men who now voiced the outcry against the Gascon, thought it good policy to strengthen their sound constitutional reasons for driving Walter Langton from the foremost place in Edward I's counsels by accusing him of murder, adultery, simony, pluralism, and intercourse with the devil. The particulars as to the last count are remarkably circumstantial. The bishop of Lichfield had not only had many conversations with the evil one; he had done homage to him as vassal to lord, and had ratified his submission with a kiss.[1] Still more to the point were the accusations of depravity which at the very moment of Gaveston's fall were being brought against the unlucky Templars, both in France and England.[2] It is impossible to take these vague charges seriously.

The barons were on safer though narrower ground when they accused Gaveston of being a foreigner. Yet even here the barons' definition of an alien was that of particularists of the narrowest sort. Such an accusation has little weight when directed against a Béarnais who was the son

insults "And meny othere shames and scorn have saide." No wonder the magnates were "ful angri and sore annoiede." Gaveston's attack on Joan of Acre, doubtless a malicious reference to her *mésalliance* with Ralph of Monthermer, was particularly outrageous, as she was the king's sister, and the mother of his own wife. Gaveston's wife's brother, Gilbert of Gloucester, was, moreover, the last of the magnates to give up his Puckish brother-in-law. For the date and sources of the English Brute see Brie's *Geschichte und Quellen der mittelenglischen Prosachronik, the Brute of England*, 1905. For the whole question see Sir E. M. Thompson's excellent note to Baker, pp. 183-4.

1. See for these charges, *Foedera*, i, 965-7; *C. Papal Letters*, i, 607; *Flor. Hist.*, iii, 305-6.

2. For the charges against the Templars see *Ann. Lond.*, pp. 176-198. The allegations of the French against Boniface VIII were equally gross, and so were the accusations brought against Guichard of Troyes. See Rigault, *Le Procès de Guichard, évêque de Troyes*, (1897).

of a father who had grown grey and endured prison[1] in the service of Edward I, and was not only a natural born liegeman of the king, but himself brought up as a ward in custody in the household of the prince of Wales. And the household of the king's eldest son we may regard as the fourteenth century equivalent to a very select and exclusive Eton and Sandhurst combined for the young aristocrats of that period. The charge of being an upstart is easy to make and hard to refute. Yet Gaveston's family, if not of the first rank, belonged to the higher territorial and civic aristocracy of Gascony.[2] Perhaps the shrewd monk of Malmesbury got as near as any one to the root of the matter when he declared his conviction that, if Peter had from the beginning behaved prudently and humbly before the English magnates, he would never have had any of them opposed to him.[3] It is as the enemy of baronial pretensions, rather than as the royal minion or the upstart, that the magnates pronounced the doom of Gaveston.

There is more to be said for the younger Hugh le Despenser than there is for Gaveston. Indeed it is hard to see how this son of the mighty baron, who had devoted his life to the service of the great Edward, was in any invidious sense a favourite at all. At least he was not so till the year 1321. He was doubtless greedy and ambitious, but he had brains enough to formulate something like a theory of constitutional law, as well as his personal policy of using his share of the Gloucester inheritance to make

1. *Rôles Gascons*, iii, no. 4472.

2. See above p. 13. The paternal stock came from Gabaston, in Béarn, cant. Morlaas, arr. Pau, dep. Basses Pyrénées.

3. Malmesbury, p. 168. It is some confirmation of this point of view that seven earls witnessed the charter of 6 Aug., 1307 (*Foedera*, ii, 2), by which Edward made Gaveston earl of Cornwall at Dumfries. These were Henry of Lincoln, Edmund of Arundel, John of Richmond, and Aymer of Pembroke among the more "royalist" earls. The others were Thomas of Lancaster, John of Surrey, and Humphrey of Hereford, all soon to be his bitter enemies. It is sometimes said that witnessing a charter at this date was a formal act, and did not involve personal presence or consent. Without stressing the point, it is hard to believe that the chancery would have dared to put down such "witnesses," if opposed to Gaveston's advancement.

himself the autocrat of south Wales. He shewed too prudence enough, after his return from banishment in 1322, to abandon a line of action which, much more than his personal relations with the king, had brought about his temporary downfall. Starting from ancestral traditions that inclined him naturally to the cause of Thomas of Lancaster and the stalwarts of the opposition, Despenser's political affinities, before his too complete triumph in 1322, were much more to the earl of Pembroke and the "middle party" than to the mere courtiers. It was only after that date that he definitely turned his back on his early career by falling back into curialist ways. Subsequently, when brought face to face with the responsibilities of power, Despenser failed as utterly as any of his predecessors. Yet even then Despenser deserves some commendation for remaining a reformer to the last, and perhaps also for the self-restraint which allowed him to pass through the five years of his triumph from 1322 to 1326 without so much as taking to himself the coveted title of earl of Gloucester. Unluckily for him, he indulged in wanton acts of tyranny and oppression which belied his grand theories and involved him in sudden and irremediable ruin. Here again, however, he was done to death by rivals who grudged his supremacy in the march of Wales quite as much as they disliked the unpopular minister. The opposition under Edward II had an unhappy knack of exciting sympathy for all who came under its ban.

Edward of Carnarvon and his intimates then have been, on the whole, rather too severely judged at the bar of history. Yet the most friendly eye can see little to praise in any of the three, though it may be admitted that they have at least as much human nature in them as in the singularly unattractive leaders of the baronial opposition. Five earldoms[1] and close kinship with the two greatest monarchs

1. Thomas was earl of Lancaster, Leicester and Derby by succession from his father, earl Edmund of Lancaster. With the Leicester earldom went the hereditary stewardship of England. As the holder of the forfeited earldoms of Simon of Montfort and Robert of Ferrers, Thomas was doubly pledged to the constitutional tradition. From his wife, Alice Lacy, came Henry Lacy's two earldoms of Lincoln and Salisbury.

in the west[1] gave neither dignity, policy, patriotism nor common sense to that most impossible of all mediæval politicians, earl Thomas of Lancaster. Sulky, vindictive, self-seeking, brutal and vicious, he had just enough sense to realize that the duty of an opposition is to oppose, but he had not application or intelligence enough to understand that, when the opposition leader gets the reins of power into his own hands, his business is to govern the state, not to thwart his personal enemies. His treatment of Gaveston was dishonourable to the last degree, and his intrigues with the Scots a public scandal of the worst type. The "good cause" for which he is supposed to have fought must have been an exceptionally good cause to profit by the advocacy of so incompetent and stupid a personage. Yet almost as unlovely as Lancaster was his fellow-worker in the tragedy of Blacklow Hill, Guy Beauchamp, earl of Warwick. Of Warwick, the actual perpetrator of the outrage at Deddington, all that we can say in his favour is that the wise old earl of Lincoln had so high an opinion of him that he advised his son-in-law, earl Thomas, to be directed by his counsels.[2] The chroniclers also claim for him a knowledge of literature seldom found in the higher nobility of his age.[3] This aspect of Guy of Warwick, combined with his treachery, reminds us of the cultivated aristocratic ruffians of the Renascence.

Of the other earls it can be only said that they are as like

1. Edward II was his first cousin. His half-sister, Joan, daughter of his mother, Blanche of Artois, queen of Navarre and countess of Champagne, was the wife of Philip IV. Philip IV was, therefore, his brother-in-law, and his sons and successors, Louis X, Philip V, and Charles IV were his nephews.

2. Trokelowe's (pp. 72-73) long deathbed harangue of the old earl of Lincoln is certainly not historical in form. The good advice includes the protection of the Church from the Romans and the crown, the maintenance of Magna Carta, deference to the advice of Winchelsea and the clergy, and the selection of Englishmen for his household offices and the wise direction of his "familia." In matters of politics he is to follow Warwick, "qui prae caeteris paribus suis consilio et maturitate pollet." It is more like a programme of the ordainers' policy than the personal views of a loyal servant of Edward I.

3. "Virum sapientem et probum," Lanercost, p. 216; "homo discretus et bene literatus per quem totum regnum Angliae sapientia praefulgebat;" *Ann. London.*, p. 236; compare Malmesbury, p. 212.

each other as a series of peas, and that it needs a very vivid historical imagination to assign to most of them any distinct individuality. A good scholar, trained in the schools of Paris, has recently written at length the biography of John of Brittany, earl of Richmond, but she has been quite unable to tell us what manner of man he was.[1] Perhaps the only two remaining earls, whose personality can be outlined with any clearness, are John of Warenne, earl of Surrey, the most brutal and disreputable, and Aymer of Valence, earl of Pembroke, the most intelligent of the higher nobles. Of Warenne's demerits I have spoken at length in the *Dictionary of National Biography*, and there is no need to say anything now, but Pembroke is, I think, the most neglected character of the reign, and in many ways the most interesting and attractive of the lay nobles. If we are to make a hero in the reign at all, earl Aymer of Pembroke has surely the best claim to that distinction. In one generation this son of Henry III's hated Poitevin half-brother had acquired with his mother's inheritance of the Welsh palatinate of the Marshals some portion of the great Marshal tradition of efficiency, patriotism, and loyalty. Pembroke, the hero of the rout of Methven of 1306, one of the few leaders at Bannockburn who lost none of his honour on that fatal field, and in the worst times that followed ever a strenuous defender of northern England against the Scots, remained a vigorous member of the baronial opposition so long as the policy of the Ordainers meant the reform of the administration and the cleansing of the Augean stables of the court. His alliance with earl Thomas, shattered when the great man backed up Guy of Warwick in his disregard of earl Aymer's plighted faith to Gaveston, was practically never renewed. Driven to association with the king by the treachery of his baronial allies, Aymer remained indefatigable as a mediator and a peacemaker. Almost completely effaced when in 1316 the parliament of Lincoln chose earl Thomas as the chief counsellor of the king, his chance came again when

1. Inna Lubimenko, *Jean de Bretagne, comte de Richmond* (Paris, 1908).

Lancaster still continued, as head of the executive, that policy of sulking and abstention which had characterised him as leader of the opposition. Lancaster's failure enabled Pembroke to bring about a solid coalition between the more reputable curialists and his own associates of the so-called middle party, and of this liberal royalist party he was the soul. From the treaty of Leake, in August 1318, until the return of the Despensers, in February 1322, Pembroke exercised the preponderating influence, and his authority remained strong until the conclusion of the long truce with the Scots in June 1323. I shall later take opportunity to treat in more detail of the policy pursued by Pembroke during these years, but even at this stage I should like to claim for him the chief part in bringing about comparative peace and prosperity and the large measures of reform which mark these years.[1] A study of the exchequer and wardrobe records for this period has convinced me not only that Pembroke was the chief directive agent of the prevailing policy, but that he was the only one of the great magnates who worked hard in the daily routine of politics, the two Despensers themselves not excepted. His last act of authority in domestic affairs was the insistence in 1321 on the banishment of the Despensers, and here we shall not be wronging him if we assume that the danger to his Welsh earldom's independence, that necessarily followed from the younger Hugh's schemes of south Welsh domination, had something to do with bringing him to a clear decision. In the subsequent troubles that ensued, Pembroke, perhaps because he had become so habituated to posing as a mediator, did not take a sufficiently strong line. His position was of course singularly difficult, balanced between

1. In his excellent summary of the political parties in the critical years of the reign, in the introduction to his *Chronicles of Edward I and Edward II*, Stubbs calls Pembroke the king's wisest and truest friend (ii, lxxix); yet elsewhere he hardly seems to me quite fair to Pembroke and the "politiques" of the middle party. He is too convinced that Lancaster's was the "party of freedom," and that Pembroke and his followers were "without any affection for the king or any aspirations for freedom" (*Ib.*, i, cxiv). But was Lancaster in any sense a champion of freedom, and were there three parties "throughout the reign?" The point of view is too general, and a thought too modern.

the Scylla of the Lancastrians and the Charybdis of the courtier faction. The result was that when the Despensers came back and the militant opposition met its doom at Boroughbridge, he is open to the suspicion of being hardly firm enough to outwit the king and his favourites. Yet it is not until his premature death in 1324 that the situation became hopeless, and that there began that renewed period of complete curialist control which in three years brought about the collapse of the king and his friends in the final tragedy of the reign. With base ingratitude Hugh le Despenser and Robert Baldock withheld from the widowed countess, a young bride of less than two years before, some of the dower lands to which she was entitled.[1] It is clear that when the earl was removed not even a pretence was made of shewing any respect for his memory. So hard is it to form a picture even of Pembroke's personality that we welcome even Gaveston's derisive nickname "Joseph the Jew," the more so since we are told that he was so described because he was "pale and tall."[2]

It would be easy to go on with the personal aspects of the reign, and in particular to extend our survey to the chief ecclesiastics of the period. Of these, however, two only can be clearly recognised as possessing a strong personality of their own, and these two had already done their best work when Edward of Carnarvon mounted the throne. These were of course Thomas Winchelsea, archbishop of Canterbury, the old king's chief foe, and Walter Langton, bishop of Lichfield, the chief minister of Edward I's latter years. Of these archbishop Winchelsea was at once brought back by the new king from his long exile, but the stubborn prelate forthwith took up his former attitude

1. *C. P. R.*, *1364-7*, pp. 275-6, summarises an exemplification of a petition of Mary, widow of earl Aymer, that Baldock, "sometime chancellor," had refused her dower in Pembroke's Monmouth lands, and that Hugh le Despenser refused to allow the escheator to make return of her dower-lands in Hertford and Haverfordwest "because he coveted them." Mary of Saint-Pol, countess of Pembroke, long survived her husband, and died about 1376. See later, p. 240, for her foundation of Valence Mary, or Pembroke College, Cambridge, in his memory in 1347; *ib.*, *1344-8*, p. 444.

2. Walsingham, *Hist. Angl.*, i, 115. See also note 2, above p. 13.

of opposition to the crown, and usefully employed his declining years in providing the lords ordainers with brains and a policy. While bringing the archbishop home to his province, Edward II paid off old scores by putting Langton in prison and exposing him to the bitterest persecution. Though the astute courtier soon wriggled his way back into some show of favour, he was too unpopular to be made an effective instrument, and too uncertain of his line of action to be really trusted. Though he survived until 1321, it would have been better for his fame had he died earlier, so numerous and so unworthy were the later vicissitudes of his strangely chequered career. I have no need to speak at length of the younger generation of political bishops, whose meanness and self-seeking have scarcely been too severely castigated by Stubbs. These latter, the Reynolds, the Orletons, the Hothams, the Stratfords, the Airmyns and the Stapeldons at least had their full share both in determining policy and in working out its details. If their general record be a chequered one, some of these men anyhow had their more attractive aspects. Orleton and Stratford were scholars of repute.[1] Robert Baldock, even, was a doctor of civil law.[2] These are early instances of the way in which fourteenth century Oxford began to make its way into the public service. We owe to Stapeldon a large part of both nave and choir of Exeter cathedral, and Oxford, at least, must not forget that he was the founder of Exeter College. To bishop Hotham we are indebted for the glorious octagon and retrochoir of Ely. It should also be remembered that at least one prelate of the official class preserved his reputation unblemished throughout a long life. Many years of court service did

1. Blaneford, p. 140-1 (apud Trokelowe, Rolls Series), calls Orleton "vir maturus et litterali scientia excellenter ornatus," and Stratford, "juris civilis doctor eximius," who "in artibus inter omnes clericos hujus facultatis regni Anglicani reputaretur . . . . excellentissimus" (*Ib.*, p. 147). Orleton was a doctor of canon law (*Foedera*, ii, 162). Canon A. T. Bannister in his *Introduction* to Orleton's *Register* (Cant. and York Soc., 1908) makes the best case he can for Orleton's character, but is more successful in demonstrating his ability than his morality.

2. *Drokensford's Register*, p. 215, Somerset Record Soc.

not corrupt the fidelity or diminish the piety and charity of archbishop Melton of York.[1]

However much they differed in personal character, not one of these bishops soared conspicuously above his fellows. After all they were simply the most successful members of the large class from which they were drawn, the great body of king's clerks who constituted what in modern phrase we may call the permanent civil service of the period. The permanent staffs of the great offices of the court and state bulked as little in the chronicles of the fourteenth century as do their modern counterparts in the newspapers of our own day. However, all these, so far as they come within our purview, will have their place later on.

Stubbs' survey of the chief actors of the reign of Edward II led him to point the obvious moral of their inferiority to the men of preceding generations, and to draw eloquent generalisations as to the falling off of the incoming fourteenth century in character and ideals from the thirteenth century, the golden period of mediæval civilisation. It is difficult to cavil at anything that he says, and yet one cannot feel over sure that his conclusions are altogether in accordance with one's impressions of the time. The more one works at history the less one feels satisfied with any broad statements as to the general character of any age. And I think the decadence of the age of Edward II is in no wise so clear as it would seem at first sight. Let it be admitted that the leaders were markedly inferior. Rather let it be at once said that there were few leaders who really led. Yet with all his caution and all his wisdom, Stubbs goes too far when he teaches that the barons and bishops of the early fourteenth century were cast in a meaner mould than the heroes of Runnymede, or of the age of Simon de Montfort, or even of the opposition to the declining years of Edward I. As far as the rank and file goes, both the barons who won the Great Charter, and their grandsons

1. Malmesbury, p. 283, "Et quamvis inter curiales diu conversatus, mores tamen a convictu non traxit, sed, obviata Anglorum cupididate, per Dei gratiam impollutus semper permansit."

who laid low the power of the crown in the Mad Parliament, were every whit as stupid and as greedy, as narrow and as self-seeking, as were the mass of the lords ordainers. Yet we must not on that account regard them as negligible quantities in history. Their work was a great work in its results if not in its motives, and we must not neglect to appraise it from that standpoint. On the wider question I do not in the least believe that the fourteenth century was any worse than the thirteenth. On the contrary, it was on the whole a better, and certainly a more pleasant, time to live in. It is one of the comforting lessons of history that the dull reigns of the indifferent kings are as worthy of study as the most famous and splendid periods. Neither the state nor society ceased to function because the king's weakness made the state a little more ineffective, and the barons' turbulence made social conditions a little more disorderly than were the normal ineffectiveness and disorder of the slack, easy-going times which we call the middle ages. We exaggerate, moreover, the part played by the state and statesmen in moulding mediæval conditions. Neither the wisdom of Edward I nor the folly of Edward II could do very much to alter the general stream of tendency. Ordinary men lived their lives under the weak Edward of Carnarvon very much as they lived their lives under the "greatest of the Plantagenets." Our period is no mere blank page between two glorious chapters. Even the reign of Edward II has its contribution, if it be a modest one, to the almost unbroken story of the development of English society, politics and institutions.

I have already stressed the dearth of great men, the lack of strong leaders, in the reign of Edward II. From the impersonality of the reign follow some not unimportant results. No historian now is a whole-hearted follower of Carlyle and Froude. But we need not be of the school of hero-worshippers to recognise that sometimes a great personality may deflect to some extent the general character of his time. There was no such force at work in the England of Edward II. On the contrary the absence of such

disturbing elements enabled the ordinary man to work out his career the more easily and comfortably. You can see machinery, already set up by the master engineer, going on by itself, so to say. The complicated engines of state, the much more intricate mechanism of society, have to do their work as best they may, untended save by the ordinary craftsman who lubricates the bearings and touches the handles which start or stop them. More than this, the artisans who drive the machines have been trained in a good school. They may not always be the most estimable of men. They may be self-seeking, venal, deferential, brutal, slack or cruel, as it suits their turn. But they have gone through their apprenticeship in their craft. If they seek their own interests and their own distractions, they discharge their daily task. They do not get drunk while they are driving their engine. And so the machines keep on revolving, despite wars and rumours of war. And I may say in parenthesis that, except in the north, there were more rumours of war than wars all through the reign.

It follows that the real work of ruling England under Edward II fell not on the king and the earls, not on the leading prelates or the few prominent statesmen, but rather on the rank and file, who guided the administrative machinery. Great changes, great reforms are not to be expected under such circumstances. But the clever craftsman who tends the machine is just the sort of person to devise some little improvements of its mechanism, those simple inventions which enable the machine to do its work better and more economically. Let us, however, drop a metaphor which suggests a merely mechanical theory of the state, and follow rather the sounder doctrine that the state is an organism. From this point of view we may say that the growth of the state and society goes on the more readily, and perhaps after a more wholesome fashion, when the ordinary operations of the seasons are disturbed by no alternating periods of excessive heat or cold, by none of those great natural convulsions which baffle all calculation. The importance of the reign then is that it shows us how

late mediæval administration, and late mediæval society, went on when left to themselves.

(3) The General Scope of the Work.

During the last twenty-five years I have often had occasion to study some one point, aspect or personality of Edward II's reign, and on two occasions I have attempted a general survey of it so far as that could be done in the light of the printed authorities. The results of these two examinations have been printed in my life of Edward II in the *Dictionary of National Biography,* and in the chapters devoted to that reign in the third volume of Longmans' *Political History of England.* But in neither of these studies did I find much occasion to depart from the traditional and conservative view of these twenty years of English history. Since then my investigations into certain aspects of administrative history of the fourteenth century have forced me to study with more particularity than before some sides of Edward II's reign. In particular I have gone through such records, as I could find, that illustrate the machinery through which the king's court and household were enabled to extend their sphere of operations from the government of the monarch's domestic establishment to the administration of the realm. I do not profess to have made more than a cursory examination of the immense mass of record and manuscript material that still exists for the study of the administrative aspects of this reign. But I had not gone very far with my study before I became convinced that all the earlier work on the reign has been based upon such imperfect appreciation of the evidence available that it cannot be regarded as in any sense final. I cannot even except from this judgment the great work of Stubbs, though that must always remain the starting point for new investigations of the period. It is not too much to say that Stubbs has done more for the history of Edward II than any other scholar that has ever lived. He has not only given a wonderfully sure survey in his *Constitutional History,* but in his admirable edition of the *Chronicles of*

Edward I and Edward II he has given us new material for its study, illuminated by his own clear and searching commentaries. Yet save for these chronicles Stubbs limited himself to printed material, and his absorption on the parliamentary struggle of the time rendered him indifferent to certain aspects of its history. He certainly never appreciated the real importance of the reign as the turning point in our later administrative history. Even to Stubbs then the real perspective of the period was not fully revealed, and those of us, who have followed in his footsteps, have been equally blind to it.

I do not claim to have had any new revelation. On the contrary I strongly hold the view that it is not possible to come to any definite judgment on the reign until it has been re-written on a larger and more comprehensive scale than has hitherto been attempted. Such a history must be composed in the light of the whole material, record and narrative, printed and unprinted, that is available. Of no aspect of the reign can it be at present said that there is an exhaustive study in existence. It is not the case even with regard to those sides which are most familiar to us, such as the narrative, political, parliamentary and ecclesiastical history. Other aspects of the reign have hardly been considered seriously at all, and we have still to seek for even summary treatment, with adequate scholarship, of its economic, social, and what is more important for my purpose, its administrative history. Unluckily elaborate and detailed narrative histories of a short period are now somewhat out of fashion, and the more austere type of modern scholar tends to depreciate their importance and value. I do not say that they are the most alluring type of historical composition, but I do say that there is a danger in our modern habit of splitting up knowledge in specialised monographs. The conditions precedent of a definitive study of any particular branch of history are surely the adequate statement of the ordinary narrative history on a large and adequate scale. We want for the reign of Edward II such detailed treatment as Freeman strove to

give to the reigns of William I and William II, or such as Mr. Wylie has given to the reign of Henry IV, or, to take a modern instance, what Gardiner has done and what Professor Firth is carrying on for the first half of the seventeenth century, or, to finish with a foreign example, such a study as M. Delachenal is now making of the reign of Charles V of France. Such a presentation of the reign must be based upon real insight into social, administrative, economic and ecclesiastical conditions. Imperfect acquaintance with the institutions and atmosphere of the time is the rock on which most of the old-fashioned narratives of "civil and military" transactions have split. Luckily we have an admirable example of how such reconstructive work should be performed in the few illuminating pages in which Stubbs has elucidated some of the later crises of Edward of Carnarvon's history in his introduction to the *Chronicles of Edward I and Edward II.*

My own task in reference to this reign is a much humbler one. It would be courting certain failure to attempt to write consecutive narrative history in a few short chapters, though I have, rather sporadically it is true, made an effort to tell some aspects of the story which I do not think have been adequately emphasized. But I am impelled to do so since with this study I shall be compelled to bid a final adieu to the general history of the reign. I am, however, happy to think that there is some prospect of one of our promising younger scholars taking this matter in hand,[1] and that we shall not have to wait indefinitely for a detailed history of Edward II. What I shall aim at will be not so much narrative as description, criticism, and the statement of a point of view that I venture to hope will not be found absolutely a stale one. I do not think that the existing narratives will have to be re-written, though of course they will have to be corrected, as all historical work has to be. Correction of detail is, however, never a very important

1. My former pupil and colleague, Miss Hilda Johnstone, now Reader in History in the University of London, has already made progress in collecting material with a view of attempting a complete study of the reign.

thing. It only becomes important when we are dealing with books so weak in their general scholarship that they themselves are utterly unimportant. Yet the simple truth is that "discoveries" in history are for the most part discoveries of detail. They only become of value when treated in the mass, and when they enable us to construct some general picture, solve some real problem, or build up some new generalisation. In this instance I do not aspire to paint a new picture, but rather to build a somewhat larger and more appropriate frame for the old one. At the most I should wish to sketch in a new background to the stage on which the old figures may re-enact their ancient parts.

I have already explained that I approached this reign from the standpoint of its unwritten administrative history. Applying the ideas which I had derived from the study of that aspect of the reign to other points of view, I had the conviction forced on me that here also the importance of the reign had not been properly appreciated. The result was that my studies soon went far beyond the administrative field. No doubt in the attempt to cover the wider ground a good deal has been lost in thoroughness. I am well aware, however, that I am only at the beginning of the subject. I only aim at indicating the general lines upon which such a detailed history as seems desirable ought to be written. It is an attempt to suggest a point of view for future workers. What this standpoint is must now in some fashion be explained. How far it is a true one, the future historians of the reign must decide.

The reign of Edward II is generally regarded as a series of rather futile revolutions, each involving a change of government which was to a very partial extent a change for the better. It is true that there was some revolutionary legislation, but it is one thing to pass a revolutionary law, and another thing to execute it. The chief innovations of the reign, the ordinances of 1311, were often re-enacted, but never were fully carried out, and were repealed eleven years later. Only for one brief period, between 1318 and

1322, were they within a measurable distance of being observed, and their execution during these years was due to a compromise between the better elements in both court and opposition, which necessitated their being carried out in a spirit that was charitable, both to vested interests and to the personal susceptibilities of the king and his friends. The result of all this was that there was a striking continuity in the administrative personnel all through the reign. A favourite might be dismissed; a magnate might retire from court in a huff: but the everyday workers who governed the country went on despite all threatenings from 1307 to 1318, and if the worst, or the least prudent, were dislodged between 1318 to 1321 the old gang was back again by 1322, and continued to control affairs until the final *débâcle* of 1326. And this is true despite the fact that the ordinances, formulated in 1310 and 1311, demanded a thorough clean sweep of the administration, and that these ordinances remained the law until 1322. The explanation is that, like most mediæval legislation, the ordinances expressed an ideal of reformation working in men's brains rather than a new act of parliament which it was intended to carry out. That Edward II of all people was able to resist in fact what he accepted in name needs, however, further explanation, and that explanation is based upon the fact that the king's court was not a mere fortuitous aggregation of disconnected and incompetent courtiers, but a solidly organised institution, with traditions of government and influence. These were but little disturbed when an unpopular favourite whose enormities loomed large in the public eye, a Gaveston or a Despenser, was hurled overboard to lighten the ship of state, when thrown on its beam ends by a tempest of public opinion. Stubbs has taught us to speak of the court party as a continuous element in fourteenth century politics, but it does not seem that he ever fully realized what a solidly organized institution the court was, and how it had under its control resources of administration that enabled it to direct every department of the state. To explain this we shall have to

go at some length into the system of administration which Edward II inherited from Edward I, the part which the organised court took in the government, and the extent to which it enabled the king to evade his obligations to parliament, and entrench himself against the nation in a household manned by his own personal dependents. By these days the great departments of state, the exchequer and the chancery, the department of finance, and the department of administration and secretarial work, though originating from the king's household, had become self-contained, independent, definite offices of government, each with a personnel and a tradition of its own, so well defined that it was easy for a parliament which insisted on the appointment of the responsible minister, the treasurer or the chancellor, who directed it to obtain the control of the whole department. But, although chancery and exchequer had branched out of the ancient court system, the *curia regis* still remained much as it had been before, and in the course of the thirteenth century administrative convenience rather than political design had supplemented the official secretarial and financial departments by a court office which, retaining its primitive undifferentiated character, was at once the court department of finance and of administration. Now this was the office of the wardrobe. We shall never understand the fourteenth century aright unless we grasp the importance of the wardrobe as well as of the chancery and the exchequer. It was to the almost permanent officials who staffed these three departments that the remarkable administrative reforms were due all through the reign. They were few in the earlier, more confused and conservative period, which ranges from 1307 to 1318. Between 1318 and 1323 they were exceedingly numerous and important.

In subsequent chapters I shall have occasion to explain in some detail the nature of these administrative reforms which, I venture to think, give the reign of Edward II a place of its own in English history. Some of them are fairly well known and generally recognised, notably the

reforms of the exchequer, begun by the treasurer Stapeldon about the year 1323. Very little attention, however, has been paid to the reforms of the household, which resulted from the household ordinance of York of 1318. I do not think that anyone has recognised how many significant and permanent changes in household economy arose, quite early in the reign, from the defensive measures, taken by Edward II and his courtiers, to protect themselves from the efforts of the ordainers to include the offices of the court, as well as the great offices of the state, within the sphere of their influence. If the chancery were less affected by the practical reforming spirit than either the exchequer or the household offices, this period witnessed some striking changes in it, and in particular the last stages of its differentiation from the household. Equally important with the reforms of the old offices was the settlement of their relations with each other. The result of this was that the sphere of each department of state was more rigidly and clearly defined. Moreover the increasing complexity of administration involved not only the strengthening of the old offices, but the virtual erection of new ones. In particular the household administrative system threw off vigorous offshoots which gradually became new offices of state on their own account. Even the traditional local administration was influenced by the practical reforming spirit. The sheriffs were at last chosen from the gentlemen of their own shire, obtained their appointment from the chancery, and were limited to a short period of office. The two great escheatorships were broken up into local escheatorships, each of which was confined to three or four adjoining counties.

The importance of the reign of Edward II does not entirely depend upon its place in administrative history. Though the administrative aspect of affairs will never be far from my thoughts, I must also speak of other features of the reign which are only less significant. Here, as when dealing with administration, we may split up the reign into two periods, the dividing line between which runs some-

where near 1318. In the earlier period an effort is made to carry on the government on the lines laid down by Edward I. But the policy of Edward I was, as I shall try to show in the next chapter, on the verge of collapse at the moment of the great king's death. We are accustomed to glorify Edward I as the "greatest of the Plantagenets" and the founder and organiser of our free constitution. That Edward established constitutional government in England was the result of historical accident much more than deliberate design. Certain it is that Edward I had no more than Philip the Fair any conscious intention of taking the people into partnership with him or of promoting any sort of constitutional freedom. All that the old king sought was to get the help of the lower estates, the country gentry and the merchants of the towns, in his inevitable struggle against the privileged baronage and episcopate, which loudly demanded that they alone should help the king in the rule of the land, but made it the condition of their help that the king should frame his policy in accordance with their ideals. When Edward I died that struggle of king and baronage was still fiercely being fought. But Edward had made great progress after his humiliations between 1295 and 1300. He had divided the baronial leaders; he had seized upon the Bigod inheritance; and bridled the Clares and the Bohuns; he had driven Winchelsea and Bek into exile; he had evaded his obligations to the estates; and he had managed to strengthen his hold over Scotland despite the unwillingness of the magnates to second his wishes. Had he been a younger man, had he had ten years more of life, he might have combined the humiliation of baronage and episcopate with the real subjection of the Scots. In that case who can doubt but that he would have dealt as roughly with constitutional freedom as ever French autocrat had done? It is easy to imagine a history of England in which Edward I appears as the English Philip the Fair, as the organiser of despotism, not as the pioneer of constitutionalism. That such was not the case of English history is, I think, largely due to the reign of Edward II.

The ineffectiveness of Edward II's reign made permanent the constitutional machinery of the reign of Edward I, and so began that differentiation between English and French history which certainly did not exist under Edward I, but was clearly evident under Edward III. Looked at from this point of view Edward II's reign has its constitutional as well as its administrative importance. A strong successor to Edward I might have made England a despotism; his weak and feckless son secured the permanence of Edwardian constitutionalism. It is inevitable under such circumstances that the constitutional movement of the reign should assume something of an oligarchical and reactionary character. Yet we must not overstress the current view that the work of Edward I had counted for nothing, and that the barons of 1311 were just in the same position as the barons of 1258. It is true that the twofold claim of the ordainers to appoint ministers of state and to include within that category the chief household officers had been formulated as clearly in 1258 as in 1311. Yet we shall see later that the parliamentary history of Edward II's reign shews a steady undercurrent towards the increasing participation of the commons in deliberations of state. In the twenty years of the reign the commons were summoned by writ to parliaments no less than twenty-five times, though the actual proceedings of these disorderly gatherings, where the magnates with their armed followers had the last and the first word in each discussion, had no doubt more affinities to those of a Polish Diet than to those of the orderly parliaments of more modern date. Yet there was, notably in the policy of the Despensers and the acts of the parliament of York of 1322, a real tendency towards the development of constitutional theory, as well as towards the amplification of constitutional practice. The conditions of fourteenth century society, which remained essentially aristocratic, necessarily prevented either of these tendencies going very far. Yet enough remains to shew that the reign of Edward II was in constitutional as well as in administrative history a real turning

point in the history of England. The constitutional position I shall strive to work out, as I dwell in my third and fourth chapters on the general political and administrative history of the reign. Administrative reforms I shall consider in the fifth.

In my last two chapters I shall pass in inadequate review certain miscellaneous aspects of the reign which are more conveniently treated, apart from the general currents of political and constitutional history and of administrative reform. Here also I shall endeavour to suggest the extent to which the reign forms a turning point in our history. In what we may by anticipation call imperial history this certainly was the case. The reign saw the establishment of the political independence of Scotland, the reduction of the English power in Ireland to that extreme weakness in which it lay until the days of the later Tudors, and a new stage in the decline of the power of the English dukes of Gascony. But as some compensation to this reaction from the imperialistic visions of an Edward I, we see in the Welsh and Marcher history of the reign real anticipations of Tudor policy. We must not regard as unimportant even the foreign and military history. The insignificant foreign policy of Edward II has its prophetic note in its anticipations of the Anglo-French relations of the period of the Hundred Years War, just as the array of Bannockburn and Myton, and still more the adoption of Scottish tactics by the borderers, who won the battle of Boroughbridge, afford a real anticipation of the methods of English warfare that astonished all Europe when exhibited on a great scale at Crecy and Poitiers. In ecclesiastical history also the reign which first saw the suppression of a great order by the ecclesiastical power, the frank seizure of the alien priories by the state, and the systemisation of papal appointment to English bishoprics, has also its contrasts to offer. Lastly, the social and economic aspects of the reign have also their lessons. The slackness of government and the constant threatenings, and occasional happenings, of war did not prevent the later part of the

reign witnessing a certain restoration of order and material prosperity. Thus it is that the period was marked by strong tendencies in the direction of the organisation of trade on national lines and the growth of English economical self-sufficiency, such as are currently thought only to have begun under Edward III. This is notably the case with regard to the development of the English staple system, every important feature of which was established before the fall of Edward II. I have, therefore, not thought it out of place to deal at some length with the origins of this characteristic feature of our mediæval commercial policy.

II.

THE INHERITANCE OF EDWARD II.

(1) Policy and Administration in General.

Edward of Carnarvon inherited from his father a splendid tradition and an admirable system of organisation and administration. He has often been reproached with being an unworthy heir of his father's greatness and essentially the reproach cannot be gainsaid. It can, however, be pleaded in extenuation of his shortcomings that he inherited, along with the institutions which his father had so meticulously defined and carefully developed, the obligation to carry on his father's policy. This involved a burden so overwhelming that it nearly had broken the back of his great father, and proved all too heavy for the degenerate son. It was perhaps an easy task to walk in the footsteps of Edward I as regards carrying on his methods of government and administration. But Edward I had stretched to the uttermost the institutions which he had fashioned in the hope of being able to perform a task for which his resources were absolutely inadequate. And, whether he liked it or not, circumstances more powerful than his own volition compelled Edward of Carnarvon to take up and bear with him his father's burden.

Accustomed to revere in Edward I the greatest of the Plantagenets, we do not always sufficiently appreciate how complete was the failure of that king's declining years. He was pledged to conquer Scotland and hold it in subjection. He was forced to constant vigilance to keep down the Welsh, and uphold the declining fortunes of the Anglo-Norman colony in Ireland. Moreover there was the double obligation of maintaining the political and economic interests of England and its king in Gascony and Flanders, and the inevitable cleavage of interest between France and

England which that policy involved, however much the divergence of standpoint might be cloaked over by marriages and treaties. In addition to the burden of these national and feudal obligations there was too the chronic difficulty with the church, recently emphasized by the breach between Edward I and Winchelsea, and but partially mitigated by the comparative complaisance of a pope from the Bordelais. But worst of all was the discord between Edward and his own barons, accentuated by the ruthless persistence with which he evaded the hated concessions extorted from him in the hour of his worst need, and by the greediness with which the spoils of the escheated earldoms and baronies were gathered in. Equally grave was the collapse of the national finances before the strain which Edward had put upon them. Constant wars and a divided nation involved a financial burden which Edward was quite unable to sustain. The once order-loving monarch had ceased to balance his income and expenditure. The wardrobe accounts, which best show Edward I's war budgets, testify year after year to a large deficit on the income side,[1] and for the last years of the reign were rarely made up and never enrolled.[2] The receipt rolls of the exchequer show in their scanty totals how much less taxes now yielded than they had done in the great days of the reign. Though the utmost pressure was brought to bear on the taxpayer, the sulkiness of the barons, the exhaustion of the cultivator, the demoralisation of the executive, all combined to make inadequate the yield that resulted from the strenuous efforts of the king and his ministers. The result was that the old king, despairing of his own people, fell back on the foreigner, on the alien merchants, whom he had bribed to grant him new customs, and on the Italian bankers, who made him the temporary advances by which

1. For every year of Langton's keepership of the wardrobe, 1290-1295, the wardrobe spent more than it received; *Pipe Roll, 21 E. I*, mm. 25, 26; *ib., 22 E. I*, mm. 6, 20, 21; *ib., 27 E. I*, m, 20.

2. For instance, Langton's wardrobe accounts for the period before he became treasurer of the exchequer were not rendered until 1300. No wardrobe accounts were enrolled between 26 E. I, and 1 E. II; *P. R. O. Lists and Indexes*, no. xi, *Enrolled Foreign Accounts*, p. 102.

alone he could stave off bankruptcy, and keep alive his starving soldiers and debt-burdened ministers who had long ceased to expect to be paid the king's wages. At last the Frescobaldi would only continue their loans if they were permitted to keep in their hands the collection of the customs. This great source of revenue was accordingly handed over to them, much as a spendthrift oriental potentate or a bankrupt South American republic has nowadays to abandon to European creditors the administration of the local revenue. And in the midst of all this financial anxiety came all the unexpected troubles which followed from the brilliantly successful revolt of Robert Bruce. Most admirable is the stern energy and ruthless eagerness with which the old king stuck to his task to the end. He would not give up Langton, however fiercely the barons attacked the faithful minister. He paid no heed to the threatenings of old age. He disregarded his broken health, his disobedient heir, the rebellious archbishop and the sullen baronage. He went on steadily with his work until death came upon him at the eve of the projected Scots invasion. He had overborne the worst of the opposition, and was on the high road towards making himself an autocrat. But he paid a heavy penalty for his hard won and precarious triumph. Probably no mediæval king left his finances in a more hopeless confusion than did the great Edward. Certainly none of them ever handed to his successor so heavy a task with such inadequate means to discharge it.

So much for the bad side of the young king's inheritance. Let us now turn to what we may call the good side, the inheritance of the Edwardian constitution.

With regard to Edward I's parliamentary and constitutional policy I have absolutely nothing to say, save to reiterate the suggestion that I have thrown out earlier that it is to read the history of the king's long reign with very modern spectacles, if we regard him as the conscious founder of a free constitutional system. Edward I had not a much clearer vision of the future history of England than

had the barons of Runnymede, whose shortsightedness and narrow sense of self-interest have been recognised, perhaps almost too much emphasized, by most recent scholars. Edward sought to establish the royal power, the barons to consolidate aristocratic privilege. But we must at least admit that in its results both the one and the others did equally bear their part in building up a system which went far beyond their imaginations. From this point of view it is, I think, a mistake to allow certain superficial resemblances between the reigns of Henry III and Edward II to blind us to the fact that there was a deep gulf between them. Now that gulf was dug by the Edwardian definition of the constitution. What was the legislative, deliberative and taxative system, which Edward II inherited from his father, is written for all time in Stubbs' *Constitutional History*. That system was still, however, in the making, still perhaps much more fluid than Stubbs' doctrine of definition will allow. It was, I think, still uncertain whether the Edwardian system would result in a limited monarchy, tempered by aristocratic and some measure of popular control, or in an autocracy of the type established by Philip the Fair, and I have already claimed it was only as a result of the reign of Edward II that the institutions of his father assumed the form in which they became permanent in history. Unluckily an unconfessed, and perhaps half-unconscious, change of plan prevented Stubbs from dealing with the machinery of English administration under Edward I with the same masterly thoroughness that he showed in describing the administrative system of the early Angevins. So far as the change was conscious it was due to his rather too exclusive preoccupation with the origins of our modern constitution, and in particular with the origins of our parliamentary institutions. The shire moot and the hundred moot, the circuits of the royal justices, and the juries with whom they dealt, were important, because in the local representative system of the Angevins, Stubbs saw the beginnings of the representative parliaments, and all that gave the later

English constitution its special character. When the shire moots and the juries had done their work, and had produced what we may by anticipation call the House of Commons, the local courts and their sworn committees had no longer any special interest to the "constitutional" historian. They became mere antiquities without any clear practical value and, therefore, might be safely relegated to the background. As a result of this presupposition we have in Stubbs much about the exchequer of the Angevins, but very little about the exchequer of the Edwards, nothing more than a few pregnant suggestions as to the Edwardian chancery, and not so much as a casual hint as to the importance of the wardrobe. One reason for this was doubtless the fact that Stubbs was seldom a haunter of the Public Record Office, and it was there and only there that the materials could have been found for an adequate study of these subjects. Accordingly the administrative machinery through which our fourteenth century kings ruled England is still very imperfectly known.

In respect to the history of administration English scholars have done much less for their own country than have the scholars of France for the administrative institutions of their land during the later middle ages. Let us, for a moment, compare the scope and treatment of constitutional history in Stubbs' great work with the scope and treatment of the corresponding matter in the book that most nearly corresponds to the *Constitutional History* in French historical literature, I mean M. Paul Viollet's three volumes on the *Histoire des Institutions Politiques et Administratives de la France* during the middle ages. The one is "constitutional," the other "institutional" history. With one writer, administration recedes to the background after the twelfth century, and narrative political history is never lost sight of. With the other, administration is from first to last the root of the matter. It is no longer possible to maintain with the last generation that this difference is due to the difference of the historical development of the two countries. There was as good an administrative

system in fourteenth century England as there was in fourteenth century France, only we have not taken the trouble to study it. We have nothing dealing with English administration to correspond to such treatises as M. Morel's *Grande Chancellerie Royale,* or M. Borelli de Serres' *Recherches sur Quelques Services Publiques,* two books which I mention *exempli gratia* rather than because they alone cover the field. It is not that our English archives have not material for such studies. On the contrary the English records are indefinitely more abundant than the French. The reason for our ignorance is simply that we have shamefully neglected our opportunities and that English scholars have not perceived the necessity of devoting their attention to problems of mediæval administration. Among more recent writers, Maitland fully appreciated the importance of this subject, and has suggested some of the main principles on which it should be treated in more than one of his works, notably in his remarkable introduction to the *Memoranda de Parliamento,* the roll of the parliament of 1305. He has, however, never worked out the problem in detail, and some of his most stimulating suggestions may perhaps not be sustained when we get face to face with the detailed facts. However both Stubbs and Maitland, though they did not take us very far, put us on the right line. They knew that the chancery was, in Stubbs' phrase, the "secretariat of state for all departments," and that the exchequer was primarily a financial organisation. They were quite guiltless of any share in the improbable doctrine, which can be read in some places, that there was a time when the exchequer was the chief administrative department, and it was only in the early fourteenth century, perhaps under Edward II, that the chancery established its superiority over it and limited it to matters of finance.[1] Moreover neither Stubbs nor

1. This heresy is strongly expressed in the suggestive paper of that excellent scholar, the late Mr. Arthur Hughes, on "the Parliament of Lincoln of 1316," *Transactions of the Royal Historical Society,* New Series, x. 41-58 (1896). I shall have to refer to this later, see below pp. 104-105 and 183-184.

Maitland realised that, constantly overlapping both chancery and exchequer, the king's wardrobe habitually performed the essential functions of both, and set up a dual system of government which almost reminds us of the "double cabinet" of George III, which Burke spent all his eloquence in denouncing.

To describe at length the institutions by which, under Edward I, the central authority of the crown was exercised in the everyday work of governing the country, is much too elaborate and intricate a task to be attempted here. I must, however, attempt to suggest what seem to me to be the essential outlines of this subject, for, unless we grasp how Edward I governed England, we read awry all the history of the fourteenth century. Indeed it is not too much to say that, without a proper appreciation of the administrative machine and of its functions, our wonderful collection of fourteenth century records lose half their meaning, and more than half their coherence. We may calendar our chancery rolls, and classify and study the forms of every type of mediæval document. We may pore over mediæval handwritings until fourteenth century documents become almost as easy to read, sometimes much easier to read, than our private correspondence. Nevertheless the work of calendaring and indexing, essential though it be, the study of diplomatic forms and palaeography, excellent though they are, will profit us little, unless we also realise that these auxiliary sciences will only yield their full results to scholars versed in the details of mediæval administration. I emphasise this point because in my judgment the work that it is most important to do in late mediæval English history is to re-construct the system of everyday administration through which our kings and ministers governed the country. Not very much has of yet been published on this subject, but I am glad to know that earnest efforts are now being made to break up the ground in some of the more fruitful portions of this vast and unexplored field. I know that on both sides of the Atlantic very serious attempts have been made to

grapple with the fourteenth century exchequer, which is quite as important, though much less known, than the exchequer of the Angevins.[1] I know that there has just been published an elaborate and systematic study of the king's council in the later middle ages, the work of an American scholar.[2] Nearer home I am glad to announce that another young mediævalist has made good progress in an effort to unravel the intricacies of the organisation of the chancery up to the end of the fourteenth century.[3] And I hope it will not be thought egotistical if I repeat that I hope myself to publish before long an attempt to appreciate the part played by the curialist administrative system, the wardrobe and the chamber, in thirteenth and fourteenth century history. The ground which we all have to cover is vast, and none of us can hope to present anything more than tentative and preliminary studies. We shall be quite content if we do something to clear the ground, and encourage another generation of scholars to pursue still further these fascinating lines of study, which are crying aloud for further investigation.

(2) The Exchequer under Edward I.

It is well known that all the administrative machinery by which the princes of mediæval Europe sought to rule their dominions was based upon the organisation of their

1. I may particularly refer to the work of Mr. C. Hilary Jenkinson, of the Public Record Office on the exchequer, some of the conclusions of which are set forth in his remarkable paper "On Exchequer Tallies" in *Archaeologia*, lxii, 367-80 (1911). Important results to general exchequer problems may also be expected from the study of taxation on moveables, by Professor J. F. Willard, of the University of Colorado, which, Mr. Willard informs me, will soon be completed.

2. The monograph by Professor J. F. Baldwin, of Vassar College, on the *King's Council in the Middle Ages*, was published in the autumn of 1913 by the Clarendon Press. Some of its conclusions have been foreshadowed in Mr. Baldwin's valuable articles in the *English* and *American Historical Reviews*.

3. My former pupil and colleague, Miss L. B. Dibben, who has already written two important papers in the *English Historical Review* on "Secretaries in the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries"; *ib.*, xxv, 430-44, and "Chancellor and Keeper of the Seal under Henry III"; *ib.*, xxvii, 39-51, hopes to complete by next year a comprehensive study of the early chancery up to the death of Richard II.

domestic households.[1] Absolutely no distinction existed in those primitive times between the sovereign in his private capacity as owner of a great estate, and master of an extensive domestic establishment, and the sovereign in his public capacity as the political ruler of a nation. Those who clearly grasp this fundamental point will, I may say in passing, appreciate at once the essential unsoundness of the old-fashioned doctrine which distinguished, even in the eleventh century, between the king's domain, the king's personal property, and "folkland," then erroneously regarded as the national estate of which the king had only the administration.

The first faint beginnings of an orderly system of administration and finance arise from the king's chamber, which was, in the days of Edward the Confessor, when we can first see it at work, literally the king's bedroom. We see what this archaic state of things meant in the well-known story how Edward the Confessor kept his treasure in his bedroom so that the thief, who aspired to rob the national treasury, had to wait until the king took an after dinner nap before he could venture to steal into the royal chamber, and extract from the king's treasure chest some portion of its precious contents.[2] After the Norman conquest this primitive arrangement became ancient history. Stubbs has shown us how under Henry I and Henry II the Angevin monarchy exercised its authority through two great organisations, the *curia regis* and the exchequer. Of these the exchequer had by the reign of Henry II almost entirely separated itself from the perambulating king's court. It had settled down in a home of

1. In the description of the exchequer which follows I shall limit myself to a few general references. I have based my account on Madox's *History of the Exchequer*, supplemented by more recent work, such as that of Mr. J. H. Round, Mr. H. Hall and Mr. R. L. Poole. An excellent short account of the exchequer by Mr. Charles Johnson is in *Encyclopædia Britannica*, eleventh edition, x, 54-56. My own studies of exchequer records, notably the receipt and issue rolls, have enabled me to add a few points.

2. See the passage in the metrical life of Edward in Luard's *Lives of Edward the Confessor*, p. 53, Rolls Series. Compare J. H. Round, *The King's Sergeants*, p. 121.

its own at Westminster. It had officers of its own, who, if, as in earlier times, they still combined their exchequer function with other employments in the *curia regis*, gradually, as exchequer work grew, became more and more tied down to their own department. Even under Henry II placemen, whose primary business was not with finance, felt themselves uncomfortable when tradition required their attendance at the exchequer. Thus the chancellor was so seldom present at its sessions that, in the absence of his seal, it was already found necessary by the days of the *Dialogus* that the exchequer should have a seal of its own. This exchequer seal was probably in its origin a mere duplicate of the chancellor's seal, but it soon became a true departmental seal with a keeper of its own, the chancellor of the exchequer, and this officer soon ceased, even in name, to be the true chancellor's deputy. This exchequer seal is, I am convinced, the first departmental seal, apart from the general royal seal, to come into existence in any country in western Europe.

A great expert has studied so recently the twelfth century exchequer, that there is no need for me to say any more about it.[1] I only want to insist that the exchequer organisation went on quite continuously through the thirteenth to the fourteenth century. It was still, when our reign began, the department of state which was most clearly differentiated from the other political offices. It had the longest history, the most glorious traditions, and its staff possessed the keenest sense of the supreme value of its constituted usage. Though its origin went back to a time when only ecclesiastics were expected to have the knowledge of business involved in an acquaintance with reading, writing and arithmetic, the exchequer had always been partially officered by laymen. Accordingly its staff remained divided between the layman and the clerk. This

1. See R. L. Poole's *The Exchequer in the Twelfth Century* (Oxford, 1912). Mr. Hilary Jenkinson's interesting article on "William Cade, a Financier of the Twelfth Century," in the *English Historical Review*, xxviii, 209-227, and the discussion which it originated in the same periodical, have more recently illustrated another aspect of this subject.

was for our period equally the case as regards each of the two branches into which the exchequer had long been divided. These were the "lower exchequer" or the "exchequer of receipt," and the "upper exchequer" or the "exchequer of account." This distinction, of great importance from some points of view, is for our present purposes not very vital, save that the natural place for the greater dignitaries was the more important exchequer of account, so that they were often content to be represented by deputies and clerks at the "receipt." The head of the exchequer, the treasurer, was a great officer of state, generally second only to the chancellor, though, if endowed with greater capacity or more fully possessed of his sovereign's confidence, he might easily become the *de facto* chief minister, as was emphatically the case with Walter Langton, bishop of Lichfield, the treasurer from 1295 to 1307. The treasurer was practically always an ecclesiastic, but there was no impropriety in a lay baron undertaking the treasurer's duties, if accident or affairs took him away from his post. Next to the treasurer came the two chamberlains, whose name takes us back to the eleventh century, before the exchequer had been differentiated from the royal chamber. Originally they represented the lay element in the exchequer. They were under the Angevins unlearned knights who could not calculate on parchment, or indite rolls and accounts in Latin. The tally system, if not devised for their convenience, was doubtless easier for them to understand. But by the fourteenth century the *miles litteratus* had ceased to be a rare phenomenon, and there was no longer any need for drawing so hard and fast a line between clerk and layman. One result of this is that we find clerical chamberlains of the exchequer, as for instance the notorious Adam of Stratton. Under Edward II the clerical chamberlain is the rule, not the exception.

The extension of education to laymen broke down the ancient distinction between the clerical officers of the exchequer, dependent on the treasurer, and the lay "sergeants," dependent on the chamberlains. With it went one

good reason for separating the "receipt," controlled by the chamberlains, from the "exchequer of accounts," directed by the treasurer. The "receipt" now had, in the issue and receipt rolls, records of its own which required clerkly skill to manipulate. Also the exchequer tallies were no longer rude devices to enable unlettered laymen to keep accounts, but either were checks upon the written records or an elaborate instrument of credit that anticipates the modern cheque, note and exchequer bond or bill. Again, the four or five barons of the exchequer, whose existence as a special class of officers only begins after the majority of Henry III, were indifferently clerks or laymen.[1] Despite this fact, their natural sphere was the exchequer of accounts; so much so that it became customary for writs addressed to this department to be addressed "to the treasurer and barons of the exchequer," just as writs destined for the "receipt" were addressed "to the treasurer and chamberlains."

Some exchequer offices, however, remained clerical. The chancellor of the exchequer, keeper of the exchequer seal, was still always a clerk, though he was now a purely exchequer officer. He was the equal in rank and salary to the barons. There were also the two "remembrancers" of the exchequer, clerks always, because especially charged with the *memoranda* which concerned the interests of the department, and therefore with the composition of the *memoranda* rolls. The origin of the officers is not yet clear, but originally they were two persons keeping almost duplicate rolls for precaution's sake. Already under Edward I one was called occasionally "king's remembrancer" and the other the "treasurer's remembrancer." There was also the clerk who kept the issue and receipt rolls of the lower exchequer, the later "clerk of the pells." A treasurer's clerk was also specially appointed to "sit at the receipt," that is to take and issue moneys during the short vacations when the exchequer was technically closed. There is no need to dwell upon the remaining clerks, ushers and other sub-

1. See for this Appendix II, pp. 333-337.

ordinate officers. The issue rolls shew that wages were commonly paid to the following officers of the receipt; namely two chamberlains, at 8d. a day, three scribes at 5d., a porter at 5d., a weigher at 12d., three tellers at 3d., as well as an officer responsible for watch and lights who only received 1½d.

Essentially the exchequer staff had become by this time a staff of experts, of professional men whose lives were devoted to exchequer work, and who were as much permanent civil servants as the clerks of our present-day treasury. This fact is the more remarkable since all the lay offices of long standing in the exchequer were "in fee," or "held by serjeantry," that is to say were hereditary pieces of property, and quite outside the control of the crown. But the greater of these hereditary royal officers, notably the "chamberlains in fee," were magnates too distinguished to do the work themselves. Accordingly they acquired the habit of nominating some one to act on their behalf. As a rule these nominees fell easily into line with the king's chosen servants, and were quite their equals in professional zeal and devotion to the interests of the crown. Though there was occasionally friction between the hereditary household officers and the king as regards the appointment of the actual men to do the work, I have found nothing to correspond affecting the relations of the actual and nominal officers of the exchequer. Perhaps the fact that the right of the hereditary official to appoint was uncontested made matters easier in practice.

This was notably the case with the chamberlainships. The two hereditary chamberlainships, which went back to the twelfth century, passed from the houses of Malduit and Fitzgerald [1] to the Beauchamp earls of Warwick and the Redvers earls of Devon. When the Redvers lands reverted to the crown, Edward I and his successors kept permanently the right of appointing one of the "chamberlains of the receipt," who discharged the duties of this

1. For their early history see Round, *Commune of London*, pp. 83-5.

hereditary chamberlain.[1] But the earl of Warwick still nominated the second chamberlain of the receipt, and under Edward II we have the curious spectacle of a truculent opposition leader choosing of his own free will the joint holder of the second office, in point of dignity, in the finance ministry of the crown.[2] The accident which, after earl Guy's death, put his inheritance into the hands of a boy two years old, left the king free from 1315 to 1326 to appoint his own men to both chamberlainships.

Even the weighers, the melters, the ushers, and their like held their offices as hereditary serjeantries.[3] Perhaps the steady tendency to appoint clerks to do chamberlains' work, indeed the general preference for clerical ministers, may have had still one root in the feeling that a clerical office could not become an hereditary one. More certainly the steady rise of the importance of the barons, who were appointed by the king, may be explained by the fact that they represented the ruler's free choice. The barons were now indifferently clerks or laymen, and were either promoted exchequer or wardrobe officers, or sometimes appointed from the outside. The barons were not yet judges: but still revenue officers. Yet the striking career of Hervey of Staunton shews that lawyers were already wanted for exchequer work. Staunton was a clerk in priest's orders

1. Up to Edward I's time there were different deputies appointed to the "upper" and "lower" exchequers; see Madox, ii. 297, for instance. But under Edward II we find scanty mention of a separate chamberlain of the upper exchequer. The "chamberlain of the receipt" is often called simply "chamberlain of the exchequer."

2. Guy nominated not only the chamberlain of the receipt but the usher of the receipt and the keeper of the tallies. See *Issue Rolls, no. 177, 9 Edw. II, Mich. term.* "Memorandum est quod in loco magistri Johannis Golafre, nuper camerarii scaccarii de recepta, pro bone memorie Guidone de Bello Campo, nuper comite Warewyk, defuncto, qui de nobis tenuit in capite, deputati, quod quidem officium per mortem eiusdem comitis in manu nostra existit," the king has appointed Mr. William of Maldon by patent of 1 Sept., 1315. Compare *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 345; and pp. 357, 637, for the keepership of the tallies. The social position of some of Edward II's chamberlains was considerable. The office was successively held by a Percy, by the brother of John Cromwell, steward and banneret, and by one of Edward II's Spanish kinsfolk. The marshal of the exchequer was similarly the deputy of the earl marshal; Madox ii, 284-90.

3. See, for instance, J. H. Round on "the Weigher of the Exchequer" in *English Historical Review*, xxvi, 724-27, and in the *King's Serjeants*, p. 121.

and the son of a prosperous Midland knight. His official career was divided between the exchequer, of which he was a baron and chancellor, and the two benches of the common law, of each of which he was in turn justice and chief justice. And already instances have occurred of distinguished pleaders in the common law courts, successful "king's serjeants," leading barristers, as later ages would have called them, made barons of the exchequer because of their success at the bar.[1]

The treasurer was nearly always appointed from outside the exchequer staff. It was, both under Edward I and later, very common for the treasurer to be transferred from one of the great wardrobe offices. Yet there is in our period one important case of promotion within the department. This is that of the energetic exchequer officer, Sir Walter of Norwich, a clerk in early life, who renounced his clergy and became a baron of the exchequer and treasurer more than once, and that though he was a knight and a married man. He is one of the numerous instances of men of this age who started life as clerks and abandoned their clergy to found a family and adopt the knightly career.[2] An even more *bona fide* lay keeper of the treasury was Sir Roger Bellers, also a baron of the exchequer, of whom we shall hear more later. Normally, however, the treasurership was still a strictly ecclesiastical office.

I have sometimes been tempted to imagine that the fact that a certain proportion of the exchequer officers owed their places to hereditary right, or baronial nomination, may partially account for the singularly detached and independent standpoint which the exchequer, like the hereditary parliament of Paris in a later age, not seldom maintained against the crown. It is easier, moreover, to suggest that the full recognition which the baronage always gave to the rights of the exchequer at our period is due,

1. See appendix II, pp. 332-3, 336, 340, 341.
2. The instances of this under Edward II include, besides Walter of Norwich, John Benstead, clerk, keeper of the wardrobe and chancellor of the exchequer, who became a judge, a knight, and a married man, and Hamo of Chigwell, clerk, who became fishmonger and mayor of London.

not only to the innate conservatism of the English radical opposition, but also to their appreciation of the fact that they had other ways of bringing pressure to bear on the crown than by open coercion, as for instance by providing men of their own way of thinking with places in the exchequer. Anyhow any possible alternative to the exchequer was exceedingly distasteful to the baronial opposition. Accordingly every fresh vindication of constitutional liberty, from the Provisions of Oxford to the *Articuli super Cartas,* from the *Articuli super Cartas* to the Ordinances of 1311, insisted as a cardinal principle of reformation that the "issues of the land" shall be paid into the exchequer, and accounted for there at the proper time by the proper persons.

It was a far cry in the fourteenth century between passing a law and carrying it out in practice. Nevertheless Edward I and Langton found it convenient to yield, in form at least, to the baronial demand that the issues of the land should be paid into the exchequer. Under Henry III and in the early years of Edward I revenue flowed indifferently into either the exchequer or the wardrobe. After 1295, when Langton became treasurer, the accounts shew that it became usual for the wardrobe to receive its chief supplies through the exchequer, and to depend but to a trifling extent on its "foreign receipt," as that portion of the wardrobe revenue was called which did not go through the books of the exchequer. The change was more apparent than real, and was in practice largely a matter of book-keeping. Its effect was, however, to make the exchequer the direct office of account for all national revenue. As a matter of fact a mere trifle of the sums accounted for was really paid over by the tax collectors in hard cash into the exchequer, though by ingenious devices all revenue was made to pass through some exchequer account. What happened was that, when the great spending departments, chiefest among which was the wardrobe, went to the exchequer for further supplies, they took away with them for the most part, not money, but dated tallies.

These tallies were in form exchequer receipts drawn out in favour of the sheriffs, and other tax collecting ministers of the crown, for sums known to be due from them to the exchequer, but not yet paid.[1] Armed with these tallies, the officers of the wardrobe could go to the sheriffs, take from them any money or supplies that they happened to have collected, and transfer to them their own tallies to an amount corresponding to the sums which they had received. These tallies the sheriffs in due course produced at the exchequer as vouchers that they had paid already the amounts recorded on them. The sums thus accounted for, though never seen in the exchequer at all, were duly entered upon the exchequer rolls. Thus by an ingenious fiction the magnates' claim was vindicated. The issues of the land, at least, *appeared* to pass through the exchequer. In practice, however, the king still received in his wardrobe a large share of the taxes direct from the collectors, without the vexatious delays involved in these sums passing through the intermediate channel of the exchequer. An indirect result was that exchequer tallies became instruments of credit, and helped to make more subtle the financial and credit system of the English executive. A further consequence of the practice was that the receipt and issue rolls by no means always present a satisfactory indication of the actual sums received and expended by the crown. The neglect of this fact has diminished the value of some modern attempts to calculate the royal revenue.

It is a curious commentary on the view sometimes held that in the later years of Edward I the exchequer overtopped the chancery, when we discover that the issue rolls of this period testify, on the whole, to the inactivity of the great revenue department. These issue rolls, one for each of the two exchequer terms of the regnal year, are curiously clumsy documents of two columns. On the right-hand side is entered what may be called the departmental expenses, the wages of the officers of the exchequer,

1. Much new light is thrown on this subject by Mr. Hilary Jenkinson's article on "exchequer tallies," already referred to above, note 1, p. 43.

the cost of parchment, ink, green wax, baskets, chests and other apparatus for storage and safe keeping. With these go a few pensions, grants and other casual payments made directly out of the exchequer. On the left-hand side is a sort of current account with the heads of the great spending departments, the keeper of the wardrobe specially, and also a few other officials such as notably the constable of Bordeaux, the finance minister for Gascony, and the chamberlain of Scotland, who acted in the same capacity for such parts of the northern kingdom as were from time to time effectively administered by the English kings. But by far the largest payments went to the wardrobe. These were authorised by huge block writs of *liberate*, amounting often to sums such as £10,000 or £20,000, by virtue of which the wardrobe officers got what tallies they needed in constant driblets. The gradual paying off of these lump sums by a series of petty disbursements is recorded in detail. This fashion involved entries so numerous that their running account often overflows into the blank spaces of the properly departmental or right-hand column of the roll. The result was a limitation of exchequer business in its financial side to accounting, which left the exchequer officers with plenty of leisure to hold pleas, draft correspondence under the exchequer seal, and to turn their hands to any business of the king that happened to be in need of trained workers for its execution. Even with the more strictly differentiated government offices of modern times, it is not unusual for a hard-pressed department to borrow clerks from a more leisurely or longer established office. I am told that the new commission for administering the National Insurance Act has to some extent depended upon such labour.

Another point also should not be forgotten. Alone of the early fourteenth century offices of state, the exchequer possessed permanent, roomy and convenient buildings of its own at Westminster. If the law courts, and notably the common bench, had already begun to follow the exchequer's example, the remaining offices of state, the

chancery and the wardrobe, still followed the crown, or at least tried to do so. But the occasional migrations of the exchequer at this time were always to some other fixed spot. In the days of Edward I's troubles with Wales, that place was always Shrewsbury. Later, when politics make it convenient to locate the seat of government near the Scottish border, and near—I may add—the headquarters of the most turbulent of the baronial opposition, the spot chosen was generally York. The migrations of the exchequer from Westminster to Shrewsbury and York were such noteworthy events that they are duly recorded not only in the departmental archives but in the chronicles, notably in those of London and Westminster.[1] There we can read of the long train of waggons that conveyed to the north the records and rolls of the exchequer, among which Domesday book was still of such practical importance that it was never left behind. We can trace in the tone with which London chroniclers deplore these migrations, and welcome back the exchequer to its natural home, the beginnings of the proud consciousness of the dwellers on Thames side that London was the natural centre of all these state activities, and that there was something amiss when they were removed from their accustomed haunts. The "metropolis" began to patronise the "provinces"; but under Edward II the north country had it all its own way.

Those too faithful disciples of Madox, who see the exchequer in all things, have somewhat disturbed the stream of administrative history by their conviction that, before what Madox calls the "declensions of the exchequer from its ancient grandeur" in the thirteenth century, the council and the chancery were often held "in the exchequer," and that the exchequer was already as a law court the rival of the two benches, and had even begun to be a court of appeal. I fail to see that after the death of John the exchequer really fell away from its former importance. On the contrary the early thirteenth century saw new developments of exchequer

1. See for Shrewsbury the Westminster *Flores Hist.*, iii, 48, 56. For York, see *Annales Paulini*, pp. 286, 303, 305.

machinery and the growth of new exchequer offices to an extent quite incompatible with a restriction of its influence. It was under John and the minority of his son that fresh series of exchequer records are first known to have existed in the issue rolls, the receipt rolls and the memoranda rolls,[1] and the first third of the thirteenth century was the time of the clear differentiation of such exchequer ministers as the chancellor and the remembrancers, and the beginnings of the transference of the designation baron of the exchequer from all royal ministers, who had a seat at the national board of finance, to a special class of dignified officers, with a definite status, function and salary. All that we can safely say is that after the reign of John the exchequer was less solitary in its grandeur than it had been in the twelfth century. In the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries, as earlier, it still, primarily and essentially, remained an office of finance. This remained the contemporary view of its functions up to our period. The same constitutional documents of Edward I and Edward II, which insisted on the right of the exchequer to receive and control the issues of the realm, prohibited the exchequer from hearing pleas in which the king's revenue was not concerned.[2] The insignificance of the judicial business of the exchequer, even under Edward II,[3] shews that this prohibition was at least respected to the extent that exchequer

1 The continuous succession of issue rolls begin in 6 Henry III, that of receipt rolls in 14 John, and that of both series of memoranda rolls in 2 Henry III. Mr. H. Hall has, however, published a fragmentary receipt roll of 1185, and there was something called a memoranda roll under John. Of course, these early rolls were not drafted with the technique of the developed rolls. Messrs. Crump and Johnson inform me that a clear differentiation between the rolls of the king's and the treasurer's remembrancers was already marked by 53 Henry III; and probably earlier.

2. See, for instance, *Articuli super Cartas*, § 4, "estre ceo, nul commun plai ne seit desoremes tenu a l'escheqer countre la forme de la grant chartre;" Bémont, *Chartes des libertés anglaises*, p. 104. The series of exchequer plea-rolls begins in 20-21 Henry III, and is practically continuous after 51-52 Henry III; *P. R. O. Lists and Indexes*, no. iv, *Plea Rolls*, p. 64.

3. See Mr. G. J. Turner's Introduction to *Year Books of Edward II*, iv, *xxi-xxii*. "The rolls [of exchequer pleadings] of the four terms of 4 Edw. II are sewn together in a single file and number no more than fifty-three, whereas there are as many as five hundred and nineteen rolls of the common bench for Michaelmas term alone." Mr. Turner also points out that "so far our Year Books have contained no reports from the exchequer."

judicial business did not materially increase before the reforms of the end of that reign had become effective. Just as they restrained its jurisdiction, so did the barons of Edward I restrict its administrative work to matters directly associated with its proper sphere. They limited the use of the exchequer seal and of exchequer writs to strictly departmental correspondence. Thus the ordinances of 1311 prohibited the appointment of a sheriff under the exchequer seal, a common practice of Edward II in his youth, because this involved a usurpation of the essential function of the office of state, the chancery. This veto was repeated by the parliament of Lincoln of 1316, and, when in 1322 the ordinances were repealed, this provision and this provision only, was still continued at law. Thus, the magnates, who were so strong on the constitutional rights of the exchequer, were equally insistent that it should limit itself to its own proper functions.

Conjectures are always hazardous, but in the light of these facts I am inclined to suggest, under all reserves, that we may find at least a partial explanation of many of the extra-financial acts often described as done "in the exchequer," and sometimes imagined to be done by the exchequer, by the circumstances that departments, less well off than the exchequer in the matter of housing, found it convenient to do their work on exchequer premises, lent to them for the purpose.[1] Thus when the chancery holds upon occasion a sitting in the exchequer, we are not to imagine that there is some subtle inter-relation between the two departments. We have simply an instance of the officials of an office with no home of its own meeting in the office of another department better provided with house-room. We can explain in the same fashion the instances given by Madox of the king's council sitting in the exchequer.[2]

1. The baronial view was that chancery and the king's bench ought to "follow the king," a view incompatible with any fixed head quarters. See, for instance, *Articuli super Cartas*, § 5, "D'autre part le roi voet qe la chauncelerie et les justices de soen banc lui suient, issint q'il eit touz jours pres de lui ascuns sages de la lei," etc.; Bémont, *u.s.*, p. 104.

2. Madox, *Hist. of Exchequer*, ii, 26-32 (1769).

They are so numerous that, as Mr. Charles Johnson has shown,[1] there was by 1324 a "place within the exchequer customarily used for holding councils." And in this council chamber within the exchequer we can easily understand select judges from the two benches joining with chancery and exchequer officers to discuss knotty points of law. This furthered the judicial side of the work of the court, and helps to explain why it was found useful to import into the exchequer, as barons, both successful pleaders in large practice and lawyers with wide judicial experience, like Hervey of Staunton, the principal judge of the great eyre of Kent in 1313—1314, but afterwards in succession baron and chancellor of the exchequer. From such meetings it is easy to see that there arose gradually that "exchequer chamber," which the legislation of later periods erected as a formal court of appeal. It is very likely that this council chamber of the exchequer was, as Mr. Johnson suggests, the *thalamus secretorum*, hard by the house where the exchequer sat, to which in the reign of Henry II the barons retired when they wished to discuss secrets, or to deliberate, without disturbing the calculations of the officials busily engaged on the accounts in the adjoining exchequer house.[2] But by the reigns of Edward I and Edward II the exchequer premises contained, I imagine, more than one private room, so that we must not be too certain as to the identification of localities until definite evidence happens to crop up.

1. *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xxi, 726-7, "The Exchequer Chamber under Edward II." Mr. Johnson here prints a letter written by the most prominent chancery clerk, William of Airmyn, to the chancellor, reporting how he had held conference with the chief justices of the two benches, a baron of the exchequer and a justice of the common bench, assembled "in loco de scaccario pro consiliis habendis consueto." The report is written "in dicto loco scaccarii." Other instances of councils held on exchequer premises under Edward II can be found in *Ann. London.*, p. 217, "tunc (21 Sept., 1312) venit maior cum aldermannis ad scaccarium coram consiliariis regis." The Londoners already presented their sheriffs "coram baronibus scaccarii et consilio domini regis apud Westmonasterium"; *ib.*, p. 218. The council apparently sat on these occasions in the exchequer.

2. *Dialogus de Scac.*, i, vij E, p. 92, Oxford ed.

(3) The Chancery under Edward I.

I have lingered longer than I should have wished over the exchequer, and shall have the less space to discuss the chancery.[1] The chancery was, of course, the great secretarial department, the office of state, and its head, the chancellor, was not merely a supreme judge, like the modern lord chancellor, but the king's natural prime minister, like the *Reichskanzler* of the modern German empire or the secretary of state of the United States. From the twelfth century onwards it was the essence of the function of a chancellor that he kept his master's seal, and the keeping of the seal involved the drafting of the state documents to which the king's seal was affixed. Also the composition of the letters in its turn involved a leading share in the determination of the policy expressed in them. It was the very intimacy involved in these delicate functions which kept the chancellor near the court, so that the chancery did not become an office of state, separate from the court, until a good century after the complete differentiation of the exchequer from the *curia regis*. Even the immense increase of chancery business involved by the institution of the system of chancery enrolments, which goes back, as we know, to at least the early years of John, did not do much to separate the chancery from the *curia*.

The first steps towards separation were not due to the increasing importance of the work done by the chancery. They rather flowed from the overweening sense of their own importance felt by the mighty chancellors of the early thirteenth century who, buying their office for life from impecunious kings, administered it and its revenues for their own profit and glory. These "baronial" chancellors came to an end through the jealous desire of Henry III to rule through clerks and subordinates directly dependent on himself.

1. In writing this short account of the chancery I must particularly acknowledge my debt to Miss L. B. Dibben, who has kindly given me access to her manuscript collections for the history of this office. The results of her working through the hanaper accounts are of special interest and importance.

After 1238 Henry "took the chancery into his own hands," brought the chancellors back to court, and assimilated them and their office in all ways to the domestic offices of the king's household. In opposition to the king's policy of domestic chancellors, the barons demanded a chancellor of independent position nominated by themselves. Neither party altogether prevailed. These antagonistic points of view became less important, since after their triumph, the barons showed such jealousy of each other that they had no mind to restore the old-fashioned chancellor for life, who might well prove as dangerous to the aristocracy as he had threatened to be over-mighty for the crown. Accordingly the barons of 1258 soon accepted the new arrangements which Henry III had made for keeping the chancery under his own control. These arrangements included the retention in the hands of the government of the profits of the seal, and their administration by the "hanaper" department, which, for a century after its institution, remained a loosely attached dependency of the wardrobe to which it accounted for the issues of the seal. On the other hand the chancellor was compensated for losing his best chances of exploiting his office in his own interests by receiving a "chancellor's fee," ultimately fixed at £500 a year, and by having put under him a special group of king's clerks, the clerks of the chancery, for whose maintenance he was responsible, and with whose help he discharged the secretarial duties of his office.[1]

The result of this process was that at the end of Henry III's time the chancellor, though still a court official following the king, had a staff of his own entirely separate from the chaplains and clerks of the household. The clerks of the chancery, living with their chief a self-contained and semi-independent collegiate life in the "household of the chancery," soon developed a departmental tradition and *esprit de corps* that began to rival the strong corporate

1. Miss Dibben has worked out the position of the chancery under Henry III in her article on "Chancellor and Keeper of the Seal under Henry III," in *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xxvii, 39-51.

feeling of the exchequer officials. The conservative, not to say the reactionary, policy of Edward I, put back into the hands of his great chancellor, bishop Burnell, the administration of the chancery on the lines followed by the baronial chancellors of fifty years earlier. The close union of policy and the personal intimacy existing between Edward and his minister prevented much harm arising from the independence allowed to Burnell. After his friend's death, however, Edward took care not to repeat this experiment again. The king's next chancellor, John Langton,[1] was a good official of no personal distinction, who had spent his life as a chancery clerk in performing the routine business of the office over which he was now called upon to presidė. Unlike Burnell, he was not allowed to make his profit out of his office, but immediately on his appointment the "chancellor's fee," for the support of himself and his clerks, was revived, and was thenceforth practically permanent. Langton's successors were men of the same type, who play a very insignificant part in history as compared with the masterful treasurer of those years, Walter Langton. Perhaps the obscurity of Edward's later chancellors hastened the development of the office of the chancery on purely business lines. Certainly the tendency for the chancellor and his clerks to go "out of the household," and build up a separate department of state of their own, now went on apace.

When Edward of Carnarvon became king, the chancellor and chancery were rather nominally than really part of the household. The chancellor and his clerks were often separated from the king for long periods of time. There was no longer any need for them to be always in attendance at the court since there had grown up a household secretariat, whose instrument, the privy seal, was quite adequate for the king's personal correspondence, and was particularly useful to him as an easy means of carrying on written

1. "Et succesit ei [*i.e.* to Burnell] in cancellaria Johannes de Langethone, ad tunc clericus simplex de predicta cancellaria;" *Dunstaple Annals* in *Annales Monastici*, iii, 373, R. S.

communications with his chancellor. In the law book of the anonymous writer called Fleta, who wrote about the time of Burnell's death, *cancellaria* and *hospicium* are contrasted with each other.[1] Fleta's descriptions make it clear how different were the clerks of the chancery from the clerks of the wardrobe. He emphasises the fact that the keeper of the privy seal, who was a wardrobe clerk, was the only keeper of a royal seal in England who was absolutely independent of the chancellor.

As the chancery ceased to follow the king, it began to realise the convenience of having fixed quarters of its own. So early as 1280 Burnell, leaving the king to hunt in the New Forest, betook himself to London "as if to a fixed place where all seeking writs and prosecuting their rights could find the appropriate remedy."[2] It must not be imagined from this that the chancery was becoming a law court or going to settle down in London. It shews, however, that there was already a tendency in both directions. It is a sign of the times, therefore, that while, as we have seen, the conservative barons stipulated in 1300 in the *Articuli super Cartas* that the chancery and the king's bench should, after ancient fashion, still follow the king, the more radical king took up an exactly contrary line and ordered the chancery as well as the exchequer to remain at Westminster during his last expedition to Scotland in 1306.[3] And even the barons of 1300 regarded chancery clerks as lawyers by training if not by function, coupling them with the judges of the bench as men "learned in the law." The process that made the chancery a law court was, however, hardly in its infancy. Accordingly we need have no hesitation in saying that part of the inheritance which Edward II received from his father was a well-ordered, and efficient

1. Fleta, *Commentarius Juris Anglicani*, ii, § 13 (pp. 75-78) describes the chancery, and then ii, § 14 (pp. 78-79) goes on to the *hospicium*.

2. *Waverley Annals* in *Annales Monastici*, ii, 393.

3. *C. C. R., 1302-7* p. 455. Edward soon found this policy inconvenient, for, before the parliament of Carlisle of Jan., 1307, we find the chancellor and some of his clerks lodged at Carlisle in close attendance on the king; *Ib.*, p. 529.

chancery, sufficiently dependent on the crown to do the royal will, but having already acquired an essential life of its own apart from the royal household,[1] and capable upon occasions of setting up the traditions of the chancery as its protection from arbitrary caprice, just as the author of the *Dialogus* could balance the customs of the exchequer against the interests of a king so strong as Henry II.[2] Unlike the exchequer the chancery was purely served by clerks. Distinctions were already beginning to be made between clerks of various degrees, but we must not yet call the highest clerks of chancery by the name masters of chancery, which became their appropriate title a generation or two later. At all times the household of the chancery included clerks of great ability and the highest education. The chancery office afforded an admirable career to the ambitious young civilian or canonist from the universities. Many of such chancery clerks attained great eminence, such as the brothers Airmyn, and the higher subordinate posts under the chancellor, notably the keepership of the rolls of the chancery, were already officers of dignity and influence. Moreover other chancery clerks, who failed to reach the highest rank, secured a very comfortable and dignified position, such as, for instance, the chancery clerk of Edward II, Adam of Brome, the founder of Oriel College. In all essentials the chancery had become a national office of state, like the exchequer itself.

(4) The Wardrobe under Edward I.

There remains a third branch of the royal service which I dare not call a department of state, for its essence was that it was still only a department of the household. The king's wardrobe[3] was, speaking roughly, the financial and

1. Yet the old tradition died slowly. So late as 1314 the chancery clerk, Adam of Osgodby, then keeper of the *domus conversorum*, is called in a patent a member of the royal household; *C.P.R. 1313-17*, p. 170.

2. *Dialogus* i, iiij A, p. 66, Oxford ed., defines the function of the exchequer officials to be "ut regis utilitati prospiciant, salua tamen equitate, secundum constitutas leges scaccarii."

3. The following pages contain some of the leading conclusions which I hope to develop soon at greater length in my forthcoming book on the wardrobe. The authorities on which it is based I shall give there in detail.

secretarial department of the king's household, the domestic and semi-private exchequer and chancery of the king, hopelessly overlapping the national exchequer and chancery in all its functions. Its possession of an authority concurrent with the national departments of state immensely added to the confusion and complication of the English administrative system. With all its love of system making, the mediæval mind was in its practical aspects hopelessly unsystematic. To assign two persons, or two organisations, to do the same work seemed to the mediæval man the most natural thing in the world, and it never occurred to him to get rid of anything because it had ceased to meet any intelligible want. It is to this habit, looked at in its widest light, that we must assign the fact that the dying middle ages left early modern society strewn with wrecks of derelict mediæval institutions, which long continued in existence out of mere traditionalism, after the middle ages are supposed to have ended. In quite modern times great cataclysms, like the French Revolution, and new developments, like the movement towards national states, have decently interred many of these relics of the past. But every would-be reformer knows that plenty of them still cumber the ground, and remain so solidly compact that they defy all his efforts to clear them out of the path of progress. In the middle ages themselves, the survival of the old, which ought to have been, but was not, supplanted by the new, is the commonest thing in the world. We have the empire and feudalism surviving national monarchy, and we have baronial parliaments co-existing side by side with the parliaments of the three estates which should have taken their place.

It was in the same spirit that the primitive, undifferentiated household organisation of earlier times still continued its existence after the two great departments of state, the exchequer and the chancery, had grown out of them. Thus, when in the early twelfth century the exchequer differentiated itself from the king's court, there still remained a household department of finance, the *camera curiae*, whose

operations we can obscurely trace from the pipe rolls of the Angevin period, and which still discharged, on a more modest scale, the financial functions which an age of pure reason would have relegated entirely to its mighty offspring, the king's exchequer. Similarly, at the turn of the twelfth and thirteenth centuries, we discover that, as soon as the chancery began to separate itself from the court, there remained a court secretarial and administrative department, whose instrument was the privy seal, and whose direction seems to have been entrusted to that same "chamber of the court" which administered domestic finance.

In the very first years of the thirteenth century things are further complicated by the king's wardrobe appearing in close relation to the king's chamber, though already clearly possessing a separate existence of its own. Now the king's chamber and wardrobe mean, of course, the place where the king slept, and the adjacent ante-room where he hung up his clothes. In our records, however, the expressions mean a great deal more than this. They suggest organised household offices with trained staffs which, if originally set up at court to wait upon the king in the most private aspects of his life, were soon called upon to justify the confidence, which these intimate relations with the monarch had created, by aiding the king to discharge his general functions in an age when no distinction was made or thought of between the private and the public aspects of sovereignty. The result was naturally that the domestic departments were not content to limit themselves to the work of governing the king's household. They were equally the king's helpers in the general administration of his realm. The twelfth and thirteenth centuries saw the erection of the chancery and exchequer, as offices of national administration. But no one dreamt in the thirteenth century of making a distinction between the ruling of the court and the ruling of the nation. The wardrobe and chamber therefore went on just as they had done before. Accordingly the court offices continued to overlap with the chancery and the exchequer, which had arisen from them. They shared with

them the administration of the kingdom, while discharging their fundamental duty of ordering the royal household. Of these domestic departments the chamber soon sank into the background, though it continued an obscure and domestic existence and was revived, as we shall see, under Edward II. It is a peculiarity of English history that the cameral department of the household largely gave way before the growing importance of the wardrobe. This process was completed within a few years of the end of the minority of Henry III, and from that time we hear comparatively little of the chamber, but more and more of the king's wardrobe.

During the second half of the thirteenth century the wardrobe took definite shape as the financial and administrative department of the king's household. It was officered entirely by clerks,[1] though only a few of the many clerks attached to the household had the right to share in the delicate and confidential functions of *garderobarii*, the clerks of the king's wardrobe. The chief clerk, the head of the establishment, was called sometimes the keeper of the wardrobe, and sometimes the treasurer of the wardrobe. As he is often, especially in the thirteenth century, simply called the king's treasurer, it is easy to see that holders of the office have often been confused by historians with the treasurer of the exchequer. Under the keeper or treasurer was a controller, who kept a counter-roll of the household accounts by which the keeper's accounts could be checked. By Edward I's time, the controller was also the keeper of the privy seal, an instrument which was already in existence at the beginning of the reign of John, originally as the seal of the chamber and ultimately in the course of Henry III's reign as the seal of the wardrobe. Accordingly the controller was practically the head of the king's domestic chancery, just as the keeper was the chief of the domestic treasury. Gradually other clerks group round these two, such as the cofferer, who looked after the details of the accounts, and kept the cash box, the *ostiarius*, whose

1. Fleta, p. 78, "garderoba . . quae est locus clericis tantum assignatus."

most important work was perhaps to direct the ceaseless wanderings of the department, the *sub-ostiarius,* who assisted the *ostiarius,* and a few others. But the wardrobe staff was never large and often had to be supplemented at times of crisis by clerks borrowed from other departments. It was perhaps because its numbers were so restricted that the wardrobe opened a career to talent and ambition far wider, and more adventurous than the chancery itself. The chancery clerks were better paid, more highly educated and had a more certain career. As a compensation they attracted little the attention of the king, and still less that of the public. Accordingly their prospects were the limited circumscribed chances of an honourable official career. On the other hand the wardrobe clerks enjoyed the constant personal intercourse with the sovereign which their life at court involved. Besides this, the offices of state always tended to be trammelled by rules and traditions. The court offices were free to carry out the king's wishes in any way that they liked and easily able to make precedents and attract business to themselves by any means in their power. It was pre-eminently the career open to talent. Unscrupulous, illiterate, greedy and pushing, as they often were, the wardrobe clerks had a chance to shew their brains, their courage, their character and their energy. If some of them had the academic training, and the legal lore of the chancery clerk, they were probably converts from the diplomatic side of the king's household clerks. It is no wonder that nearly all the most notable clerical ministers of the reigns of the Edwards began their career in the wardrobe, and made their way through the wardrobe to the highest offices of church and state. Famous instances of this were Edward I's two strongest ministers, Robert Burnell and Walter Langton.

Though the wardrobe was, in Fleta's phrase, *camera clericorum*, an office staffed with clerks, there was an obvious need for constant co-operation between the leading clerks of the wardrobe, and the chief lay officers of the household, and, most notably, the knights, or bannerets, who

held such offices as those of steward, chamberlain and marshal of the household. These offices were doubtless the same in origin as the hereditary dignities of steward, chamberlain and marshal, which had long been annexed to three of the greatest earldoms. But by the thirteenth century a clear distinction had arisen between the hereditary and the working court offices, bearing the same names, and in origin not distinguishable from them. Under Henry III the holders of the former posts, the earls of Leicester, Oxford and Norfolk were glorified with the style of steward, chamberlain and marshal "of England,"[1] while their namesakes were simply the "king's chamberlain," and the steward and marshal "of the household." But it is significant that kings who suffered hereditary offices in the exchequer, and even allowed the keepership of their palace to descend by hereditary right,[2] would not permit that the two chief knightly offices of the household should be disposed of by other hands than their own. Though the household steward and chamberlain were nothing more in origin than lieutenants of the corresponding hereditary magnates, their independence was already secured by the fact that they were appointed by the king. Though the earl marshal had still a little authority at court, it was thought an unheard of presumption when Thomas of Lancaster, as inheritor of the hereditary stewardship, claimed the right of nominating the household steward as his deputy.[3] Yet Thomas' political associate, Guy of Warwick, was suffered all his life to nominate a chief officer of the exchequer.

1. For this see the late L. W. Vernon Harcourt's *His Grace the Steward and Trial by Peers*, especially pp. 121-2. Simon de Montfort called himself "senescallus Angliae" in 1255. Yet in 1221 the hereditary stewardship is called "senescalcia hospicii domini regis"; *ib.*, p. 77.

2. The well-known robbery of the "treasury" at Westminster in 1303 was facilitated by the carelessness of John Stench, keeper of Westminster Palace, by reason of his wife's hereditary fee. Nevertheless, he was in due course restored to his office; *C. C. R., 1302-7*, p. 224.

3. See later pp. 126-127, 133. For the marshal's authority see Appendix I., pp. 282, 312, 314, and *C. P. R. 1330-4*, pp. 40, 179.

Taken together, the chief clerks and knights of the king's *familia* were jointly the king's *secretarii*, his confidants and intimates, the natural official ring of inner advisers of the crown. They were not as yet "secretaries" in the modern official sense, though such a secretariat was in process of development, and was to be made permanent before the fourteenth century had run half its course.[1] Of the clerical *secretarii* I have spoken already; of the lay ones, we have chiefly to emphasize the important position of the steward, the knightly counterpart of the keeper of the wardrobe; and for all practical purposes the lay head of the royal household. In much of the domestic administration of the court, the steward acted jointly with the keeper of the wardrobe, the clerical head of the household, and his essential equal in rank, privileges and emoluments. The marshal was less prominent, and the chamberlain, though important enough in his own sphere, as the "keeper of the king's head," to use the curious phrase of an early fourteenth century monk,[2] was separated from his household colleagues by being the head of the semi-independent branch called the king's chamber, of which we shall have more to say anon. But the larger household organisation embraced all these officers, as well as many others, and also the wardrobe clerks and the other household clerks, the "clerks of offices," as the secretaries of the kitchen, stables, and similar purely domestic departments were called, and their like. It is because, underlying the apparent confusion of the disorderly royal household, there was a very solid, active and continuous organisation that court influence was always so large a factor in the political life of the whole fourteenth century. It went on, whether the king was weak or strong, whether the favourites and high officials were competent or incapable. It was not so much a personal as an organic influence on our national life. To appreciate it is to get at the secret of fourteenth century political history.

1. For this subject see Miss L. B. Dibben's "Secretaries in the Thirteenth and Fourteenth Centuries," in *Eng. Hist. Review*, xxv, 430-444. Miss Dibben emphasizes the official side as far as her authorities allow.

2. "Custos capitis regis," Robert of Westminster in *Flores Hist.*, iii, 193-4.

Within the wider body called the household lay the narrower and closer organisation of the wardrobe, and it was the lesser body which gave coherence, direction and system to court policy. Under Henry III the wardrobe was chiefly favoured in those periods when the national offices were falling under baronial control. When free to act as he wished, Henry III had no desire to set up court officers against national ministers. His aim was rather to treat every branch of his service as an office of the court, and to deal with the chancery and the exchequer on the same lines as the wardrobe. Edward I in most respects carried on his father's policy in this matter, and for the greater part of the reign he used, as his favourite executive instrument, the wardrobe rather than the chancery and the exchequer, because it was more elastic, more dependent, less untrammelled by routine, and above all constantly at his side. Accordingly he continued a policy, already initiated under his father, of treating the wardrobe as the great spending department, the war office and the naval office in times of trouble, the centre of secret diplomacy and confidential action at all times. The result is that the wardrobe, though including all household work within its sphere, was only technically, a department of the household. The king's court was regarded as co-extensive with the nation; the king's knights and guards, afforced by the national and feudal levies, became the national army; the king's ships the basis of the national navy. No line was drawn between the domestic service of the court and the public service of the state. The wardrobe clerk, after a busy day of inspecting the meat, sampling the beer, listing the jewels and precious furs, paying, punishing, promoting the king's cooks, valets, ushers, grooms and other domestic servants, went straight to occupy himself in the political and military administration of the kingdom.

The wardrobe was financed under Edward I by a large proportion of the national revenue being paid directly into it, without going through the exchequer at all. Thus in the two years of the great Welsh war, 1282–84, over

£200,000 passed through the coffers of the wardrobe, while the receipts of the exchequer, so far as they are known, seem to have been extremely insignificant. In doing this, Edward had, I imagine, no other motive than administrative convenience, but when a few years later he had, like his father, to face a powerful, unscrupulous and united baronial opposition, he continued from policy what he had perhaps begun from practical considerations of utility. The result is seen in the emphatic way in which the barons of the last ten or twelve years of Edward I's reign try to strengthen the chancery and the exchequer at the expense of the wardrobe. It was to conciliate them, as we have seen, that Edward or Langton invented the ingenious device by which the revenue seemed to flow into the exchequer, while it really continued to pursue the channels preferred by the court. It may be doubted whether Bohun, Bigod and Winchelsea were taken in by such transparent devices. Anyhow they did not relax their watchfulness, and they still turned their direct attention to the court offices, as the source of all the national troubles. We can illustrate this by the new demands, first voiced in 1300 in the *Articuli super Cartas*, that the small seal, that is the privy seal of the wardrobe, was not to be used so as to deprive men of their legal rights. Against this was provided the remedy of insisting on the continued itinerancy of the chancery and great seal with the court. Thus the domestic secretariat falls under the same suspicions that had already been excited by the domestic treasury. In the same spirit, prises and purveyances for the wardrobe were rigidly limited and carefully checked. It was because the *Articuli super Cartas* so largely concerned themselves with restricting the sphere of his household organisations that Edward I bitterly resisted them. Even more than the forests, the household was the special region of royal autocracy. We are now on the threshold of a constitutional conflict, in which the royal attempt to intrench itself in the court organisation is answered by the effort of the baronage to appropriate to their own use the machinery of the court

as well as the machinery of the state. It is this conflict which gives the reign of Edward II a special importance for us. But it is significant that the first rumblings of the storm began during the declining years of the old king.

I must not, however, deviate too far from my present purpose. All that I want to suggest is that by the reign of Edward I the king's wardrobe, with its instrument the privy seal, was from the king's point of view a third great department of government, which had for him the supreme advantage of being entirely at his own disposal, and yet was quite as well manned, financed, and organised as the two great departments of state. How many-sided the activity of the wardrobe had now become may be additionally illustrated by the fact that it had itself begun to split up into sub-departments. I have already mentioned one of these in the *hanaper* department, which under the clerk of the hanaper administered and accounted for the profits of the great seal. This, until 1323, was strictly a department of the wardrobe, though its business had become altogether out of relation to household needs. A second branch of the wardrobe, which also arose in the middle part of Henry III's reign, was the *great wardrobe,* so-called not because of its importance, but because it dealt with bulky commodities. As the organisation for the purchasing, manufacturing and storing of cloth, furs, spices, groceries, delicacies and luxuries of all sorts, and of other storable articles needed for the court, the great wardrobe is of all branches of the wardrobe the least interesting to the constitutional historian. Nevertheless in times of war it at once became the army clothing department, and a factory and store-house for armour and arms. Early in the fourteenth century the office for cloth and the office for arms and armour were separated, and the latter became a new wardrobe office which soon got the name of the king's *privy wardrobe in the Tower of London.* It is only when the Hundred Years' War begins that this privy wardrobe has any importance, and I mention it here to complete the list of wardrobe departments, existing when our reign began. Each was

under its responsible head or clerk, and had a certain amount of local autonomy, but each was a mere branch or dependency of the parent institution to which it tendered its accounts, and to which it was responsible.

The wardrobe system was not peculiar to the king's household. Every earl and baron had a *familia*, a household, which followed pretty closely the lines of the *domus regis*,[1] in proportion to the lord's resources, and in each of these baronial establishments the wardrobe clerks were the directive and organising force. It is much to be regretted that we have few details of the wardrobe establishment of a magnate like Thomas of Lancaster, whose household, council, clerks, knights, counsellors and retainers loom so largely in the annals of the time.[2] We are fortunate, however, in still possessing records of the wardrobes of the queen and the king's sons. In particular there survive several instructive account books of the wardrobe of Edward of Carnarvon, when prince of Wales, which enable us to study his early life and the organisation and personnel of his household in a detail such as is impossible for any earlier king's son in our history. The queen's wardrobe and the prince's wardrobe were organised on exactly the same lines as the king's wardrobe, but, like the great wardrobe and the privy wardrobe, were looked upon as dependent branches of it.[3] In the case of Edward of Carnarvon we feel pretty sure that his wardrobe officers were appointed, and strictly controlled, by the old king. It is nevertheless of great importance to realise that the household officers of the younger Edward, when he was prince, formed a well organised body of intimate friends and congenial companions, to whom the young ruler was already closely

1. Each baron had his *consilium* as well as his *familia*. It was through the help of a member of his *consilium* that Roger Mortimer of Wigmore escaped in 1324 from the Tower. Two other councillors met the fugitive with a boat; Blaneford, p. 146, apud Trokelowe.

2. Higden *Polychronicon*, viii, 314, says that Thomas left "cuncta agenda sua ad nutum unius hominis secretarii sui." Was this John Bek, who conducted the Sherburn conference, Bridlington, p. 62, or Robert Holland his receiver, Malms., p. 267?

3. Extant accounts of queen Isabella's wardrobe include those in *Exch. Accts. K. R.*, 375/9, 376/20, and several others.

attached. If we turn over surviving wardrobe accounts of the prince of Wales, we shall find, among the inmates of the prince's household, nearly all the names of those persons most intimately associated with Edward during his reign. Among the prince's officers for the last year of the old king's life we find that Walter Reynolds was his treasurer and William Melton his controller. William of Boudon, the future treasurer of queen Isabella, was his usher. Ingelard of Warley, and Nicholas of Huggate were among his clerks. Among the laymen were Robert Hausteade his steward, Guy Ferre, Oliver of Bordeaux, one of his esquires, and John Charlton, an esquire of his chamber recently advanced to knighthood.[1] In short we find that only one name is wanting among those most closely associated with Edward's policy as king. This is the name of Peter Gaveston. Firstly as a ward in custody, then as a squire and knight of the prince's household, Gaveston had figured largely in previous rolls. More recently, however, the old king, coming to the conclusion that his influence was a bad one, had tried to mend his son's ways by driving his most intimate friend into banishment. The result was that the friction, already felt between the king and his heir, became acute and naturally extended down from the two chief personages concerned to their respective followers. We shall see in the next lecture the importance of this. We shall find that the accession of Edward II is found to involve not only a change of monarch, but the transference of the chief direction of affairs from the household of the old king to the household of his unworthy heir.

1. See for these names and others *MS. Ad. no. 22,923* (prince of Wales' Wardrobe book for 35 Edward I) *passim*. Miles of Stapleton, knight, Edward's steward up to 1306, and again in 1307 as king, should be remembered in conjunction with them. Guy Ferre, a French subject was already in 1295 "staying continually in the company of the king's son;" *C.C.R., 1288-96, p. 502.*

III.

THE STRUGGLE FOR THE ORDINANCES.

(1) The Three Periods of the Reign.

The history of the reign of Edward II divides itself into three periods, and these periods are not the less well marked because there is some difficulty in drawing the exact lines that separate them from one another. The first and longest period of the reign runs from the king's accession to about 1318, by which time the failure of Thomas of Lancaster to carry into effect the policy of the ordinances was absolutely made patent to all England. It was, administratively, a period in which the system of Edward I, severely strained during the last years of the old king's reign, utterly broke down. Bannockburn showed the futility of the attempt to uphold the English king's authority in the north, while the baronial effort to revive aristocratic control by recurring to the traditions of the reign of Henry III, was more successful in its negative side of ruining the royal autocracy, than in its positive side of supplying an alternative system of efficient government. This period attains its culminating point in 1316, when earl Thomas was made the king's chief counsellor by the parliament of Lincoln, and ends when he was deprived of that position, two years later. But underlying the troubles that filled those years, there were the beginnings of that readjustment of parties by which subsequent progress was to come. As this new balance of political forces established itself, we get gradually into more stormy but more interesting times. Thus the second great period of the reign, the years of crisis and of reconstruction, began in 1318, when the new middle party of Pembroke seized possession of the state, and upheld a definite policy of constructive reform which, however hampered in its execution, brought with it at least the promise of better things. The critical central period went

on from the treaty of Leake in 1318 to the parliament of York in 1322, which consummated the triumph of the Pembrokians, allied with the courtiers, over the remnants of the discredited faction of the ordainers. But the fruits of that triumph went not to Pembroke and his friends, but to the king and the Despensers. Reaction followed in the wake of the royalist-Pembrokian coalition. The reaction had all its own way during the third period of the reign from 1322 to 1326, and then collapsed suddenly in the dramatic fall of the king and his favourites.

At every period of the reign the personnel of the administration seems to me to be of great importance. I shall, therefore, feel obliged to direct special attention to the somewhat neglected subject of the tenure of the chief offices of state during the reign. But the details of the fluctuations of Edward II's official advisers are too dull, and their significance too uncertain, for it to be possible to do more here than to dwell upon the more significant ministerial changes. Which of such changes are significant is, however, by no means an easy matter to decide. With the object of affording materials for the examination of this question, I have been at some pains to draw up and print in an appendix, as complete a list as I could make, of all the leading officials of the reign.[1] Some of the lists were easy enough to compile; but others present great difficulties and I cannot pretend to have done more than make the way easier for my successor. If the majority of these lists of unknown worthies do not seem to suggest very much, they will at least afford a basis for a more accurate and detailed study of the reign. What the study of English mediæval history wants, if it is to be kept up as a living thing, is more technical and detailed cataloguing and systematising of the dry facts. It is only when the spade-work of history has been done that we may hope to come to any authoritative generalisations. And until substantial progress has been made in this direction, we must renounce any hope of solving the problems of the period.

1. See below Appendix II, pp. 319 and following.

I must frankly confess that I am by no means clear as to the significance of a large number of the personal changes in the rulers of England at this period as tabulated in these lists. We must not expect consistent politicians in the fourteenth century; we must not even expect consistent policies in parties. Yet political parties, if not already made, were in the making, and if there were more vicars of Bray than there were officials willing to sacrifice themselves for their principles, the strong personal ties which bound vassal to lord, pupil to master, and follower to leader, did largely help to keep up a near approach to consistency among the rank and file. It was something gained, if large classes of officials recognised a simple principle of policy in the natural one of obedience to command.

In approaching the personal changes in the offices of state during the earlier half of the reign, I have already emphasised the point that the reign is, as a whole, remarkable for the continuity of the administrative personnel. There were many changes when the king came to the throne. In accepting his father's policy, Edward II did not accept his father's ministers. But after these critical changes, there are remarkably few that can be set down to conscious changes for political reasons. The ordinances required the appointment of ministers in parliament. Some changes accordingly took place in 1311, and more in 1314, in obedience to the barons' demand. But in 1316 the re-organisation of the *familia regis*, for which the ordainers had clamoured, was still unfulfilled. The result was that in 1318, eight years after the passing of the ordinances, the ordainers had not succeeded in making a radical reform of the king's unsatisfactory household.

(2) The Changes after Edward II's Accession.

Let us begin with the changes which followed immediately upon Edward of Carnarvon's succession. To understand these we must know what were the ministers he displaced in favour of his own friends.

When Edward I died Walter Langton, bishop of Lichfield, the treasurer, was by a long way the most trusted and forcible of the king's ministers. Compared with Langton, the chancellor, Ralph Baldock, bishop of London, was a man of very secondary importance. After Langton the men who really counted were the two chief clerks of the wardrobe, John of Drokensford, or Droxford,[1] keeper of the wardrobe, and John of Benstead, or Binsted,[2] controller of the wardrobe. Droxford, an intimate ally of Langton's, seems to have been mainly charged with the financial side of the wardrobe, while Benstead, after the fashion of Edward I's reign, was, as controller, keeper of the privy seal.[3] He was therefore responsible for the administrative side of the wardrobe, and for that reason is called with special appropriateness "the king's secretary." It followed that the old king's chief confidence was given to the former *garderobarius*, Langton, and to the two leading wardrobe officers at the moment.

Drastic ministerial changes followed Edward I's death, but they were neither so sudden nor so complete as some of the chroniclers suggest.[4] It was only after the lapse of some months that even the head officials were changed. And as regards minor functionaries, the insistence that all should receive a new commission from the new king blinded the chroniclers to the undoubted fact that many of the newly empowered officers in the exchequer, the two benches

1. Drokensford is always so styled in contemporary records, but Droxford is the modern form of the Hampshire village from which he derived his surname.

2. The "Benstede" of contemporaries is, I suspect, Binsted, near Alton, Hampshire, where John held property at the time of his death; *Cal. Inquisitions*, vi, 285. It may, however, have been Banstead in Surrey, or one of the several Binsteads. In the face of this doubt, I have preserved the contemporary "e," and called him Benstead, though my general rule is to write place names in their modern form, even when used as surnames.

3. It is certain, from *Ad. MS.*, 7965, m. 29, and *Liber Quotidianus Garderobe anno regis Edwardi primi xxviii°* (Soc. Antiquaries, 1787), pp. 75, 313, and 326, that Benstead was keeping the privy seal as early as 1296-1300, being already controller of the wardrobe. In the light of this fact, Maitland's conjecture that John Berwick was possibly keeper of the privy seal in 1305 can be readily dismissed; *Memoranda de Parliamento* (1305) p lxiv.

4. For instance, *Ann. Paulini*, p. 257; *Lanercost*, p. 210.

and other semi-political and judicial posts, were the same individuals who had already been acting during the old king's last years. However, almost a clean sweep was made of the leading men, and the chroniclers had some reason for affirming that their successors were men of an altogether lower stamp. Within a few weeks of his accession, the new king drove Langton from office, threw him into prison, and seized all his property. Bishop Baldock also was relieved of his post, while Droxford was transferred to the comparatively subordinate office of chancellor of the exchequer. Of the old king's four chief advisers, only one, Benstead, received promotion, being put in Droxford's post as keeper of the wardrobe. Edward II chose as his chancellor that trusted old official of his father, John Langton, bishop of Chichester, who had already been chancellor between 1292 and 1302. Neither Benstead nor John Langton held these offices for long. The keeper of the wardrobe was removed after a year and was succeeded by Droxford, who also kept this post for a year only. The chancellor, an old man, and not a pronounced politician, remained in custody of the seal for nearly three years. It is unlikely that any of these three had any large share of the new king's confidence. That of course went mainly to Peter Gaveston. I cannot accept the statement of several chroniclers that Gaveston was the new king's chamberlain.[1] In any case, however, Gaveston's influence was not due to office, but to his personal intimacy with the king. Undoubtedly he controlled the household, though we cannot but be sceptical as to his holding a specific post in it.

It is of some significance that the official representatives of the new king's personal policy were the two chief officers of his wardrobe as prince of Wales. These were Walter Reynolds, the former keeper of the prince's wardrobe, and William Melton, its former controller. Both had begun their official career as king's clerks, and doubtless owed

1. See earlier p. 12, note 2.

their appointment as chiefs of the prince's wardrobe to the old king. At the best of times Edward I had been singularly indifferent as to the personal character of his ministers, and it is only fair that he should share in the discredit which history has meted out to his son for his patronage of the unworthy and incompetent Reynolds. Perhaps Edward II ought also to take his part in the merit of being equally loyal to the high-minded and competent Melton.[1] Even of Reynolds it is right to say that though he may have strengthened his hold on the young prince's favour, as chroniclers tell us, by his consummate gifts as a manager of theatricals[2] he had for years held the responsible post of head of his household, and manager of his finances, to the satisfaction of Edward I, and was therefore not likely to be a mere purveyor to the young man's pleasures. Reynolds now succeeded Walter Langton as treasurer, remaining at that office until 1310. In May of that year John Langton was, as the chronicler says, deposed to his own honour from the chancery by the king.[3] Thereupon Reynolds stepped into his place. He was already bishop of Worcester and before long, by a scandalous transaction between Edward II and Clement V, became the unworthy successor of Winchelsea as archbishop of Canterbury. It is perhaps further evidence of Reynolds' easy-going ways that, both as treasurer and as chancellor, he seldom acted in

1. Melton, previously a clerk in queen Margaret's wardrobe, had been in Edward of Carnarvon's service ever since his appointment as prince of Wales in 1301; from 1301—4 as chamberlain of Chester; A. Jones, *Flintshire, Ministers Accounts*, pp. 1-48, Flintshire Hist. Soc., 1913. From 1304 to 1307 he was controller.

2. Malmesbury, p. 197, describes Reynolds as "simplex clericus et minus competenter litteratus sed in ludis theatralibus principatum tenuit et per hoc regis favorem optinuit." But can we trust a writer who ignores Reynolds' early official career and Edward I's responsibility for his choice? He had been the "prince's treasurer"—*i.e.*, keeper of his wardrobe, since 1301; R. S. Brown, *Cheshire Chamberlains' Accounts, 1301-1360*, p. 12, Lancashire and Cheshire Record Soc., 1910.

3. "depositus per regem ad honorem suam," *Ann. Paul.*, p. 268. Reynolds became his successor, "communitate tamen Angliae non consentiente;" *ib.*, p. 269. The Receipt Roll of the Exchequer carefully notes that Reynolds left the treasury "non amotus per transgressionem, sed sponte et de licencia et bona voluntate regis; *Receipt Roll*, no. 188, *3 E. II, East. T.*

person, some exchequer or chancery clerk frequently serving as his deputy.[1] The less pushing and showy Melton became the controller of Edward II's wardrobe, and keeper of his privy seal. Melton retained this office for seven years under three different keepers, and between 1314 and 1316 held the higher dignity of keeper of the wardrobe, occupying this post until the royal favour made him in 1317 archbishop of York. Thus the two chiefs of the prince's wardrobe attained the two archbishoprics of the English church. We shall hear something of them again, of Reynolds for evil, and of Melton for good, for the whole of the rest of our period.

The promotion of Reynolds and Melton did not stand alone. A comparison of the last wardrobe accounts of Edward, as prince, with his later wardrobe accounts, as king, shows that substantially the whole household staff of the prince of Wales was transferred to the household of the new king. This was equally the case as regards the lay and the clerical staffs of the prince's household. With reference to the former we may add to the names mentioned in the last chapter that of Gaveston, now earl of Cornwall, and the husband of the king's niece, Margaret of Clare, and that of his brother-in-law, the king's nephew, Gilbert of Clare, who soon became old enough to take up the personal management of his earldom of Gloucester. Great earls, whether of Gloucester or of Cornwall, were too magnificent personages to remain household officials even of a king, but the policy of earl Gilbert was always strongly influenced by his personal associations in youth. Edward immediately made steward of his household, Miles Stapleton, recently his steward as prince. More permanently associated with Edward II's household was the pushing Shropshire squire, John Charlton, who, already a knight of

1. He had only acted in person for a few months. His successor as treasurer, John Sandall, had been his *locum tenens*. Sandall was not, as Stubbs says, a "protégé of Winchelsea"; *Cons. Hist.* ii, 354. He had no leanings to the clerical party, but was a moderate and colourless official.

the prince's household, retained his post when his master became king and by 1310 or 1311 had become the court chamberlain of Edward II. Charlton shewed great dexterity in using the royal favour to establish himself as lord of Upper Powys, a district to which he had some claim as the husband of the great Welsh heiress, Hawise Gadarn, who represented the ancient line of the princes of Powys. Besides knights, the members of the prince's household remaining in his service as king included nearly all the prominent wardrobe clerks of the reign.[1] Among them we may specially mention the hated Ingelard of Warley, who succeeded Droxford as keeper in 1309, and whose removal from court, demanded by the ordainers, was for five years successfully resisted.

Long before all these changes had been carried out, Edward II's policy had hopelessly broken down. It seems a paradox to say that the young king's political objects were the same as those of Edward I, just as it once seemed a paradox to say the policy of James I was to continue on the lines of queen Elizabeth. Nevertheless I am quite sure that this statement is true. Edward has often been reproached with giving up voluntarily the conquest of Scotland. He cannot be severely censured for breaking off the campaign of 1307 to secure possession of the throne. That his subsequent efforts to come to close quarters with Robert Bruce were failures is partly, but only partly, to be ascribed to his frivolity and want of enterprise. If Gaveston is to be condemned for most of his master's errors, he certainly is not to be blamed for this, for when serious hostilities were renewed, the most hostile chroniclers admit that the favourite comported himself against the Scots like a gallant warrior.[2]

The blame for neglecting to recognise the seriousness of the Scots revolt fell much more heavily on the earls and barons of the opposition. The weakness of the English defence was, however, most of all due to the utter disorder

1. All this illustrates Malmesbury, p. 257; "adhaesit consilio juvenum, qui secum ab adolescentia fuerant conversati."
2. *Ann. London.*, p. 174; Hemingburgh, ii, 278; Baker, p. 4.

of the royal finances, for which the old king must bear nine-tenths of the responsibility. We have only to turn over the issue rolls of the exchequer, and such wardrobe accounts as survive of the early years of Edward II's reign,[1] to see into what desperate straits the king's revenues had fallen. All the revenues of the exchequer went to the wardrobe or to the English chamberlains of Scotland, who financed what remained of the English army and administration in Scotland. The supplies thus available were but a drop in the bucket of expenses. New taxes were tried but found unproductive. One keeper of the wardrobe after another gave up his task in despair. Not one of them was able to put his accounts together in a shape which would pass muster with the exchequer officials. Years after they had left office, the keepers of the wardrobe were still receiving monies from the exchequer and endeavouring to pay off their debts. The issue rolls for these years present a curious spectacle. The accounts with the keepers of Edward I's latter years and those of the new king's reign were still kept open. We find at the same time Droxford receiving and paying monies as keeper of Edward I and as keeper for the second year of Edward II. Benstead's accounts as keeper for the first year of Edward II still remained open, and were only finally passed by the exchequer in time to be enrolled in the Pipe Rolls of 16 Edward II, sixteen years after Benstead had gone out of office, and after his death.[2] Droxford's accounts for 2 Edward II, and Warley's accounts between 1309 and 1314 were never enrolled at all. This shameful account keeping involved the breakdown of the financial system

1. There are enrolled wardrobe accounts available for 1 Edw. II, but no others until 8 Edward II. After this they are regularly, though very tardily, enrolled; *Enrolled Foreign Accounts*, p. 102. Fortunately there also survive in *Exch. Accts. K. R.*, 374/6, 15, 375/1, 9, accounts for the 4-7 Edw. II, so that those of 2 and 3 Edw. II are alone wanting.

2. Benstead died before 20 December, 1317, and his lands were seized by the king by reason of his debts to the exchequer; *Cal. Inquis.*, vi, 284-287. His widow, Petronilla, and his other executors finally satisfied the exchequer claims; *Pipe Roll, 16 Edw. II*, m. 50. A clerk at the time he held office, Benstead's will was proved by his widow, and his estates inherited by his son, a boy of 12.

which Walter Langton and Droxford had devised for Edward I. We shall see the remedies devised to end this scandalous state of things later. During the first ten years of the reign, with which alone we are concerned in this chapter, the chaos was yearly becoming more complete.[1]

Under these circumstances the Italian bankers were the king's only refuge. The advances of the Frescobaldi enabled Edward II to keep alive the ministers of his household and state. It is clear, however, that only a small portion of the sums received by these greedy foreigners from the king's subjects actually reached the royal coffers. The rest of it remained in their own hands. Yet though hated and unpopular, they were indispensable. Amerigo dei Frescobaldi, their chief English representative, became one of the most important men in England. He was not only chief receiver of customs; he was also keeper of the king's exchanges at London and Canterbury.[2] As constable of Bordeaux, Amerigo was also the head of the financial administration of Edward's duchy of Gascony. Moreover he was only one of the many foreign exploiters of the English national purse. Gascon bankers rivalled the Florentines' societies of merchants in their business-like pursuit of their own game. Conspicuous among these was the family of Calhau, and this clan of Bordeaux capitalists was linked, as we have seen, by close ties of blood and interests to the upstart earl of Cornwall. Bertrand Calhau, Gaveston's nephew,[3] and a valet of the household, was his uncle's financial agent, and stood for the "foreign merchants" to whom Peter was popularly supposed to be engaged in transferring the huge treasure which he had

1. Mr. Arthur Jones notes similar arrears in the accounts of the chamberlains of Chester. There are no accounts from 1306 to 1312, and other gaps between 1313 and 1316, 1317 and 1319, and 1321-1324; *Flintshire Ministers' Accounts*, pp. viii-ix, Flintshire Hist. Soc.

2. He was appointed to this office on 20 Aug., 1307; *Cal. Fine Rolls, 1307-19*, p. 2.

3. *MS. Cotton, Nero C. viii*, f. 88 d. "Domino Petro de Gauaston comiti Cornubie de dono regis *per manus Bertrandi Caillau nepotis sui* . . . . d. marcas." See above p. 13. Bertrand and his kinsfolk apparently exploited the earldom of Cornwall, especially its mines; *Ann. Lond.*, p. 199.

amassed at the expense of Englishmen, that it might be stored up in Gascony against a rainy day.[1] Even in matters of business the king's "brother Peter" had not clean hands. And the outlook was the worse since the men of affairs were now become also administrators and politicians. Bertrand Calhau's father had been mayor of Bordeaux; his cousin, Arnold Calhau, at one time mayor of Bordeaux, was admitted in 1313 as a knight of the royal household,[2] and later became seneschal of Saintonge and keeper of Oléron. Both Gascon and Italian capitalists, then, were laying hands on affairs of state, the natural preserves of Englishmen and in particular of the English aristocracy.

The alert baronial opposition, which the old king had silenced with the greatest difficulty, instantly took advantage of the incapacity and distress of the young king. I need not tell the oft-told tale how, within a few months of the new king's accession, the barons drove Gaveston into his second exile, and how cleverly Edward and his personal advisers broke up the unity of the baronial opposition, but gave way on all points of policy on condition that the favourite was allowed back. The articles of Stamford of 1309,[3] which registered this surrender, were in substance a re-enactment of the *Articuli super Cartas* of 1300. In no way, however, do these articles mark an epoch, and they never had a chance of being carried out. Many of the barons refused to agree to Gaveston's restoration. The Gascon, when he reappeared at court, showed that he had learnt little by his exile. So the same game was played over again. This time the barons would stand no nonsense. It was useless wresting promises from a king who would not keep his word. They fell back on the remedy which their grandfathers had employed so effectively against Henry III. A baronial committee was to "ordain

1. Trokelowe, p. 64, "thesaurum . . mercatoribus transmarinis ad custodiendum tradebat."

2. *Exch. Accts., K.R.* 375/8 m. 5. records his admission on 7 March, 1313, to the wages and robes of a "miles simplex," *i.e.*, not a "banneret," of the household. He is described as "ciuis Burdigale."

3. Printed in *Rot. Parl.*, i, 443-5.

and establish the estate of the realm and the household according to right and reason." London was their meeting place, and not even a Scottish war could drag them from the work in hand until it had been completed. Eighteen months was allowed them for this onerous task, from March 1310, to Michaelmas 1311. Some preliminary ordinances were issued soon after they first assembled; the complete ordinances were of the later date. The principle which inspired them all was the transference of power from the king and his friends to baronial nominees, and the drastic purging of the royal household of its irresponsible and unworthy elements. Such was the genesis of the lords ordainers and of the ordinances of 1311 which they drew up.

(3) The Ordinances and the Ordainers.

The judicious monk of Malmesbury refused to copy out all the ordinances in his chronicle because he had no wish to break into his narrative or to bore his readers.[1] But, he added, anyone can find them in the collections of laws, and, even apart from this, the ordainers had taken good care that they should obtain sufficient publicity.[2] I cheerfully follow the wise monk's reticence, and I do so the more willingly since I have no wish to discuss the ordinances at large.[3] Some five points in relation to them must, however, next demand our attention. These are the composition of the ordaining committee and its mode of appointment, the problem of the participation of the commons in their work, the nature and authority of the ordinances issued, the extent to which they were carried out, and the permanent changes resulting from them. Let us take these points in order.

The ordainers were a purely aristocratic committee, consisting of bishops, earls and barons.[4] They represented, however, very varied types of opinion, and only the

1. Malmesbury, p. 171.
2. A copy was sent under the great seal to every county of the realm; *ib.*, p. 171, compare Robert of Reading, p. 147. Every cathedral church had also a copy; Murimuth, p. 15.
3. The ordinances are printed in *Rot. Parl.*, i, 281-6.
4. A list is in *Ann. Lond.*, p. 172.

thoroughgoing partisans and dependents of the king were excluded. The venerable earl of Lincoln and the youthful earl of Gloucester, the only two earls who, despite strong personal provocation, had been magnanimous enough never to take up a decided line against Gaveston, co-operated with the truculent opposition, represented by Lancaster, Hereford, and Warwick, and the milder opposition, represented by Pembroke. Ancient ministers of Edward I, innocent of all revolutionary aims, like bishop John Langton of Chichester and bishop Baldock of London, went hand in hand with the determined archbishop Winchelsea, who had resumed the leadership of the opposition as soon as he returned from the exile into which Edward I had driven him. The large proportion of Edward's former ministers among the ordainers is particularly noteworthy. And these various shades of policy did not prevent speedy and decisive action. There is no evidence that there was a protesting minority against the vigorous doings of the majority. Of the more royalist element, Lincoln died before he was called upon to make his final election between the son of his old master and his own son-in-law, Thomas of Lancaster; while Gloucester evaded responsibility by taking part in a Scottish campaign, and returning to London only to act as regent after Lincoln's death.[1] With this one exception the ordainers stuck manfully to their task, refusing for instance to participate in the Scottish campaign on the ground that it was their duty to remain in London to complete their programme of reform.[2]

As regards the method of appointment, the king's face was saved by the election of the ordainers being formally made by virtue of royal letters patent, giving authority "of our free will" to draw up ordinances for the reform of state and household[3] to whomsoever the barons appointed

1. *Ann. Lond.*, p. 174. He was made *custos Angliae* on 4 March, 1311; *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 333. Lincoln died on 5 Feb.
2. *Ann. Lond.*, p. 174.
3. *Foedera*, ii, 105; *Rot. Parl.*, i, 445. With the clear object of giving greater publicity to the concession, the patent was drawn up in French, and not in Latin as most patents were, and fourteen copies of it were ordered to be made. "Et inde fiant septem paria."

for the purpose. Edward's feelings were also respected by a declaration on the part of the barons that the rights of the king and his heirs should not be prejudiced by his compliance with their wishes.[1] The patent of appointment was, however, based upon the petition of the baronial parliament, assembled at London in the spring of 1310,[2] and therefore substantially took the ordinary course of legislation at that period. Some evidence of haste and informality suggested the purely nominal nature of the royal assent. The ordainers were already at work before Edward gave his sanction to their institution. The letters patent of approval are dated 16 March, and the ordainers were only elected and sworn on 20 March. However, the day before, on 19 March six preliminary ordinances were issued, which laid down the general lines on which the work was to be done, and which, irregular as they were, Edward was forced to promulgate in the following August.[3] While the ordainers held constant sessions in the city, the king and Gaveston kept out of the way by engaging in the Scottish war. It was nearly eighteen months later before the completion of their task brought Edward back to the capital to meet the full parliament of the three estates which met on 9 Aug. 1311, at Westminster. To this body the whole work of the ordainers was submitted, including the six preliminary ordinances of March 1310.

It is in this parliament of the summer of 1311 that any general assent of the three estates to the ordinances must have been given, if such popular ratification were thought necessary at all. I cannot, however, but think that both those who maintain and those who deny the participation of the commons in the passing of the ordinances seek to apply to the early fourteenth century the distinctions and refinements of a later generation, and that the problem they

1. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 443. It was dated 17 March, and was enrolled on the close roll. Eleven bishops, eight earls, and thirteen barons took part in the act, both the royalists and the opposition being represented.

2. *Ann. Lond.*, pp. 168-9. This chronicle also sets out in full both the royal consent of 16 March and the baronial declaration of 17 March.

3. *Ib.*, pp. 172-4.

discuss is largely an unreal one. It in fact involves that unhistorical way of looking at history to which ordinary practical lawyers have at all ages been exceptionally prone. They look at the past as a plane surface which has never been altered. They have imperfect appreciation of the idea of development. They assume that the modern categories have existed from all time, and persist in reading them back into an age which knew nothing of them. Take as an ancient example of this mental habit, the attitude of the seventeenth century lawyers of the school of Coke to mediæval antiquities, which led them to read into history the ideas of their own age and profession. Nor has the following of Coke altogether ceased in the land. Our modern peerage law, as Mr. J. H. Round has so incisively shown,[1] is full of these legal perversions of history, notably in its ridiculous doctrine of "calling out of abeyance" thirteenth century baronies which were in no wise hereditary dignities in the modern sense. It is almost as absurd to expect formal legislation by the three estates in 1311 as it is to imagine that Edward I created an hereditary house of lords in 1295. As, however, we are nearing the time when the consent of the three estates did begin to be thought necessary for legislation, it is worth while to pause to deal with the facts.

I have already pointed out that the parliament of March 1310, at which the ordainers were appointed, was a purely baronial assembly. Accordingly, the view, maintained nearly a hundred years ago by Hallam,[2] that the assent of the commons was given to the appointment of the ordainers necessarily falls to the ground. Its only basis was an inaccurate recital of the royal writ of 16 March 1310, contained in the preamble to the ordinances as they appear in print. In this preamble Edward II's letters patent are quoted as granted to the "prelates, earls, barons and commons of the land."[3] I shall soon have occasion to

1. See notably Round, *Peerage and Pedigree*, i, 103-283, "the Muddle of the Law."
2. Hallam, *Europe in the Middle Ages*, iii, 42 (1872).
3. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 281.

show that this copy of the ordinances is not older than 1322, the year of their repeal, and is therefore in no real sense the work of the parliament of 1311. Moreover, if we turn to the numerous versions of the letters patent of appointment, we shall find that the king granted the right to nominate the reforming committee, not to the magnates and the commons, but simply to the "prelates, earls and barons."[1] So narrow was the reformers' point of view, that they did not even avail themselves of the power, allowed by the crown, of going outside baronial circles in the selection of ordainers.[2] Besides this, I would also stress the very loose way in which such words as "communitas" and "commons" were used at this time. We want something more than that vague term to prove a real participation of the third estate. Last of all, a law was in those days equally authentic, whether approved by the three estates or by the magnates only. I cannot, however, go as far as some modern teachers, who maintain that in the early fourteenth century the commons were no part of parliament, even when they had been expressly summoned to that body. This, and some analogous points, can, however, be better postponed until we get to the parliament of York of 1322.

The real evidence of popular participation in the passing of the ordinances rests, as I have suggested, on the history of the parliament of 1311. We had the certain evidence of the writs that not only the magnates, but the lower clergy and the knights of the shire, and a fair number of citizens and burgesses, were summoned to this assembly,[3] which is further described as "the parliament in which the ordinances made for the common weal are to be completed and confirmed."[4] We can read in print in the official return of the members serving in parliament, the names of the knights and burgesses who sat in this important gathering. We know, too, from the close roll, that a

1. *Ann. Lond.*, p. 169.
2. The royal letter of 16 March, authorised the election of "certeins persones de prelatz, countes et barons, *et des autres*"; *Ann. London.*, p. 169. But all the ordainers came within the aristocratic categories.
3. *Parl. Writs*, ii, i, 44-57.
4. *Ib.*, p. 69.

reasonable proportion of these members received their expenses for a session which began on Sunday, 9 August, and lasted, for what was then a long period of two calendar months, until 9 October.[1] Unluckily we have no roll of the proceedings of this assembly. What in the printed rolls of parliament—a collection, I may add, which in no wise corresponds to the needs of modern scholarship—is called the roll of the parliament of 5 Edward II, is in truth nothing more than a copy of the letters patent, which were scattered broadcast all over the country, in which the king was forced to declare to the world the contents of the ordinances which he had so unwillingly accepted. Moreover, the memorandum at the end that the ordinances were repealed in 1322 shows that the copy was made in the light of more recent history, and is not, therefore, the best of evidence for the text of the ordinances. Its only help to us is in the date of the letters patent of promulgation. This date is 5 October and shows that the ordinances were proclaimed when parliament was still in session.

The chroniclers help us where the records fail. The monk of Malmesbury relates at length how the king's reluctance to confirm the ordinances was only overborne when his counsellors frightened him with the prospect of another battle of Lewes and another domination of a new earl Simon of Leicester, as represented by earl Thomas the inheritor of his estates. Though the monk of Malmesbury says no word of the commons, he quotes that famous sentence from the code of Justinian of which Edward I had made such play in 1295, "quod enim omnes tangit ab omnibus debet approbari."[2] The canon of Bridlington

1. The summaries in *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 440, and *Parl. Writs*, ii, i, 73, shew that expenses were allowed from 9 Aug. to 9 Oct. to the knights and to representatives of 21 boroughs. Parliament was then prorogued, and fresh elections held for another one to meet in Nov. The boroughs returning members on these two occasions were strikingly different. On the latter occasion expenses were only allowed to representatives of 13 boroughs. As it is unlikely burgesses in attendance omitted to claim, the inference is that only a small proportion of those returned actually sat. For the persons returned see *Return of Members of Parliament*, i, 32-36.

2. Malmesbury, pp. 169-71.

tells us more specifically that the ordinances were published in parliament on 30 September,[1] so that it must have been with the full knowledge that the three estates were cognisant of their contents and approved of their character, that Edward yielded his assent five days later. Other authors tell us how the articles were read in St. Paul's cathedral in the presence of the king, prelates, magnates and commons,[2] and that archbishop Winchelsea and his suffragans solemnly discussed the ordinances in provincial synod and ultimately promulgated sentences of excommunication against all who would infringe them.[3] I have already emphasized the great pains taken to scatter official copies of the ordinances all over the country. In the light of these facts it would be most hazardous to affirm that the ordinances were anywise defective by reason of any lack of popular confirmation. That this popular approval was silent and informal followed from the social conditions of the time. Legislation was still by the king, and the authority of the ordinances rested upon their solemn proclamation by the king before his assembled estates, and under circumstances of the greatest publicity.

As regards the contents of the ordinances I have little to say. The provisions which loomed largest before the minds of contemporaries were those for the expulsion of Gaveston, and of his English and foreign associates. The claim of the barons to nominate the king's ministers had been made many times before, and it may be accounted to them for moderation that they were content with nominating ministers high and low, and did not demand the setting up of a permanent council, like that of the Fifteen in 1258. The point in which the ordinances largely differed from the provisions of Oxford lies in the immense particularity

1. Bridlington, p. 39.
2. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 270; Robert of Reading, p. 147. The chronicle printed in the appendix to *Liber de Antiquis Legibus*, pp. 251-2, gives curiously different details to those of other writers. Walsingham, i, 124, specifically says, "in presentia praelatorum, magnatum et communium totius regni," but he may be reading into his texts the language of the late fourteenth century.
3. *Ann. Lond.*, pp. 177-178.

with which the men of 1311 pressed for the radical reform of the royal household. In 1258 it was enough to say in one short clause, "let it be remembered to amend the household of the king and queen."[1] Of course the whole of the ordinances are much more detailed than are the provisions of Oxford and Westminster combined. A large amount of the detail is due, however, to the care with which the purging and amendment of the royal household is provided for.

The reasons for the stress laid in 1311 on reform of the household are not far to seek. Under Henry III all the king's ministers had been, so to say, of one sort. The distinction familiar in the reign of Edward III[2] between ministers of state and ministers of the household, had not yet arisen, and it was part of Henry III's policy that no such distinction should exist. The chancellor and the chancery were almost as much attached to the court as the wardrobe and the chamber. The same line of attack secured a baronial chancellor and treasurer as well as a baronial keeper of the wardrobe. The barons of 1311 were neither clear-headed nor far-sighted, but they could not but take cognisance of the facts that lay straight before their eyes. Among their number were the two prelates who had administered the chancery from the king's accession to within fifteen months of the meeting of the parliament which confirmed the ordinances. They must have known from their own experience of office where the root of the evil lay. It is no rash guess that they were driven into opposition not only by their loss of their posts, but by their consciousness that when in office they were powerless to enforce their will by reason of the organised household system, whose ministers alone possessed the ear of the

1. *Select Charters*, pp. 392 and 396. The bad translation copied out by Stubbs calls "hospicium" "place of reception," and finds no clearer word for "hostel" than "hostelry." Unluckily, this unnecessary darkening of counsel has not been removed in the useful new edition by Mr. H. W. C. Davis, p. 387 (1913).

2. It is brought out clearly in Avesbury's characterisation of the ministerial crisis of 1340 as a struggle between the king's "secretarii" (*i.e.*, household officers) and the king's "officiarii in magnis officiis ministrantes;" Avesbury, pp. 323-4, Rolls Series.

king. Accordingly the ordainers insisted both on purging the court and on treating ministers of the court as equally responsible to the nation as the ministers of state. This point of view expresses itself in the fourteenth ordinance with its long list of officials whom the king is to appoint "by the counsel and assent of his baronage and that in parliament."[1] These ministers include the chancellor, the two chief justices of the king's bench and the common bench, the treasurer, chancellor and chief baron of the exchequer, the steward of the household, the keeper and controller of the wardrobe, a suitable clerk to keep the privy seal, two keepers of the forests, and two escheators, one of each for the north and south of Trent respectively, and the chief clerk of the common bench. The provisions for the appointment of keepers of forts and castles, of ministers in Gascony, Ireland and Scotland, and of sheriffs, contained in the articles immediately subsequent, all emphasise the same spirit. A like intention inspired the negative articles. Let us illustrate it from the thirteenth article which runs as follows: "Inasmuch as the king has been misguided and advised by bad counsellors, we ordain that all the bad counsellors be removed, so that neither they, nor others like them, shall be near the king nor kept in the king's service, and that other suitable persons shall be put in their places. And in the same fashion let it be done with regard to the members of the king's household who are not suitable."

(4) The Execution of the Ordinances (1311—1314).

The question remains how far were the ordinances carried out, what permanent improvements sprang from them, and how far did they remedy the grievances they were drawn up to redress. To answer these questions fully would be to write the history of the rest of Edward II's reign. How

1. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 282. The interesting thing about the list is the offices that, in the barons' opinion, were important enough to be under their control. The exclusion of the office of king's chamberlain from the long catalogue is quite unintelligible to me, especially as the barons soon afterwards were urging the removal from court of the then chamberlain, John Charlton. I can only guess that it was a piece of complaisance to the king, and a recognition of the peculiarly intimate relation between the king and his "chamber." See for this Fleta, p. 71.

little the ordinances were executed could be read in every page of that history.

It was not that the barons did not make every effort to give effect to the ordinances. Their greatest point was gained when Gaveston withdrew almost immediately to Flanders. The records for October and November are full of minor changes, but not all of them were quite to the barons' liking. It was a matter of small moment that a somewhat colourless official, John Sandall, the treasurer, should yield up his post to another official, Walter of Norwich, though the latter, a knight and a baron of the exchequer, was probably more acceptable to the magnates. In August, and again in December, Walter Reynolds, now bishop of Worcester, resigned the keeping of the great seal to the chancery clerk, Adam Osgodby. The facts that Norwich was merely keeper of the treasury; that Reynolds was still nominally chancellor;[1] and that Osgodby was merely keeper of the seal suggested to the two new officials that their offices were not meant to be of long duration. It is difficult to understand the principles underlying the minor changes. It is a clear triumph for the ordainers when Amerigo dei Frescobaldi was succeeded on 9 October by John Cockermouth, king's clerk, an exchequer official, as keeper of the exchanges of London and Canterbury,[2] and perhaps a more complete victory when, eleven days later, the king's clerk gave place to John of Lincoln, citizen of London.[3] But it was not until 2 December that Gaveston's

1. Reynolds had at all times so frequently acted by deputy that it is perhaps dangerous to ascribe his abandonment of the seal to political motives. It is, however, probably significant that from 27 Aug. to 28 Sept., and again from 9 Dec. onward, Osgodby and other chancery clerks "kept" the seal. See Appendix II, pp. 319-322. If Edward II avoided being compelled to accept a chancellor imposed on him by the ordainers, it was found impolitic to allow the courtier prelate, still dignified with the title, to do the chancellor's work.

2. *Cal. Fine R., 1307-19*, p. 104. Cockermouth had been remembrancer of the exchequer since 2 Aug., 1310; *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 273.

3. *Call. Fine R., 1307-19*, p. 105. John of Lincoln was a citizen of high position. He had been sheriff in 33 Edw. I, *Liber Custumarum*, i, i, 244, and was in 1311 an alderman; *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, 41. The "exchanges," in modern phrase the mint, remained in the keeping of London citizens up to 1316, Lincoln being succeeded in 1315 by William Trent.

deputy, John Hotham, king's clerk, acting keeper of the forests north of Trent, yielded up his office, to which Henry Percy succeeded; "and afterwards the ordainers consented to the aforesaid."[1] Again, on the same day, the elder Hugh le Despenser surrendered to the king the keepership of the forests south of Trent "in compliance with the ordinances of the prelates and barons."[2] But these are the only important personal changes that took place between October and the end of the year, and the new officers held their positions by an exceedingly precarious tenure. Moreover so strong a partisan of Gaveston as Hotham[3] was still suffered to remain escheator north of Trent. It is of particular significance that no changes whatsoever seem to have been made in the king's household.

It was clear that something more would have to be done if the ordinances were to prove effective. Accordingly the ordainers, though their period of legal office was now at an end, kept up their organisation and assemblies, and deliberated in common as to what further measures were to be taken to carry out their accepted policy of the purgation of the royal household. What these further measures were, can be read in print in a remarkable document which has been preserved for us, both in the archives of the city of London, and by a London chronicler. The latter version, which is the only complete one, may be seen in Stubbs' edition of the *Annales Londonienses* where it is described as *ordinationes comitum secundae*.[4] In the imperfect version in the London *Liber custumarum* it is called with greater force "the articles which the earls of Lancaster and Warwick submitted to the king to appoint and remove officers in his household and to observe the ordinances

1. *Cal. Fine R., 1307-19*, p. 116.
2. *Ib.*, p. 116. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 464. His successor, however, was the ex-steward, Robert Fitz Payn.
3. Hotham had been Gaveston's attorney during his exile; *I. R., 6 Edw. II.*, Mich. no. 115, m. 8.
4. *Ann. Lond.*, pp. 198-202. "*Postquam* autem supradictae ordinationes per dominum regem pupplicatae et ratificatae fuerunt per totam Angliam, ordinatores tractaverunt *de familia et servis regis*, et supplicaverunt domino regi forma qua sequitur ut eos ab officio removeret." Bridlington, pp. 40-41, and Malmesbury, p. 174, clearly refer to these.

before written in all their points."[1] I specially call attention to these remarkable articles because they have not, I think, met with the attention they deserve. At first sight it might be thought that these articles were the basis of the ordinances of 1311, standing to them as the articles of the barons stand to the Great Charter, or, if we adopt M. Bémont's opinion, the baronial petition, expressed in the so-called *statutum de tallagio non concedendo* stands to the *Confirmatio Cartarum* of 1297.[2] A very superficial examination, however, shows that these articles pre-suppose the existence of the ordinances of 1311, and are simply another effort on the part of the more energetic earls to give effect to them. They deal almost entirely with the followers and kinsfolk of Gaveston, the alien farmers of the customs, and the members, great and small, of the king's household. A very large number of the king's friends are specified by name and their immediate removal from their offices is urgently demanded. So minute are the personal details given that I have no doubt that a careful study of the articles would enable one to date them with a near approach to accuracy. Meanwhile it is enough to say that they must have been written between the latter part of October 1311 and the reappearance of Gaveston in England in January 1312.[3]

Some few further results seem to have followed this fresh effort of the earls. Among them we are pretty safe in including the final disappearance of Amerigo dei Frescobaldi from English history, the deprivation of the king's French friend, Henry de Beaumont, of the Isle of Man, and the ejectment of Beaumont's sister, the lady Vescy, from the castle of Bamburgh.[4] These changes, however, did not bring nearer that purging of the household which was

1. *Munimenta Gildhallae Londiniensis, Liber Custumarum*, ii, ii, 682-690.
2. *Chartes des libertés anglaises*, Introd., p. xliii, and p. 87.
3. *Ann. Lond.*, p. 201. The article refusing to recognize Gaveston's protection and several attorneys suggests that he was still abroad, though his kinsfolk were still prominent among the king's train ; *Ib.*, p. 199.
4. Henry of Percy was made keeper of Bamburgh on 18 Dec., 1311 ; *Cal. Fine R., 1307-19*, p. 121. But on 28 Jan., 1312, the king, after Gaveston's return, ordered Isabella de Vescy to retain the castle ; *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 427.

the barons' chief desire. On the contrary the very demand drove Edward into a fury. He was greatly indignant that the barons would not allow him to keep a single member of his household after his own heart. He complained that he was being treated like a madman when the arrangement of his whole household was to be determined upon by the judgment of others.[1] In great disgust he withdrew to the north. And with the king went to the north the hated household officers against whom the barons fulminated in vain. Among them were the steward, Edmund Mauley,[2] and the three heads of the wardrobe—the keeper, Ingelard Warley,[3] the controller, William Melton,[4] and the cofferer, John Ockham.[5] With them went many other enemies of the ordinances. They found congenial spirits among the royal ministers still established in the north, and, as soon as Edward was safe in Yorkshire, a multitude of royal grants and favours was scattered among these too faithful servitors. It was by the advice of these hated *familiares* that Edward now revoked the ordinances and called back Gaveston to court in January 1312.

In the early months of 1312 there were two rival governments, that of the king and his household in the north, and that of the ordainers in the south. But while the ordainers soon began to extend their influence into the king's sphere of action, Edward's attempts to exercise authority south of the Humber proved singularly abortive. In his anxiety to use all men of ability against the barons, Edward had already restored Walter Langton to his bishopric and some share of the royal favour.[6] He now made a desperate effort to avail himself of the skill of his father's old minister to upset the ordinances. On 23 January 1312, the king appointed Langton treasurer of the exchequer to hold office "until the next parliament."[7] But the exchequer was at

1. Malmesbury, p. 174.
2. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 428, shews that he was at York by 3 Feb., 1312.
3. *Ib.*, p. 434.
4. *Ib.*, p. 430 (12 Feb.).
5. *Ib.*, p. 453.
6. "Ad semigratiam regis." Trokelowe, p. 64.
7. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 413. The limitation "until parliament" was an ingenious attempt not to break the letter of the ordinances.

Westminster, and the "keeper of the treasury," Sir Walter Norwich was an official, in no wise wishful to stand up against the ordainers, who had absolute control of the capital. Accordingly the patent of appointment was disregarded in the south. On 14 March a new patent was issued renewing Langton's appointment with equally little result.[1] The barons of the exchequer ignored Langton, and the ordainers threatened him so severely that the treasurer, who had lost the magnificent nerve and audacity of his early days, was afraid to take up the office. The indignant king on 12 April told the barons "as on other occasions" that they would incur his severest displeasure unless they obeyed Langton as treasurer.[2] Next day, 13 April, Edward sternly warned Langton not to shirk discharging his duty.[3] Excommunicated by Winchelsea for his violation of the ordinances, chased away by the ordainers when he appeared in the exchequer, Langton had no mind to continue the struggle. He appealed to Avignon against the archbishop and made the need of personally prosecuting his suit an excuse for seeking leave to visit the papal curia. On 1 May he received letters of conduct and a warm commendation of his cause to the pope.[4] But Edward soon abandoned his ally's cause. On 17 May he directed Walter Norwich to "continue to act" as treasurer, as the bishop of Lichfield has been "for divers reasons prevented from entering upon the execution of that office."[5]

It was some time between the spring and autumn of 1312 that the king was forced to meet another baronial proposal by appointing a "suitable clerk" to keep the privy seal. Up to this time William Melton remained controller as well as keeper, but before November the offices were separated, and the king's clerk, Roger Northburgh, became the first keeper of the privy seal who was separate from the con-

1. *C. P. R.*, *1307-13*, p. 440.
2. Madox, ii, 38. "Et hoc sicut indignationem regis vitare voluerint nullatenus omittant." This letter is dated from Newcastle-on-Tyne.
3. *Foedera*, ii, 164.
4. *Ib.*, ii, 166-7.
5. *C. P. R.*, *1307-13*, p. 459

troller of the wardrobe.[1] Thus within a year a new ministerial office seems to have come into existence at the request of the ordainers.

The real cause of the king's change of front was the conquest of the north by the ordainers. Edward's last resistance was on 4 May ended by his panic flight from Newcastle, and the withdrawal of Gaveston to Scarborough. Two days after the king threw over Langton, Gaveston was forced to yield himself up to the ordainers. He met his fate on Blacklow Hill within five months of his reappearance in England.

The monk of Malmesbury drew the obvious moral that courtiers must learn from Gaveston's death not to despise the barons.[2] But the treachery which ignored the terms of his capitulation profited Edward more than the pity excited by the favourite's tragic end. Public opinion was still so set against the courtiers that Pembroke failed to stir either the university or the burgesses of Oxford to support him against the felon earls who had broken their word to the Gascon.[3] The apathy of even the instructed public forced the aggrieved earls to take things into their own hands. From this arose a permanent schism among the higher barons that was never quite repaired. Henceforth Pembroke and Warenne hated Lancaster and Warwick more bitterly than they despised the king. They were thus forced to make common cause with the court, even though it still swarmed with the very men against whom the ordainers had fulminated in vain.[4] The ordinances could now only be enforced at the cost of a civil war from which even Thomas of Lancaster shrank. Failing the decisive arbitration of the sword, there was no reality in the gathering of

1. *Exch. Accts. K.R.*, 375/8, ff. 8, 11, shews Northburgh acting between Nov., 1312 and May, 1313, with a staff of clerks. For the influence of the ordinances on the staples see later, pp. 249-50.

2. Malmesbury, p. 180.

3. *Ib.*, pp. 178-9. "Sed nec clerici nec burgenses rem ad se non pertinentem tractare vel attemptare curabant."

4. Malmesbury, p. 192, 1313. "Sed adhuc remanent in regis curia de familiaribus Petri et eius familia, qui perturbant pacem totius patriae et regem inducunt vindictam quaerere."

armies and the threatenings of war, the insincere negotiations, the hollow compromises, and finally the pretended reconciliation which, two years later, enabled Edward to make a pretence of leading a national army against Robert Bruce. The collapse of the Scots campaign on the fatal field of Bannockburn again threw the wretched king on the mercy of his enemies.

(5) The Ministerial Changes after Bannockburn.

The monk of Malmesbury sketches with spirit and accuracy[1] the political results of the battle of Bannockburn, as they were worked out in a full parliament held at York in September 1314. "The earls said that the ordinances had not been observed, and that therefore things had gone badly with the king, both because he had disregarded his oath to stand by the ordinances, and because the archbishop of Canterbury had excommunicated all violators of the ordinances. Therefore they declared that no good would come until the ordinances were fully observed. The king denied nothing to the earls, and agreed to allow in good faith their complete execution. Thereupon the chancellor, the treasurer, the sheriffs and other officials were removed, and new ones were appointed in parliament in accordance with the tenour of the ordinances." The record evidence shows that the Malmesbury chronicler's statements are almost literally true. The magnates and commons were still in session when a new chancellor and treasurer were chosen. Walter Reynolds, who had recently succeeded Winchelsea as primate, had since 1312 so loose a hold over the great seal, that he was described more often as keeper than as chancellor, and after 30 March 1314 is not even called keeper, though remaining, however, as some sort of adviser and director of the chancery clerks keeping the seal.[2] This ambiguous state of things was now ended. John Sandall, who had returned to the treasury through

1. Malmesbury, p. 208.
2. Reynolds' peculiar relations to the chancery are more fully discussed later; Appendix II, pp. 319-322.

Pembroke's good offices in October 1312, was sufficiently trusted by the barons to be appointed Reynolds' successor as chancellor. Sandall's fellow worker at the exchequer, Sir Walter Norwich, now became treasurer in name as well as in fact, his appointment being made on 26 Sept. "by the king and council."[1] Next day the commons went home, but there was enough of a baronial element now surrounding the king to secure more drastic further changes. If we turn to the fine rolls, on which at this period the appointment of the sheriffs is recorded, we discover that, with the necessary exceptions of certain hereditary or quasi-hereditary sheriffdoms, new sheriffs were appointed in October and November 1314, in every case except two.[2] Five of the new sheriffs had sat in this parliament as knights of their respective shires.[3] There was certainly a far greater change among the state officials than there had been in October and November 1311.

More important still was the beginning of changes in the personnel of the king's household, which had withstood

1. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 178.

2. *C. Fine R., 1307-19*, pp. 220-221. The hereditary sheriffdoms were Rutland (Margaret, widow of Edmund, earl of Cornwall), and Westmorland (Roger Clifford, a minor). Besides these, earl Thomas had been sheriff of Lancashire since 1298, and stood in a quasi-hereditary relation to that office. So also did earl Guy of Warwick to Worcestershire, of which he had been sheriff from 1298 to his death in 1315; *P. R. O. Lists and Indexes, no. ix, List of Sheriffs*. The two exceptions were Cumberland and Devonshire. Andrew Harclay, sheriff of Cumberland since 1311, was in effect a military governor rather than an administrative official. He can hardly be called a true exception to this rule of change. The only real exception, then, was Devonshire, where, however, a new sheriff was appointed in Jan. 1315. It should be remembered that the sheriff was usually appointed not only to the custody of his shire or shires, but also to the custody of one or two chief castles within their limits. He was thus a military as well as an executive officer, a fact which makes the importance of securing the right sort of sheriffs the more evident. The order to the outgoing sheriff is always to deliver the custody of the shire and castle to his successor, 'with the rolls, writs, memoranda, and other things touching the office.' (*e.g., C. Fine R., 1319-27*, p. 35). Perhaps more care was taken for the proper local custody of records of state in the fourteenth century than in the twentieth.

3. *Return of Members of Parliament*, i, 46-8. The members of the York parliament (other than barons) who were also sheriffs were Nicholas le Scot, sheriff of Northumberland and burgess for Newcastle; John de Lisle, sheriff and knight of the shire for Hampshire; William of Basing, sheriff and knight for Kent; Richard de Rivers, sheriff and knight for Gloucestershire; and William Trussell, sheriff of Warwick and Leicester, and knight for Leicestershire.

the ordainers successfully for three good years. Not only was the king now less able to resist. Bannockburn had wrought havoc on the knights and clerks of the household. Edmund Mauley, the steward, had been slain on the field, and Roger Northburgh, keeper of the privy seal, had been taken prisoner along with his two clerks, and the privy seal with him. Northburgh, as we have seen already,[1] is the first recorded keeper of the privy seal who was not also controller of the wardrobe. He is known to have kept the seal since 1312, and we are therefore fairly safe in regarding him as representing the only change hitherto brought about by the ordainers in the royal household. It was more important that Ingelard of Warley, whose removal from office the barons had specifically demanded three years before, was at last deprived of the keepership of the wardrobe.[2] His successor, the former controller, William of Melton, was the only highly placed household clerk against whom the barons had nothing to say. He remained in charge of the wardrobe until his elevation to the archbishopric of York. With Warley there disappeared from office John Ockham, the cofferer of the wardrobe, who had, like Warley, been specially mentioned in 1311 as one of those who were to be removed from the king's service and presence.[3] Even now the earls showed circumspection in the purification of the household. The parliament at York had wished that Hugh le Despenser, Henry Beaumont and several other *curiales* should be driven from court, but had agreed to postpone this requirement to please the king.[4] However the barons took more drastic steps in the next full parliament held at London in February 1315. They then turned Hugh le Despenser and Walter Langton out of the king's council. Afterwards, says Malmesbury, they "removed from the king's court

1. See pp. 98-9, above, and also p. 356 below. Northburgh on returning from captivity resumed his "keepership" of the privy seal.
2. Warley ceased to account on 30 Nov., 1314; *Pipe Roll, 14 E. II*, m. 29. Melton began his account on 1 Dec.
3. *Ann. Lond.*, p. 200.
4. Malmesbury, p. 208.

his superfluous household, which had been excessively burdensome to king and kingdom, as was affirmed. And from their removal the king's daily expenses were reduced to £10." [1] A reference to the wardrobe accounts of the period shews us that the monk's statement has absolutely no foundation. The changes in the household *personnel* were not very drastic. The expenses of the *hospicium regis* were in no wise materially altered.[2]

The hopes excited by these proceedings were soon dashed to the ground. The years 1314-6 were among the most distressful and disorderly of the reign. Robert Bruce cruelly avenged his country's wrongs by the systematic devastation of the northern shires; his brother Edward laid low the English power in Ireland. Southern Britain was disturbed by famine, pestilence, floods and private wars. There was war in North Wales where the king's favourite, John Charlton, fought with his wife's kinsmen for the possession of Welshpool. There was war in Glamorgan, where Llewelyn Bren raised the country against the royal agents who misgoverned the Welsh palatinate of the dead earl Gilbert of Gloucester. Lancaster himself had to wage war in Lancashire against his old servant Adam Banaster, but was still strong enough to put down easily the revolt of a discontented *familiaris*. In the more peaceful regions of the south the commons of Bristol carried on an armed resistance to the king for more than two years on end. Such disorders needed strong government and none of the earls proved his right to be called a strong man. Lancaster's incompetence was already notorious, and it may well have been to remedy it that, early in 1315, Guy of

1. Malmesbury, p. 209.

2. One result of the household changes was that the wardrobe accounts were again enrolled in the Pipe Roll for the first time since 1 Edward II. For the first period of enrolment, that between 1 Dec. 1314 and 1 Feb. 1316, the receipt was £59,903. 13. 7½. The expenses of the *hospicium* for the same period were £13,028 7. 8½., nearer £30 than £10 a day. The fact that by far the greater proportion of the wardrobe receipt, namely £56,707 19. 1½., came directly from the exchequer shews that another ordinance was enforced with some strictness; *Pipe Roll, 14 E. II*, m. 29.

Warwick was, in the words of the chronicler, made "the king's principal counsellor."[1] A few months later Warwick's death again made Lancaster the indispensable man.

(6) The Failure of Lancaster (1316—1318).

The last real triumph of Thomas of Lancaster was consummated in the full parliament which met at Lincoln on 28 January 1316. All three estates were represented, the proctors of the inferior clergy were summoned, and knights from thirty-two shires and burgesses from eight boroughs received writs for their expenses.[2] We are fortunate in having a roll of the proceedings of this parliament, drawn up in the form of a journal, which traces its transactions from day to day, and therefore gives us a far better idea of what took place in it than the jejune collections of pleas and petitions, which form the ordinary "rolls of parliament" of this period.[3] It was characteristic of earl Thomas that neither he, nor his baronial supporters, condescended to put in an appearance, until the king and the estates had been at work for more than a fortnight. On their arrival, there was a sort of second opening of the parliament on 12 February in their presence.[4] After this prelates and barons deliberated separately on the problem of the Scottish war. Various statutes, including an important one relating to the appointment of sheriffs, were now promulgated.[5] Then on 20 February the commons made their grant of funds, whereupon they received writs for their expenses and went

1. *Ann. Lond.*, p. 232.
2. *C. C. R., 1313-18*, pp. 320, 326-7. The paucity of borough representatives is interesting. There are no returns extant, so our whole knowledge of the constitution of parliament depends upon the writs for expenses endorsed on the close roll.
3. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 350-364. It was the work of the chancery clerk, William of Airmyn; see later pp. 184-185. There is internal evidence that the record was added to, possibly otherwise altered, after Jan. 1320; *ib.*, i, 352. Some of the petitions and acts of this parliament are also enrolled after the more normal fashion contained in *Ib.*, i, 337, 343, and 347. See also Mr. A. Hughes' valuable paper on "the Parliament of Lincoln, 1316," in *Transactions Royal Hist. Soc.*, n.s., x, 40-58 (1896).
4. *Ib.*, i, 351.
5. *Ib.*, i, 353.

home.[1] Their removal did not, however, end the "parliament," and it was only after their dismissal that the most stirring scenes in its history took place. On Sunday, 22 February, parliament met before the king in Lincoln cathedral. Sir John Ros made a violent attack upon the younger Hugh le Despenser, denouncing him in strong language and rushing on him with his drawn sword. Despenser in self-defence hit the aggressor a blow on the face with his fist, which drew blood. The unseemly strife was only appeased by the arrest of the two culprits by the marshal, and they only obtained their release when two groups of magnates became sureties for their surrendering themselves to justice. It is not easy to see the relation of this altercation to the business in hand. Perhaps it made things easy for the final scene on 24 February when, on the proposal of John Salmon, bishop of Norwich, as spokesman for the discomfited king, the prelates and barons agreed that Lancaster should be made chief of the king's council, and that the king should be suffered to do nothing of importance without the consent of the earls and barons. Thereupon Lancaster took oath, as chief counsellor, declaring that he assumed office for the common profit of the realm, for the maintenance of the ordinances and in the hope of amending many matters that were in need of reform as regards the condition of the royal household and the state of the realm.[2] Then, or soon after, the magnates began to stream away from Lincoln.

The circumstances of Lancaster's appointment as chief counsellor shewed that the work done in the autumn of 1314 had all to be done over again. In the course of eighteen months Edward had gradually brought back to the household, and to office, nearly all the ministers displaced in the parliament held at York immediately after the battle of Bannockburn. If the most unpopular of the former household staff were still kept at a distance from the court, their successors were rather less notorious than less

1. *C. C. R., 1317-19*, pp. 326-7.
2. *Ib.*, i, 351-2.

curialistic in their attitude. The purgation of the household was still practically unaccomplished, and while the knights of the chamber and the clerks of the wardrobe still stirred up the king against Lancaster and the ordinances, it was very little use calling him chief counsellor and looking to him for reforms which it was still beyond his power to carry out.

From February 1316, to the summer of 1318 it cannot be said that earl Thomas took a single effective step towards the enforcement of the ordinances or the removal of the "inconvenient" knights and clerks of the royal household. He still drew up schemes of reformation and strove to enforce them on the king. Before July 1317, a gathering of the "wiser and more provident members," that is the baronial section, of the king's council had met in London in conference with Lancaster, and had drawn up "what seemed necessary to them" for the reform of the household and realm. These requests were transmitted to the king by Bartholomew Badlesmere, up to this stage one of Lancaster's right hand men, and William Inge, chief justice of the king's bench, also a Lancastrian partisan. The project of the council found no acceptance, and Lancaster in great disgust took up the highly constitutional line that the king should transact no business of importance save in parliament before the peers of the realm.[1] But when Edward summoned parliaments, Lancaster after his fashion refused to attend them, declaring that his life was not safe if he came within the verge of the court by reason of the plots of the courtiers. Edward now categorically refused to drive his *familiares* from the household and sought to coerce Lancaster by force of arms. In September 1317 both king and earl were in Yorkshire, Edward at York and Thomas at his castle of Pontefract. Each feared to approach the other, and surrounded himself with as many armed men as he could raise.

Lancaster now started a new hare. As the representative of the houses of Beaumont and Montfort, he was earl of

1. Bridlington, pp. 50-52.

Leicester and the earl of Leicester was hereditary steward of England. In the heyday of his power Simon of Montfort had shewn a strong disposition to make the most of his position as steward of England, as a means of exercising hereditary claims to control the state and the household, but the battle of Evesham was fought before those claims were settled.[1] Lancaster now took up more decidedly the position once maintained by his predecessor in policy and in dignity. He now strove to guard the bridges and stop armed men from approaching York. "And he declared that he did this because he was steward of England, whose duty it was to safeguard the interests of the kingdom. And if the king desired to take arms against anyone, it was his first business to notify the steward of the fact."[2] Nothing came of the claim for the moment, but we shall hear of it later on, in a more clear and concrete fashion. It is pretty certain, however, that what Lancaster had in his mind was to use his position as steward as a new weapon for purging the court. If the earl of Warwick, as hereditary chamberlain of the exchequer, was suffered without hindrance to nominate one of the working chamberlains, had not the hereditary steward an equal right to claim the nomination of the steward of the household? And if Lancaster could choose whom he would as the lay head of the *domus regis,* had he not at last obtained possession of an effective instrument for ridding the royal establishment of the enemies of the baronial cause?

Edward had already perceived that the reality of earl Thomas' power by no means corresponded to the exalted position in which he had been placed by the parliament of Lincoln. Since the end of 1316 the king had plucked up courage to restore to the administration some of the most hated victims of the parliaments of York and Lincoln. The dispossessed *garderobarii* of 1314 were found safe posts in the exchequer. Ingelard Warley became a baron

1. Vernon Harcourt, *His Grace the Steward*, pp. 124-126.
2. Malmesbury, p. 230.

of the exchequer in December 1316, and John Ockham received a similar office in June 1317.[1] In November 1316, a glaring breach of the ordinances was risked by suppressing the keepership of the privy seal as a separate office. On Northburgh's promotion to the keepership of the wardrobe, vacated by Melton's appointment as archbishop of York, the king's clerk, Thomas Charlton, brother of the chamberlain, John Charlton of Powys, now again combined the keepership of the privy seal with the function of controller of the wardrobe.[2] Another step in the same direction was taken on 27 May 1317, when John Hotham, Gaveston's former confidant, and now by the king's good will bishop of Ely, replaced Walter Norwich as treasurer. Norwich, a promoted official of no strong political leanings, made the transition easy by petitioning for his own removal to a less arduous office. Thereupon—to follow the official version—the king "relieved him from the burden of the treasurer's office, but wishing to retain him in an office of moderate labour, appointed him during pleasure chief baron of the exchequer, desiring that, when he was able, he should be present at the king's councils, both secret and other."[3] It is significant of the reviving power of Edward that, while Norwich had been nominated treasurer "by the king and council," Hotham's appointment was "by the king."

The effect of all this was that there were, between 1316 and 1318, two weak rival governments, each bent on thwarting the other, and each only strong enough to give effect to the negative side of its policy. Surrounded by the unbroken phalanx of his household staff, Edward was still able to contend for mastery with earl Thomas. Failing to exert effective control on the machine of state, Lancaster fell back, like his cousin, on his own personal resources.

1. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, pp, 606 and 671.
2. He is specifically called keeper of the privy seal on 15 Nov. 1316, *C. C. R., 1313-18*, p. 440. He had been controller since 7 July, *Enrolled Exchequer Accounts* (*Wardrobe and Household*) no. 2 m. 1. Compare *Exch. Accounts, K. R.*, 376/7.
3. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 655, cf. p. 657.

Like the king, the earl now relied mainly upon his own domestic establishment. He also had his own household, as numerous, as disorderly and as factious as that of the king, and directed, we may feel quite sure, with much less intelligence. Lesser magnates followed, as best they could, the examples set by the king and the earl. It looked as if England were breaking up into a group of feudal principalities, each one jealously watching its neighbours, and each seeking to secure its own interests amidst the general confusion. It was well for England that these conflicts were somewhat superficial in character. After all the machine of state went on by itself, though its movements were increasingly halting and feeble.

The keen-witted monk of Malmesbury sketches with great accuracy the results of this ineffective contest between the king and the earl. "Whatever pleased the king, the household of the earl strove to overthrow. Whatever pleased the earl, the king's household declared to be treasonable. And so, at the suggestion of the devil, the households of the earl and king put themselves in the way, and would not allow their lords, by whom the land should have been defended, to be of one accord." [1] The earl and the king moved through the country attended by great bands of armed followers, and carefully avoided coming into each other's presence. Lancaster loudly professed that it was as much as his life was worth to come within the clutches of his cousin's followers. It is hard to say that he was wrong, but it is impossible to justify his temporising position. He clearly ought either to have given up the game altogether, or have settled the questions between himself and the king by an appeal to arms.

Debarred from exercising the power which parliament had given him, Lancaster threw his chief energy into the pursuit of his own private interests. The most important of these was now the prosecution of his feud with earl Warenne which, in 1317, led to a fierce private war in the

1. Malmesbury, p. 224.

West Riding of Yorkshire. The origin of the quarrel is characteristic of the purely personal politics of the time. Lancaster had long been on bad terms with his wife, Alice Lacy, the heiress of the two earldoms of Lincoln and Salisbury, which had swelled Thomas' earldoms to five. With Warenne's active help and, as was believed, with the connivance of the king, the countess of Lancaster fled from her husband's home and sought the protection of a certain lame squire, Eubulo L'Estrange, whom she henceforward lived with and married after her husband's death. In revenge for this insult, Lancaster devastated with fire and sword Warenne's estates in the West Riding, and took possession of some of his castles. Under such circumstances the measures projected against the Scots at Lincoln proved utterly abortive. Bruce pursued his way, regardless alike of king and earl. In April 1318, he captured Berwick, and soon afterwards laid siege to Norham. The danger to the last of the border fortresses in English hands brought the barons to their senses, much in the same way as the danger to Stirling had done in 1314. The results of this were to be seen in the great combination against Lancaster which I shall speak about in my next chapter.

IV.

THE LATER YEARS OF THE REIGN.

(1318—1327).

(1) The Rise of the Middle Party (1316—1318).

We have now worked through the political history of the first and longest period of Edward II's reign. It remains to speak in this chapter of the chief features of the later nine years, including especially the critical years 1318 to 1322, to which we shall have to devote most of our attention.

I have already shown the collapse of the power of earl Thomas of Lancaster. For eighteen months he had been disputing with the king for the possession of authority which both alike were incompetent to wield, and his dismal failure had already forced upon the better elements of the baronage the need of some drastic readjustment of political forces. Some of Lancaster's own closest associates were growing utterly disgusted with him. Conspicuous among these was the Kentish baron, Bartholomew Badlesmere. Up to this time Badlesmere had not been, either territorially or politically, a personage of the first importance, but he had obtained a certain position as a partisan of earl Thomas. It is necessary to emphasize this first stage in Badlesmere's history, since his later enmity to earl Thomas became so profound that historians have not yet sufficiently recognised that, up to the summer of 1317 at least, he was closely associated with the Lancastrian policy.[1] His quarrel with Lancaster became now the more important, since it occurred about the same time that earl Aymer of Pembroke re-appeared on the scene of English politics.

1. Bridlington, pp. 50—52, quotes a letter which shows Badlesmere acting closely with Lancaster in July 1317. See above, p. 106. Yet even Stubbs, who fully realised the importance of the letter, quoted by the chronicler, put back too far Badlesmere's hostility to Lancaster.

Since the parliament of Lincoln, in which he took a conspicuous part, Pembroke had not been a prominent figure on the political stage. Having interfered with little result to procure peace upon reasonable terms between the king and the men of Bristol,[1] he went in December 1316, on a mission to Avignon, along with Badlesmere, and bishops Salmon of Norwich, and Hotham of Ely.[2]

The object of the ambassadors was to enlist the sympathy of the new pope, John XXII, for the English king, and in particular to obtain for Edward power to tax the English clergy, and to employ ecclesiastical censures against the Scots. It was even believed that Edward's secret intention was to obtain absolution from his oath to observe the ordinances, but the inclusion in the mission of Badlesmere, at a time when he was hand and glove with Lancaster, makes this piece of chroniclers' gossip improbable. Except Badlesmere, however, the chief personages of the embassy were already ill-affected towards earl Thomas, and it may well have been that the opportunities of repeated discussion of the political situation which the embassy afforded, first bound together Pembroke and Badlesmere, Hotham and Salmon, in a common view as to the remedies necessary for the English state. However that may be, it is certain that the pope took no action against the ordinances. On the other hand, John was able, energetic and intent on the large plans which make his pontificate something of a landmark in the history of English relations with the papacy. Of these larger questions we shall have to speak later.[3] For the moment it is enough to mention that John allowed Edward to collect tenths from the English clergy, and to nominate certain bishops who were to receive their sees by papal provision. Moreover, John agreed to mediate between Edward, the Scots and the earl of Lancaster. With that object he despatched two cardinals, Gaucelin of

1. Malmesbury, pp. 221-222.
2. The date of the protections for Aymer and twenty-four of his household is 7 December; *C. P. R., 1313—1317*, p. 573.
3. See pp. 230-233.

Eauze and Luca Fiesco, to England with a commission to make peace. Close on their heels came a less dignified papal envoy. This was Master Rigaud of Assier,[1] canon of Orleans, appointed nuncio, independently of the two cardinals, with the charge of collecting various papal dues. After the fashion of papal collectors, Rigaud soon became a centre of complaints and remonstrances.

By April 1317, the work of the English ambassadors at Avignon was completed, and they started on their way home. Most of the envoys safely returned to England, where Hotham became, as we have seen, treasurer. An untoward accident delayed earl Aymer abroad until the summer. When in the neighbourhood of Etampes, he was taken prisoner by a French gentleman, named John de Molière, who had a grievance against the English king by reason of certain arrears owed to him by Edward for former military service.[2] In lawless fashion Molière held earl Aymer as a pledge for the payment of his master's debts, and conveyed him into imperial territory for safer keeping than France afforded to feudal brigands. In May king Edward was scattering circulars to the kings of France and Bohemia, and to a large number of lesser princes of France and the empire, beseeching their aid in obtaining his kinsman's release.[3] Finally Pembroke escaped a prolonged captivity by the payment of the heavy ransom of £2,500, which was advanced by the Italian

1. *Foedera*, ii, 343, gives his protection, dated York, 23 September 1317. Rigaud remained in England and became in 1320 bishop of Winchester. He is generally called "Rigaud Asser," an unmeaning name, in English books. He derived his name from Assier, a village in Quercy, cant. Livernon, arrond. Figeac, dep. Lot. See for him later, pp. 230-231.

2. Murimuth, p. 34, describes Pembroke's mishap, but only speaks of his captor as "unum domicellum qui sibi servienti prius in Anglia non reddidit mercedem." His phrase that Aymer was led "de Burgundia in Alemanniam" is contradicted by the king's letters in *Foedera*, ii, 329, to Philip V, locating the episode at "juxta Staumpes infra potestatem vestram." There is a commune half-way between Etampes and Versailles, called Les Molières, cant. Limours, arrond. Rambouillet, dep. Seine-et-Oise, which may well have given its name to the perpetrator of the outrage. In Richard of Bury's letter book, the outrage was the work of "John de la Mercke and other rogues"; *Hist. MSS. Com.*, *Fourth Report*, *Ap.*, p. 385.

3. *Foedera*, ii, 329-30.

financiers, who kept Edward II's necessities supplied. The king had the grace to make himself responsible for this sum, so that Pembroke was attached to his cousin by a fresh bond of obligation.[1] He was back again in England by August, at about the same time that the two papal legates appeared there, and soon after Badlesmere had made his last attempt at common action with Lancaster.

The appearance of the papal legates had done nothing to restore tranquillity in England. A misfortune, closely resembling the kidnapping of Pembroke, showed that public order was as insecure in England as in France. The two cardinals made their way to the north of England, with the immediate object of attending the consecration of Louis of Beaumont, the illiterate bishop of high birth, whom papal and regal favour had forced upon that see, and doubtless with the further hope of entering into negotiations with the Scots. On 1 September 1317, as they rode between Darlington and Durham, they were maltreated and robbed by a band of desperadoes. The leader of the gang was one Gilbert of Middleton, a Northumbrian knight of some position, who had taken advantage of the disorders of the times to make his castle of Milford on the Wansbeck the centre of highway robbery on a large scale. With them were the bishop-elect and his brother Henry, and while the legates were allowed to proceed on their journey, the two Beaumonts were held up for ransom in Middleton's castle. There was a great outcry against the sacrilege involved in robbing the papal legates, and it was even suspected that some of the followers of Thomas of Lancaster had a hand in the outrage.[2] However the law was still strong enough to secure the condemnation and execution of the knightly culprit.[3] This mischief was immediately succeeded by

1. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, pp. 6—8, 9, 11. It was known in England that the money had been paid by 24 July, and Pembroke was probably back home by 3 August, *ib.*, p. 8, and was certainly at York in September, *ib.*, p. 23.

2. This is a natural inference from *C. P. R., 1318-23*, p. 233.

3. Murimuth, p. 27; Malmesbury, pp 231-3; *Ann. Paul.*, pp. 280-2; Trokelowe, pp. 99-101; *Foedera*, ii, 341—344.

Bruce's attack on the border strongholds, which shewed that the king of Scots was as careless of the pope as he was of the power of England. To the great disgust of the legates Bruce denied them entrance into Scotland. In revenge the two cardinals excommunicated anew the pretender and his adherents, and laid all Scotland under an interdict.[1]

It is not impossible that the two cardinals were more successful in reconciling the king with Pembroke and his associates, than they were effective in their efforts to establish peace between England and Scotland. Anyhow, before the end of the summer of 1317, Pembroke and Badlesmere had come to a perfect understanding. Their aim must now have been to establish a political party, which, while accepting the constitutional standpoint of the ordainers, would save the king and the kingdom from Lancaster, and restore Edward to dignity and some measure of power, on the condition that he amended his ways and ruled by their advice. It was not long before the two confederates enlisted powerful recruits among the baronage. Conspicuous among them were the husbands of the three co-heiresses and sisters of earl Gilbert of Gloucester, among whom, after many disputes, the Gloucester inheritance had been divided in the course of the same year 1317. These three, Hugh Audley, the younger, Roger Amory, and the younger Hugh le Despenser, had not yet conceived the immeasurable ambitions whose growth, four years later, filled all England with their feuds. They were still content to work together, on the lines traditional to those who aspired to continue the historic policy of the house of Clare, and had at least one common point of agreement in distrust of Lancaster. Accident has preserved for us the formal indenture in which Roger Amory bound himself, on 24 November, 1317, by the enormous sum of £10,000, to use all his influence with the king to persuade him to be governed by the advice of Pembroke and Badlesmere, and

1. Murimuth, p. 27.

to trust their counsels beyond those of all other people on earth.[1] Though no fellows to this bond are known, it affords clear evidence of the formal and legal character which it was sought to give to the new party. Though Lancaster is nowhere mentioned in the bond, the compact has no meaning unless it be regarded as an organised effort to replace earl Thomas by earl Aymer as the king's chief counsellor.

The new party soon grew apace. It looks as if it soon won over John Charlton, still the chamberlain of the household, and thus obtained intimate access to the king.[2] When Charlton gave up the office of chamberlain, he was succeeded by the younger Despenser, another member of the new party. Sir William Montagu, steward of the household since 1316, also joined the confederacy, whose success was assured when it had thus obtained the support of the lay heads of the chamber and household. It is certain also that the clerical head of the household, the keeper, Roger of Northburgh, took up a similar line, while the second in dignity among the wardrobe clerks, Thomas Charlton, controller and keeper of the privy seal, faithfully followed his brother, the chamberlain, in abandoning the curialist traditions of his earlier career. Up to now the household officers had been for the king against the barons, but the resentment they must have felt in relation to Lancaster's claim, as hereditary steward, to nominate the king's domestic officers at his discretion, gave them special reasons for welcoming a baronial party, strong enough to protect them both from earl Thomas and from the popular indignation of which Thomas was still, to some extent, the mouthpiece. The new party found as much support among the officers of state as among the officers of the household, from prelates as well as barons. Pembroke's

1. *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, 120; Stubbs, *Chron. Edw. I and Edw. II*, Introduction ii, lxxx.

2. Charlton's political tergiversations are not easy to work out. He remained chamberlain until at least 19 April, 1318; *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 133. He was certainly active against his old associates soon after that date.

companions at the Roman curia, John Hotham, bishop of Ely, and John Salmon, bishop of Norwich, represented its point of view. Hotham's appointment as treasurer, immediately after his return from Avignon, had been one of the first signs of the king's rejection of Lancaster's counsels. A prelate of more authority was Hotham's comrade at Avignon, the judicious bishop of Norwich, whose adhesion added a real measure of weight and independence to the new party. Besides these two, the veteran John Langton, bishop of Chichester, the surviving custodian of the chancery traditions of the reign of Edward I, threw in his lot with Pembroke. Other baronial adhesions included those of the most powerful of the earls. One of these was earl Warenne, eager to avenge on Lancaster the loss of his Yorkshire castles; another was the earl of Arundel, an ancient ordainer, who was, however, Warenne's brother-in-law, and whose eldest son was married to the daughter of the younger Despenser. The third, earl Humphrey of Hereford, the inheritor of the fiercest traditions of opposition from his father, Edward I's antagonist in 1297, had up to now been a convinced ordainer, and the rancorous foe of his royal brother-in-law. Hardly less powerful than any of these earls were the truculent Roger Mortimer of Chirk, and his nephew, Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, the ablest and the most powerful of the lords of the march of Wales. Never since 1263 did the Welsh marcher chieftains shew so united a front in rallying round the king. Of all the magnates enumerated, none, save Badlesmere and Montagu, were without landed possessions in the western march. The lords of Brecon and Glamorgan, Chirk and Wigmore, Oswestry and Clun, Bromfield and Yale, dropped their mutual jealousies in their new policy of combined action. And beside the traditional magnates of the march now went the upstart Charltons of Powys.

By the spring of 1318 the king was entirely in the hands of Pembroke and his allies. It must have been a pleasing novelty for Edward to be advised by magnates who treated

him with respect, and showed some willingness to gratify his personal wishes. It would, however, be most unfair to Pembroke and Badlesmere to regard them as mere traitors to the baronage, who had simply gone over to the court. It was rather a re-shaping of parties, like that which had been brought about in 1263, when a large section of the baronage, headed by the Welsh marchers, abandoned Simon of Montfort for the lord Edward and Henry III. In idea at least the new party was a combination of the more reasonable and moderate elements of the old baronial and curialist parties. The object of the middle party was to put an end to faction and anarchy, and set up a government strong enough to keep England in peace, and wrest Scotland from Robert Bruce. Edward was still to remain in tutelage, but his tutelage was now to be of a milder and more respectful character.

The chief object of the party of mediation was now to make terms with Lancaster, and it is to their credit that they sought to win him over by negotiations rather than by force. This was, however, undoubtedly the more prudent course, since even after the desertion of so many of his old allies, earl Thomas was still a power to be reckoned with. He still had at his back the resources of his five earldoms, the support of a large section of the clergy, and the popularity which enshrined the doughty champion of the ordinances, and of the good old cause of constitutional opposition. He now established himself in his own castles and lordships, gathered his followers around him, and sullenly waited on events.

It was still a hard job to bell the cat. So far back as September 1317, Pembroke had joined Edward at York, when civil war was momentarily expected to break out. By his mediation, and that of the two legates, it was agreed to refer all disputes to a parliament, which was summoned to meet at Lincoln in January 1318. But as the king's army marched in battle array hard by the walls of Pontefract, on its way back to the south, Pembroke was terribly perturbed lest the king should break the understanding by

an assault on Lancaster's castle. The loyalists were in equal apprehension lest the earl should swoop down on them from his fortress, and lay hands upon the king.[1] It was only at Pembroke's urgent entreaty that Edward continued his march to London. Thereupon Thomas moved south also, and took up his quarters in his own midland strongholds of Tutbury and Leicester. But the king's new counsellors soon perceived the futility at this stage of expecting a parliament to settle anything. If the king and Lancaster held aloof the parliament was useless; if they came, each would appear with a retinue of armed followers, who would be more likely to settle matters by breaking heads than by counting votes.[2] Accordingly it was thought prudent to postpone the parliament from January to March, and then again from March till June.

Meanwhile a deputation of prelates and barons took the bold step of journeying to Leicester to beard the lion in his den. After some preliminary negotiations between the mediators and Lancaster's counsellors, a numerously attended assembly was held at Leicester in April, which, though in reality a diplomatic conference between the ambassadors of rival powers, is loosely spoken of by the chroniclers as a parliament. Among those attending it were the two papal legates who had at last found a fruitful opportunity for mediation. Lancaster showed himself fairly conciliatory. He was quite content to make peace, if he could be convinced that the ordinances were at last going to be carried out. He only stipulated that, come what would, he intended to pursue his private feud against Warenne. He was even willing to make peace with the two Despensers, and maintain them in his service with a retinue of 200 knights for the term of their lives.[3] Pembroke and his friends protested that they also were zealous for the ordinances, and pledged themselves that they would

1. Malmesbury, pp. 230-231.
2. *Ib.*, p. 233, puts into the mouth of the king's counsellors the reasons for this step.
3. Bridlington, pp. 54-5.

force the king to secure their faithful observance. Lancaster agreed to attend the parliament at Lincoln in June, and the omens pointed to a rapid conclusion of the negotiations.

Four months elapsed, however, before anything decisive happened. The capture of Berwick in April, and the advance of the Scots as far south as Bolton-in-Wharfedale, did much to strengthen Pembroke's hand. It was still hard for him to redeem his pledges by reason of the interested opposition of the courtiers, who saw in the confirmation of the ordinances an imminent danger of losing both the lands, granted recently in the teeth of the provisions of 1311, and their appointments in the household, which no baronial parliament would continue to them.[1] Affairs were once more so strained that the Lincoln parliament was given up. At last Edward was induced to yield. On the 8th of June the king, prelates and barons gathered together in St. Paul's, where bishop Salmon of Norwich mounted the pulpit and proclaimed that the lord king was willing in all respects to accept the advice and aid of his earls and barons.[2] Early in July the court moved to Northampton, where the magnates assembled with such numerous followers that one might think, says the chronicler, that they had come for a war and not for a parliament.[3] It was, however, in no real sense a parliament, and Lancaster, though repeatedly summoned, refused to risk his head by attending the assembly. Accordingly, there had still for the next month to be a constant interchange of negotiations between the king at Northampton and the earl at Leicester. The cardinal legates and the prelates still took the leading part in the mediation.[4] It must have been during this period

1. Malmesbury, p. 235, makes this clear.
2. *Annales Paulini*, p. 282; cf. Robert of Reading, p. 184.
3. Malmesbury, p. 235, "Et hii omnes cum magna sequela, ita ut reputares eos non ad parliamentum venisse, sed potius ad bella." It was hardly a parliament, even of the baronial type. But any deliberative gathering was still loosely called a parliament.
4. *Ib.*, p. 283. "fuit pax reformata per cardinales et prelatos Angliae inter dominum regem et comitem Lancastriae." On 22 June the cardinals received safe conducts to attend the king at Northampton; *Foedera*, ii, 366.

that the remarkable conference between the earl and the prelates was held at Leicester, whose proceedings are recorded for us by the Leicester chronicler, Knighton,[1] and to which scarcely sufficient attention has been paid. Lancaster now seems to have interposed further delays by withdrawing to his castle of Tutbury in south Staffordshire.[2] The result was that the concluding negotiations took place at Leake in southern Nottinghamshire, a few miles north of Loughborough.[3] There was drawn up, on 9 August, between earl Thomas and the Pembrokian leaders, who acted in the king's name, an indenture which it is convenient to call the treaty of Leake. Five days later the king came up from Northampton and met Lancaster at Zouchbridge on the Soar, near Hathern, and exchanged a reluctant kiss of peace.[4]

(2) The Treaty of Leake and the York Parliaments of 1318 and 1320.

The triumph of the middle party was assured by the treaty of Leake.[5] We must now examine its character and terms. Perhaps the most interesting thing about the treaty is that it was an agreement between one single earl and the eleven prelates and barons, representing the middle party, who spoke in the name of the king. Its contents were very simple. The ordinances were to be maintained; Lancaster and his associates were to be pardoned; a parliament was to be summoned, and in the interval a standing council, one of whose members was a banneret, appointed by

1. Knighton, i, 413—421.
2. This is Stubbs' inference from Knighton, ii, 413.
3. Stubbs, followed by most modern writers, makes the place of the treaty Leek, in Staffordshire; but the movements of parties before and afterwards make it quite certain that either East or West Leake, Notts, villages on the right bank of the Soar, below Loughborough, is meant. The calendars of the patent and fine rolls make this clear. The editor of the calendar of close rolls suggests Leake, in the North Riding of Yorkshire as the place, but a village near Thirsk would be even more inaccessible than a town in north Staffordshire.
4. I follow Stubbs' shrewd suggestion as to the place, *Introduction*, i, lxxxii, but the details in the chroniclers are very puzzling.
5. It is printed in *Foedera*, ii, 370, and *Rot. Parl.*, i, 453-4 from the close roll.

Lancaster, was to remain with the king.[1] It was only with the assent of this standing council that Edward was suffered to perform the ordinary acts of sovereignty, such things, according to the treaty, as could rightfully be done by the king without the co-operation of parliament. If the council exceeded or misused its powers, its acts were liable to be annulled in parliament. When parliament assembled, this temporary committee was to be superseded by a more permanent council of the same sort, to be appointed by it.

The one thing new in the indenture was the standing council. The adoption of this device made the machinery to carry out the ordainers' policy exactly the same as that which had been framed by the barons, who had drawn up the provisions of Oxford. The important point is, that this stringent method of coercing the king, by vesting his executive authority in a baronial committee, was first brought into the programme at the moment of the triumph of the middle party. An expedient, so drastic that Lancaster had shrunk from suggesting it, was now brought into play by Pembroke and his friends, at the moment of Lancaster's humiliation. It is absolute proof that Pembroke's "middle party" was no mere group of courtiers and deserters from the popular cause, such as Lancastrian partisans, then and later, believed them to be. It shews how hopeless the king was, when even his best friend among the responsible politicians found it necessary to rob him of any real power. The coalition had still before it the work of purging the household, and it was wise enough to see that the only effective step towards securing that great end was the virtual suspension of the monarchy.

Two other remarks on the treaty of Leake must also be permitted. It is interesting that there is no reference in

1. The members of the standing council, appointed at Leake, were eight bishops (Salmon of Norwich, Hotham of Ely, John Langton of Chichester, Mortival of Salisbury, Martin of St. Davids, Halton of Carlisle, Orleton of Hereford, Cobham of Worcester); four earls (Pembroke, Richmond, Hereford and Arundel); four barons (Hugh Courtenay, Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, John Seagrave and John Grey), and the banneret to be appointed by Lancaster. Of these at least two bishops, one earl, one baron and Lancaster's banneret, were always to be in attendance at court.

it to the co-operation of the two cardinal legates, though they certainly had a large share in the preliminary negotiations. It is more important to realise that, though in form an acceptance of Lancaster's conditions, the treaty did involve the earl's thorough humiliation. It was of course necessary to gild the bitter pill, but from that day Thomas forfeited all right to speak as the leader of a united baronage. A dexterous use had been made of his notorious unwillingness to appear in parliaments and attend councils. The expedient, which gave him the right to nominate one banneret to the standing council, was doubtless devised to flatter his vanity. The great earl, who was strong enough to negotiate on equal terms a treaty of peace with the king and all his magnates, was to preserve his exceptional position by having the unique privilege, not even shared with the king, of appointing his own representative on the select body, which was to do all the king's work for him. The boon seemed all the greater since Lancaster's banneret was alone to be in perpetual residence at court, and to secure this without too great a burden upon an individual, the earl had the right to nominate his representative anew, quarter by quarter. Yet it cannot be doubted that the framers of the indenture welcomed this device, as a shrewd way of ridding the council of the unwelcome and disturbing presence of the impracticable chieftain. It was characteristic of Lancaster's blindness that he accepted the specious but dangerous proposal. Not one among his followers could really speak with authority on his behalf. So little weight did earl Thomas' banneret possess in this council that, so far as I know, there is not a single record preserving the name of any of his nominees. Of the other members of the council I gravely doubt whether there was a single one, who was not bitterly opposed to Lancaster and his policy. Certain it is that Lancaster's banneret, at the best, could only see that his lord had fair play, and was acquainted with the proceedings of the executive committee.

The triumph of the Pembrokian party was consummated

in the full parliament of the three estates which met at York on 20 October. The proceedings of this parliament are told in considerable detail in one of the rolls of parliament published in Cole's *Records*,[1] and demand, I think, rather more attention than they have hitherto received. We know from the writs that the shires and boroughs were represented in it, and that the boroughs returning representatives were much more numerous than had been the case in 1314 and 1316, though of the fifty-one boroughs which returned members, only seventeen sent representatives who claimed their expenses.[2] As at Lincoln in 1316, the knights and burgesses had a distinctly subordinate share in the work. Nearly all the proceedings recorded in the roll are set down to the credit of the "prelates, earls and barons." It is specifically mentioned that the king charged the "prelates, earls and barons to meet together and treat apart" such high matters of state as the appointment of ministers, the summoning of an army against the Scots, and the reform of the household. We may remember that in 1316 also there was a similar reservation of the higher politics to the baronage. If from one point of view this involves a survival of the old council of magnates, acting within a new-fashioned parliament, from another aspect, the deliberations of the magnates in 1316 and 1318 afford early instances of a body, not very different from the later house of lords, acting together as a self-contained unit and having reserved for it the graver matters brought before parliament. The only evidence of the participation of "the commons of the realm" is in a petition that the sheriffs and other local ministers should be changed. Even the mass of the petitions that emanated from the estates seems to have originated with the prelates, earls and barons only. Thus modest was the participation of the members for the shires and boroughs in the parliaments of the reign of Edward II.

1. Cole's *Records*, pp. 1—46.
2. *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, 184; *C. C. R., 1318-23*, p. 116. Compare *Return of Members of Parliament*, i, 54-6.

The first act of the magnates in the parliament was to approve the treaty of Leake. Steps were taken for the publication of its contents, and for the acts consequential to its acceptance. Between 22 October and the middle of November, an enormous number of letters of pardon were drawn up, remitting the penalties of all felonies and trespasses, committed before 7 August by Thomas of Lancaster and his adherents. We can still read on the patent roll a list of over 600 of earl Thomas's pardoned followers, which should afford excellent material for the minute biographer, topographer, and genealogist.[1] All these pardons were recited as granted with the assent of parliament. No exceptions to the pardon were made, save that a few malefactors still remained responsible for the outrage on the legates.

It goes without saying that the ordinances were once more confirmed. It is more important that parliament itself took two great steps in the direction of their execution. The first was the appointment of a committee of council, of which the former controller, William Melton, now archbishop of York, was the chief member, to draw up a scheme for the reform of the household, to which we shall recur later. The second was the elaborate and systematic review of all the ministers of the crown, the removal of those who were unworthy, and the nomination of sufficient successors to them. Unluckily the part of the roll containing this survey of the royal officers is so imperfectly preserved that we are left to guess many of the details contained in it. However, with a certain amount of knowledge of the official personalities of the period, it is not very hazardous to piece out the document with conjectures that do not go very far from the truth.

Let us first deal with the work of the parliament in the appointment of the king's officers, both of the state and of the household. Every office, high and low, seems to have been passed in review. The fact that a large number of existing functionaries were continued in their offices shews

1. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, pp. 227—235.

that the victorious coalition was already strongly entrenched, both in the administration and the household. Thus bishop Hotham of Ely, the former treasurer, who had been chancellor since 10 June, was declared to be sufficient, and therefore retained in office. So also were the two chief justices, the veteran William Bereford, chief justice of the common bench, and the chief justice of the king's bench, the high born Sir Henry le Scrope. It was a matter of course that the chief baron of the exchequer, Sir Walter Norwich, was also retained. Of the other ministers, whose appointment had been specifically claimed in the ordinances for parliament, the two keepers of the forest, north and south of Trent, the chief clerk of the common bench, and the escheator north of Trent, were all kept in office, as were the chief clerks of the wardrobe, Roger Northburgh, keeper since 1316, and Gilbert Wigton, controller since 8 July, 1318. Thomas Charlton, who, in the days when no respect was paid to the ordinances, had been appointed, after the ancient fashion, to combine the controllership of the wardrobe with the keepership of the privy seal, was now, if I interpret rightly a very corrupt text, allowed to remain in charge of the privy seal, as he had probably held it since 8 July, when he gave up the controllership to Wigton. Of the lay heads of the household, Hugh le Despenser, the younger, was specifically continued in his office of chamberlain,[1] while Sir William Montagu, the steward, whom we have seen in association with Pembroke, was removed from his post. But it was made clear that this was not a penalty for bad behaviour, but because Montagu was transferred to the more dignified office of seneschal of Gascony. His successor as steward was Badlesmere, the original and most intimate associate of Pembroke in the formation of the party which now attained its full triumph.

At the moment of the appointment of the new steward,

1. Cole's *Records*, p. 4, "Item le roi sest acorde par conseil et a la requeste de grauntz qe Mousieur Hugh le Despenser le fuiz *demoerge* son chamberleyn." Charlton was still chamberlain on 19 April (see above, p. 116), so that Hugh's appointment was quite recent. It is very hard to piece together precisely the successions of the chamberlains of this period.

earl Thomas of Lancaster made the only personal intervention, of which we have any record, in the proceedings of this parliament. Already in 1317 he had declared that it was part of his functions, as hereditary steward of England, to interfere in the administration, and perhaps also to nominate the steward of the household as his deputy.[1] This troublesome demand was now specifically put forward by him, and was received with formal respect. Orders were issued that search was to be made in the three offices of state possessing relevant archives, the chancery, the exchequer and the wardrobe, and that the result of this search should be reported to the council by a fortnight after the following Easter, six months hence. Thus decorously was the fallen leader's claim shelved, and by way of emphasising the stubbornness of the magnates, the appointment of steward of the household went to the deserter Badlesmere. There is no wonder then that, for the rest of his life, earl Thomas hated Badlesmere more bitterly than he hated mortal man. The whole incident was a demonstration to every member of parliament that earl Thomas's period of power was over. Another petition of Lancaster for the restoration to himself of a village in the wolds, anciently appertaining to his Yorkshire manor of Pickering, was similarly treated.[2]

Some other royal functionaries, spared at first, succumbed, after a brief respite, to the reforming zeal of the estates. Among the less dignified of the dispossessed officers was the escheator north of Trent, replaced late in November.[3] The most important of the belated sufferers was the treasurer of the exchequer, John Walwayn, a king's clerk who had long acted as escheator, and was of no great personal importance. He had only been appointed on 10 June, when bishop Hotham went from the

1. Cole's *Records*, p. 8, cf. p. 3.
2. *Ib.*, p. 8.
3. *Cal. Fine R., 1307-19*, pp. 380-1. Robert of Sapey, a layman, was succeeded by Ralph Crophill, a clerk, on 25 November. Sapey, like his kinsman John, took his name from the Herefordshire village of Sapey, near Bromyard.

treasury to the chancery, and perhaps then had been brought in as a stop-gap. There seems to have been some hesitation in parliament as to his "sufficiency," but he was suffered to remain in office for the greater part of its duration, and to take his place among the barons and prelates who, as we have seen, were specially assigned to deliberate on high matters of state. However, on 18 November he was replaced[1] by the veteran exchequer officer, John Sandall, since 1316 bishop of Winchester, who, though also an ex-chancellor, had shared with Sir Walter Norwich the effective charge of the treasury for ten years. For this long period the prelate and the knight had ruled the treasury, save only for two short breaks, the last of which, recently terminated, was the only one which continued for any appreciable time.[2] So little were the changes, brought about by the victorious coalition, revolutionary in character.

The same rigid regard for propriety characterised some other acts of the York parliament. John of Sapey, then justice of Chester, had been for eight years past one of those permanent officials who clung to office despite the demand of the ordainers for his removal. It was once more requested that this insufficient justice should be replaced by a more competent person. The royal answer was, however, that the offices of Chester touched the king's son, and not the king. Accordingly all that the king could do

1. *I. R.*, no. 186, *12 E.II, Mich. term*, m. 1, says that Sandall entered on his office on 23 November, "post amocionem magistri Johannis Walewayn in instanti parliamento apud Eboracum habito."

2. I gather from the patents of appointment the following particulars. Sandall was *locum tenens* for Reynolds, May 1308 to July 1310, and treasurer July 1310 to Oct. 1311, when Walter Norwich became *locum tenens*, and acted until January 1312. Walter Langton's renewed treasurership, early in 1312, was never effective, for if he acted at all, it was at the most for a few weeks in March and April. Anyhow, on 17 May Norwich was ordered to "continue to act." In October 1312 Sandall was again treasurer, "by the king on the information of Pembroke." He gave way on 26 September 1314 to Walter Norwich, appointed by king and council. Hotham's tenure of office, from 27 May 1317 to 10 June 1318, and Walwayn's, from 10 June to 16 Nov. 1318, were the only effective breaks to the power of these two officials, who presided continuously over the exchequer from 1310 to 1317. Sandall now acted till his death on 2 November 1319.

was to give the boy of six advice as to the wisdom of finding a more efficient justice. Sapey was, however, removed from the posts he held in Wales, because Wales was always in the king's hands.

A cleaner sweep was made of the lesser officers both of the household and the state. The petition of the three estates that the sheriffs should be changed was exactly carried out. The Bridlington annalist tells us that all the sheriffs were removed on one day.[1] This is only a slight exaggeration, for on 29 November, twenty new sheriffs were appointed to exercise jurisdiction over thirty shires, while another sheriff was set over two other shires on 1 December.[2] We may add to these two other cases, where quite recent appointments seem to have been regarded as satisfactory.[3] It is not often that a chronicler hits the mark so nearly in a matter of minute personal detail, but the wholesale changes in the sheriffs in 1318, as in 1314,[4] appealed, it is clear, to popular imagination, and were therefore remembered. It can hardly be expected that the chronicler should have known that the parliament excepted the shires of Cumberland, Westmorland, and Northumberland from its demand. These military posts needed permanence in their officials, and one of them, Westmorland, was an hereditary sheriffdom. It may well have been a corollary to these measures that commissioners were appointed to visit each shire to hear and determine the complaints of the king's subjects against his ministers.[5]

Another important act of the York parliament was the setting up, on a more permanent and legal basis, of the standing royal council, provisionally agreed upon at Leake. It did this by the simple method of accepting *en bloc* the persons who had been acting since August. However, it added to them two additional bishops and seven more

1. Bridlington, p. 56.
2. *Cal. Fine R., 1307-19*, pp. 381-83.
3. *Ib.*, pp. 367 and 369.
4. See above, p. 101.
5. Malmesbury, p. 239.

barons.[1] The two new prelates were John Sandall, bishop of Winchester, the new treasurer, and Walter Langton of Lichfield, whose days were now nearly run. A piteous recital of Langton's ancient grievances in a petition was pronounced obscure, and was rejected.[2] His post in the council was perhaps some consolation to the veteran prime minister of Edward I. But he was no longer a power in the state. More important by far were such new lay councillors as Despenser, the new chamberlain, Badlesmere the new steward, and Roger Mortimer of Chirk, since 1317 the justice of Wales. There were also men of less weight in William Martin, John of Somery, John Giffard and John Botetourt. The effect of their addition was to diminish the relative importance of the prelates, but it would perhaps be fanciful to suggest that this was a result of the loss of authority of that stout friend of the church, the earl of Lancaster.[3] It is more likely that the increased numbers were mainly designed to lessen the burden of residence at court, by allowing longer intervals between the quarters of obligatory attendance on the part of the counsellors.[4] It required some negotiation before this delicate problem of the council could be settled, and we are told that archbishop Melton and earl Humphrey of Hereford presented to the king the petition of the magnates, the acceptance of which involved the extension of the council. It goes without saying that the ordinances and the Great Charter were solemnly read before the estates. But we may pass over such formal acts as these. Let us similarly omit the petitions, received and answered in this parliament, and the laws duly promulgated, though one at least of them was memorable. We must proceed straight to the crucial question of the reform of the royal household.

1. Cole's *Records*, p. 12.
2. *Ib.*, pp. 4-5.
3. There is perhaps a touch of anti-clericalism in the request of parliament that the king "attach" master Rigaud of Assier and his clerks, "if they go against the prohibition ordered by the common council." For Rigaud, see above, p. 113, and below, pp. 230-232.
4. The four who acted on the council during the parliament were bishops Hotham and Cobham, the earl of Pembroke and John Seagrave; *ib.*, p. 13. Where then was Lancaster's nominee banneret?

During the session of parliament the committee for drawing up a plan of household reform had been at work. On 6 December the result of its deliberations was issued in the form of a royal ordinance, which we may call, for the sake of distinction, the household ordinance of York.

As I am printing a text of this ordinance in the appendix,[1] and shall have to describe its provisions at length, when I deal with the administrative reforms of the reign, there is no need to say much about it now. It suffices perhaps to remark, that, though a codification of pre-existent custom rather than an attempt to embody a new policy of household organisation, it represented a real effort to set down clearly points that had been hitherto matters of doubt and tradition. Moreover, it involved a thorough revision of the methods of household finance and administration, and a drastic attempt to minimise the long-standing abuses that had so long made the royal household a by-word for incompetence, greed and venality. It is some evidence of the reforming spirit that now inspired the new household officers, that the drafting of the ordinance seems to have been entrusted to the four chief ministers of the domestic service, Badlesmere the steward, Despenser the chamberlain, Northburgh the treasurer, and Wigton the controller of the wardrobe. The committee appointed by the estates, of which archbishop Melton, bishop Hotham, Badlesmere, Mortimer of Wigmore, and Walter Norwich were the guiding spirits, seems to have been content to accept the conclusions of the official heads of the domestic establishment. The matter so nearly touched the king's dignity that, even in his humiliation, Edward was allowed to nominate two members of the committee, namely Melton and Hotham.[2]

1. Appendix I, pp. 267—314.

2. Cole's *Records*, p. 12, gives the names of those appointed "ad supplicandum regem quod velit ad reparacionem status hospicii" as Hereford, Badlesmere, Mortimer of Wigmore, John of Somery and Walter of Norwich. The king's two nominees are associated with them by the king "ad intendendum negocia hospicii regis." On *ib.*, p. 3—a corrupt passage—most of the same names appear, and *lacunae* in the manscript account for the loss of the rest. But Melton and Hotham here seem appointed by the estates.

PUBLIC
IN OXFORD

Three days after the promulgation of the household ordinance, the parliament of York was dissolved on 9 December. In its session of seven weeks it had performed an immense amount of work, and I have ventured to speak at length of its proceedings because they have never been studied with any detail, and never, so far as I know, has their importance been properly appreciated. And contemporaries were no more alive to the importance of its work than have been our modern historians. Our chief guide among the chroniclers stresses the reconciliation of the king and the barons, but he speaks rather of the negotiations at Leake in August, than of the proceedings of the York parliament between October and December. He is certain, however, that the troubles of the first eleven years of Edward's reign are at last resolved, and believes that, like another Nebuchadnezzar, the king will begin to be prosperous in the twelfth year of his reign. Four signs of improvement are to him already discernible. The pope has excommunicated Robert Bruce and his followers and put Scotland under an interdict, and already miracles are showing that the divine favour has been withdrawn from the rebellious land. Moreover God has given Englishmen the victory of Dundalk over Edward Bruce and his Irish confederates. Again the famine is over and the bushel of wheat, which last year sold for 3s. 4d., can now be easily bought for sixpence. But chief of all the signs of better times is the reconciliation between the king and his barons. Now at last Edward listens to the advice of his magnates, and there is no longer anyone to instigate him to evil, since the domestic household, which had been the enemy of the baronage, has now withdrawn from the court.[1]

Subsequent events show that the moralising monk of Malmesbury was somewhat too sanguine in his anticipations. So much of truth, however, was there in his forecast, that Edward and England had between 1318 and 1321 such peace and prosperity as at no other time were experienced

1. Malmesbury, pp. 237—239. The last change was of course the work of the York parliament.

during the twenty years of this reign. It is true that trouble still remained. Lancaster obstinately refused to be reconciled, and still loudly claimed control of household appointments. In the next parliament, which sat at York in May 1319,[1] earl Thomas renewed in more outrageous form his demands of the previous year, praying "that the king should grant him the stewardship of his household, which appertains to him by reason of his honour of Leicester."[2] The only answer vouchsafed was that he might still have, if he would, the writs ordering a search in the records of exchequer, wardrobe and chancery, which had been allowed in the last parliament, but had never been asked for.

Other petitions of the earl were even more curtly rejected by parliament. There is little wonder then that Thomas's old dislike of attending parliaments broke out anew. He made a merit of taking part in the expedition which at length tardily mustered in July and laid siege to Berwick.[3] The siege was fruitless; the Scots got round the besiegers' lines and invaded Yorkshire; the gallant attempt of the Yorkshiremen to check the enemy collapsed at the battle of Myton on 12 September, and this disaster forced the king to raise the siege of Berwick. It was believed that Lancaster had inspired the Scots to burst into Yorkshire, and the great man condescended to purge himself by the ordeal of hot iron from the injurious accusation.[4] Despairing of military success, the English concluded a two years' truce with the Scots. The truce was another triumph for the middle party, for the negotiations were entirely in the hands of Pembroke and his friends.[5] Henceforth earl Thomas sulked, like Achilles in his tents.[6] He refused to

1. The parliament, which included knights and burgesses, sat from 6 May to 25 May; *Return of Members of Parliament*, i, 57—59; *C. C. R., 1318-23*, p. 139. Its roll is in Cole's *Records*, pp. 47—54.

2. *Ib.*, p. 48.

3. *Foedera*, ii, 400; compare Malmesbury, p. 249.

4. *Ib.*, p. 249.

5. The negotiators, appointed on 1 December 1319, were bishop Hotham, Pembroke, the younger Despenser and Badlesmere; *Foedera*, ii, 410. It was for two years, from 21 December 1319 to 21 December 1321, and was sealed before 24 January 1320; *ib.*, p. 416.

6. Malmesbury, p. 251. The comparison is the chronicler's.

attend a baronial parliament, summoned to York for 20 January 1320. A parliament, he declared, ought not to be held *in cameris*; he distrusted the men surrounding the king as much as ever.[1] He had some excuse, for the ruling faction treated the baronial assembly as a full parliament,[2] and took advantage of it to make the first important ministerial changes that had been made since the York parliament of 1318. The bishop of Ely now laid down the great seal, and was succeeded by John Salmon, bishop of Norwich; the treasurership, which had been in the hands of Walter Norwich, as keeper, since bishop Sandall's death in the previous November, was entrusted to Walter Stapeldon, bishop of Exeter, and Master Robert Baldock, archdeacon of Middlesex, succeeded Thomas Charlton as keeper of the privy seal.[3]

It is difficult to argue that any political motive underlay these new appointments. Those who see in them the beginnings of the ascendancy of the Despensers and of the conversion of the triumph of the middle party into the renewed ascendancy of the king, guided by a new favourite, adopt the somewhat unsafe course of arguing back from the events of 1321 to those of the beginnings of 1320. So far as their antecedents went, the new ministers were of the same stamp as their predecessors. Salmon, like Hotham, had been an ordainer and a member of the standing council appointed in 1318. Moreover, an aged Benedictine, with failing health and a reputation for moderation, was not likely to pursue a more forward policy than the strenuous and pushing Yorkshireman whom he replaced. Stapeldon had been bishop of Exeter almost as long as Edward II had been king, but his main interests seem to have been in the careful administration of his diocese, the completion of

1. Malmesbury, p. 256. "Non enim debebat habere parliamentum in cameris." Is this a constitutional declaration that the only valid parliaments are parliaments of the three estates?

2. *Foedera*, ii, 415, "in pleno parliamento."

3. *Ann. Paulini*, p. 287. Salmon was appointed on 26 January in "parliament"; *Foedera*, ii, 415; Stapeldon, on 18 February: "by the king," after the court had moved to London; *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 417; and Baldock at York on 27 January; *MS. Ad.*, No. 17,362, f. 9d.

his cathedral church, on which he lavished large sums, and the establishment of Stapeldon Hall, now Exeter College, at Oxford, as a place for the training of west-country scholars. So far as he had been a politician, he had taken up a line as moderate as that of Pembroke. Though not an ordainer, he had joined in the petition of the magnates which resulted in the appointment of the ordaining committee.[1] He had been more than once closely associated with Pembroke in embassies and similar employments.

Even Baldock's political record was not clearly against him. The kinsman of that old official and ordainer Ralph Baldock, bishop of London, he was a well-trained, able and pushing wardrobe clerk, who had recently borne the chief burden of the negotiations of the truce with the Scots, and was no sooner back from Newcastle than he received the custody of the privy seal, apparently as the reward of his activity in this matter. Whatever may have been going on under the surface, no breach in the coalition in power had as yet been disclosed. Nor is any such schism visible for the whole of the year 1320. When in the summer the king went over to Amiens to perform his long-delayed homage for Ponthieu and Gascony, he left Pembroke as regent of the kingdom.[2] When a bad ecclesiastical job was to be perpetrated, it was done in favour of the high-born young clerk, Henry Burghersh, raised to the great bishopric of Lincoln before he was thirty, nominally at the petition of the king to the pope, really because he was the nephew of Bartholomew Badlesmere.[3] The London parlia-

1. *Ann. London.*, p. 170.

2. The king was absent abroad between 19 June and 22 July; *C. C. R., 1317-23*, pp. 238 and 247. During this time writs were issued in England under a small seal of absence, and tested by Pembroke. The chancellor accompanied the king, but the great seal remained in England "closed up and in a secure place."

3. In April Badlesmere went with Orleton and the elder Despenser on embassy to Paris and Avignon. When at the curia he secured his nephew's provision to Lincoln "et plus quam xv milia marcarum expendit de pecunia regis, sed nihil regi utile procuravit nisi promotionem domini Henrici"; Murimuth, p. 31; cf. Bridlington, p. 60. Many strong letters were written on Burghersh's behalf; *Foedera*, ii, 414, 418. The bull of provision is in *ib.*, ii, 425.

ment held in October was uneventful, and it was no new thing that Lancaster disdained to attend it.[1] For earl Thomas still stood aloof in sulky isolation, and he alone displayed manifest signs of discontent.

(3) The Revolt of the March and the Fall of the Despensers (1320—1321).

While everything outwardly remained harmonious, another political crisis was gradually developing. The two storm centres were the king's court and the march of Wales, and the cause of the new troubles was the same in each, the ambition of the younger Despenser, and the strong position which he gradually secured for himself in the king's favour. A few changes in the household staff in the summer of 1320 are symptomatic of what was soon to come. On 7 July Gilbert of Wigton gave up the controllership of the wardrobe, and in defiance of the ordinances Robert Baldock was appointed his successor, though he still retained the custody of the privy seal and his promotion did not receive the approval even of a baronial parliament. In fact the change was made during the king's visit to France, when Pembroke was in England and Badlesmere at Avignon, and must be set down to the growing influence of Despenser with the king. From this time at least, the younger Hugh, as chamberlain, ruled the king and court with absolute authority. A proof of this was the appointment of two of Hugh's personal clerks to positions of importance in the state. On 11 September 1320, one of these, the Burgundian, William of Cusance,[2] succeeded Ralph Stokes, a veteran of Edward I's reign, as keeper of the great wardrobe. The other, William of Cliff, already transferred from his master's service to the position of a chancery clerk, was

1. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 290. Thomas, however, condescended to send a proxy and excuses.

2. William of Cusance was still Despenser's clerk on 14 October 1319, though receiving the king's wages; *Exch. Accts. K. R.*, 378/4. There were several persons named Cusance in the royal service in the early fourteenth century. Their name seems derived from Cusance in the free county of Burgundy, canton and arrond. Baume-les-Dames, dep. Doubs.

promoted to the king's council, and the opposition soon believed that he was sworn to prevent any writs issuing from chancery to the prejudice of Despenser and his father.[1] The purgation of the household in 1318 were thus partially undone. Henceforth Robert Baldock controlled the king and the household, and for the rest of his career remained the brain and the hand of the younger Despenser. The new favourite, who in some measure had stepped into the place of Peter Gaveston, was not content with becoming the chief power within the household. He now strove to take advantage of the chronic troubles of the march of Wales, to build up, on the basis of his third share of the Clare inheritance, a mighty principality which might well make him independent even of his royal master.

Since the conquest of the principality of Wales by Edward I, the palatine franchises of the feudal lords of the march of Wales had become a dangerous anachronism. It was part of the real statecraft of the author of the writs of *quo warranto* that, in the later years of his reign, he had applied the principles of those writs to define and limit the jurisdictions of the marcher barons. Within a few years private war had been prohibited; extravagant claims to extreme regalian rights rejected; the rule of law upheld, and the proud marchers of Glamorgan, Brecon, and Gwent humiliated. There was no part of Britain where the change from Edward I to Edward II made more difference than in the western march lands, and all through our period the disorders of the march stand in strong contrast to the tranquillity of the principality of Wales. But if the Welsh of the principality never rose in revolt

1. The evidence for these facts is not very good, resting upon the complaint of the northern barons in July 1321; Bridlington, p. 6. In many of the allegations against the Despensers there are evident signs of exaggeration. We may, however, accept them as testimony of the undoing of the effects of the purgation of the household in 1318. William Cliff, to be distinguished from the better known chancery clerk, Henry Cliff, was already a king's clerk in June 1316; *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 476; and a clerk of chancery on 24 December 1317; *C. C. R., 1313-18*, p. 587.

against a king born in Gwynedd,[1] their kinsmen in the marches were a constant source of trouble to their local lords. I have alluded already to the most important of these marcher troubles, the war between Owen ap Gruffydd and John Charlton for the possession of Powys, and the revolt of Llewelyn Bren against the royal bailiffs, who, after 1314, administered the Clare lordship of Glamorgan.[2] In the absence of central authority the chief lords marcher worked out a rough and ready method of maintaining the cherished "custom of the march," by a plan of mutual co-operation, a sort of holy alliance to maintain the tradition of baronial rule, and uphold a rude balance of power between the various families. Thus the Mortimers went to the help of John Charlton and won back for him his threatened authority in Powys. Again the Mortimers and Hereford combined to repress the rising of Llewelyn Bren.

The confederate lords of the march bore no illwill towards the younger Despenser, when he took up his wife's rights as lord of the Glamorgan palatinate; but the third of the Gloucester inheritance, assigned to him in 1317, in no wise contented the covetous chamberlain. His chief ambition was now to enlarge his wife's inheritance on every side,[3] and to exercise to the full every claim to exclusive jurisdiction. Within a few months of his accession to Glamorgan, he gave offence to the Mortimers and Bohuns by removing Llewelyn Bren from his prison in the Tower, taking him down to Cardiff, putting him to death as a traitor to his lord, and confiscating all his estates. Afterwards this was regarded as involving a breach of faith, not dissimilar to the act of treachery by which Warwick and Lancaster lured Gaveston to his end.[4] For the moment, however, nothing was said. Lancaster, Hereford and Pembroke themselves attested the

1. Higden, *Polychronicon*, viii, 300, "unum tamen huic regi feliciter obvenit quod Cambria contra eum minime rebellavit." See also later, pp. 209-211.

2. See above, p. 103.

3. Malmesbury, p. 254: "omni studio et tota mente terras vicinas dominio suo nitebatur amplificare."

4. Bridlington, pp. 67-8, gives the version of the transaction accepted by Despenser's enemies in 1321.

charter in which on 21 November, 1318, "with the assent of the prelates, earls, barons, and other magnates in the king's parliament at York," Despenser, and his wife Eleanor, received a grant of all "royal and other liberties" in Glamorgan, "which any of the ancestors of the said Eleanor did use."[1] It was thought well that Hugh should be endowed with lands, worth 600 marks a year, to meet the expense of the continuous residence at court involved in the chamberlainship.[2] Three days before the date of this charter, he received a grant for life of the historical castles of Dryslwyn and Dynevor in the vale of Towy. Along with them went Cantrev Mawr,[3] the largest district in the royal shire of Carmarthen, which was to some extent removed in his interests from the jurisdiction of the courts and exchequer of the southern capital of the principality, and therefore from the authority of Mortimer of Chirk, the justice of all Wales. A further movement in the same direction was when, in July 1319, Hugh obtained the control of the castle of Newcastle-Emlyn, and of the commote of Emlyn, on the lower Teivi.[4] The effect of this was to establish Hugh as ruler of the best part of the rich vale of Towy, and of all the uplands and dales between Teivi and Towy. He next turned his attention westwards, and began to cast greedy eyes upon his brothers-in-laws' shares of the Gloucester heritage, especially upon the region of Gwent, immediately to the eastward of Glamorgan, and now divided between Amory and Audley, who respectively held upper and lower Gwent. So early as 10 January 1320,

1. *C. Chart R., 1300-28*, pp. 396 and 398-9, gives the charter in duplicate form. The names of witnesses, not given in the calendar, I have extracted from *Charter Roll, 12 Edw. II*, m. 11, no 38. They are archbishop Melton; bishops Salmon and Hotham; the earls of Lancaster, Pembroke and Hereford; Hugh Courtenay, John Mowbray, and Badlesmere, steward of the household.

2. Cole's *Records*, p. 9: "les dc marches de terre queux le roi lui deveit pur voir pur sa demore ovesque lui."

3. *Ib.*, p. 5. *C. C. R.*, 1323-7, p. 249, shows that the date of the grant was 18 Nov. 1318. But already before the 14 Sept. Hugh was "keeper" of Dryslwyn; *C. Fine R.*, ii, 375. Roger Mortimer of Chirk had been finally made justice of North and South Wales, *i.e.* of all the principality, on 7 Oct. 1317; *ib.*, p. 342.

4. *Ib.*, iii, 2. They were granted to a dependent at his request.

Hugh Audley and Margaret his wife, the sometime widow of Gaveston, received licence to grant the castle of Newport-on-Usk, and other adjacent lands in what is now southern Monmouthshire to Despenser.[1] By May the Audleys had been induced, or more probably coerced, into accepting an exchange by which they received lands and advowsons in the peaceful south-east, in return for yielding up Newport and Nether Went to the grasping chamberlain.[2] A similar effort to appropriate Amory's share of the Clare lands in Wales failed,[3] but Despenser's agents were successful in preparing the way for his obtaining Lundy island, and with it the command of the Bristol Channel.[4]

Despenser next turned his eyes towards the English-speaking peninsula of Gower, with its castles of Oystermouth and Swansea. Gower, now the western portion of the modern Glamorganshire, was no part, either politically or ecclesiastically, of the mediæval Glamorgan, which he had inherited from the Clares.[5] Gower would form a bridge to unite Cantrev Mawr with Glamorgan, and thus round off the Clare inheritance in the west, just as Nether Went rounded it off in the east. It had long been ruled by the once great house of Braose, which held in it the same ample regalian rights that the Clares exercised in Glamorgan.[6] Its then lord, William de Braose, was sonless and thriftless, and had been for some time endeavouring to sell the

1. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 415. The grant included the castle of Newport, the manors of Stowe, Rhymney, Dowlais, Machen, Ebbw Vale ("Dyffryn Ebbwy." "Freneboth"), and certain knights' fees in Bassaleg, Coedcarnau, Begansley, St. Bride's, and St. Mellons, and the advowsons of the churches of Machen and Llanvihangel, and of the priory of Malpas in Gwenllwg.

2. *Ib.*, p. 456. The exchanges offered were mainly in Oxfordshire, Kent and London. Malmesbury is quite clear as to the involuntary character of Audley's action. Despenser, he says, "castrum de Newport . . . . fraudulenter intravit et tenuit" (p. 254). The exchange of lands was a subsequent attempt to square the injured party. The Tintern annalist says, "traditione et quasi vi ceperunt Novum Burgum"; *Flor. Hist.*, iii, 342.

3. *Flor. Hist.*, iii, 342.

4. *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xii, 755, 766.

5. The ancient limits of Gower, which extended eastwards into the Welsh-speaking lower valley of the Tawe, are yet marked by the portion of Glamorganshire—the deanery of Gower—which is still included in the diocese of St. Davids.

6. *C. Chart. R.*, iii, 46-7.

reversion of his estate to the highest bidder.[1] Among the marcher lords, eager to bargain with Braose for his lands, were the Mortimers and earl Humphrey of Hereford, to whose lordship of Brecon Gower lay adjacent. Nothing, however, was actually concluded, and, when Braose died, Gower was taken possession of by the husband of his only daughter, John Mowbray, lord of Axholme, Melton, and many other rich lordships in England. The royal licence for Mowbray to take up Braose's lordship was neither sought nor obtained, and Mowbray declared that the custom of the march made such a step unnecessary. Thereupon Despenser affirmed that the king had in Wales the same right that he had in England, to insist on his permission being obtained, before the heir of any tenant in chief presumed to take possession of his inheritance. As Mowbray had neglected this formality, Gower was now regarded as escheated to the crown. If this doctrine prevailed, it would not have been an easy step for the king to re-grant the forfeited lordship to the all-powerful favourite. In that case Despenser would have been lord of South Wales from the Teivi to the Wye, and every other marcher baron would have been at his mercy.

A hastily-formed confederacy of marcher lords against Despenser now radically changed both the course of events in South Wales, and the balance of English politics. With the exception of earl Aymer of Pembroke and earl Edmund of Arundel, lord of Clun and Oswestry, every great marcher made common cause against the aggressive favourite. Both of these magnates also were nervous of Despenser's aggressions, but Pembroke was too accustomed to mediation to be able to play a decisive part. Arundel also had been forced to lean upon the king as his best protection from the Mortimers, who had recently been assailing his lordships in North Wales. Of the rest, however, royalists like earl Warenne and John Charlton of Powys, temporisers like earl Humphrey of Hereford, lord of Brecon, and the

1. Trokelowe, p. 107: "Terra de Gowers quam multis dominis obtulit venalem."

two Mortimers, united with the Lancasters and other stalwarts of the baronial opposition, to stop the growth of a power which threatened their own inheritance in the march. When in October 1320 the king ordered the seizure of Gower, by the sheriff and sub-escheator of Gloucestershire,[1] the confederate marchers rallied to the support of John Mowbray and prevented the execution of the royal mandate. Their triumph was the easier since Roger Mortimer of Chirk held the great office of justice of Wales and could use all the forces of the principality against the royal officers. The Welsh, who hated the rule of Hugh, cordially co-operated with their alien governors.[2]

Despenser's claim to regard a marcher franchise as an appendage of an English shire gave good colour to the cry of the marchers that the law and custom of the march were in danger.[3] Inevitably the attempt to enforce the seizure involved South Wales in civil war.[4] The fight continued until Despenser had lost all his hardly won possessions, and until the stalwarts of the baronial opposition in England took advantage of his misfortunes to revive the old watchwords of the ordainers, and unite with the victorious marchers to procure his ruin. Thus the aggres-

1. *C. C. R.*, 1318-23, p. 268.

2. Malmesbury, p. 256: "nec Walenses, dominationem Hugonis execrantes, tuitionem inferre procurant." Hugh himself writes to an agent about "la malice de ceux de Breghenok et de Cantrebaghan;" *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xii, 761. His attitude to the Welsh gentry is suggested by his order that none of the 24 Welshmen "des pluz grant de nostre terre," sent to remain with him by his sheriff of Glamorgan, should be allowed the use of horses, "einz voloms qu'eux soient touz a pie, et touz as ouelles gages." *Ib.*, p. 760.

3. Malmesbury, p. 255: "sprevit Hugo et consuetudines et leges marchiae."

4. Hostilities began about Nov. 1320, when "a great crowd of armed Welshmen" at Kilvey prevented the subescheator executing his mandate. Some of the persons appointed to hear and determine the inquest resulting therefrom, such as Hereford, Henry of Lancaster, and John Gifford, became members of the marcher confederacy; *C. P. R., 1317-21*, pp. 547-8. The Tintern version of the Flores, *Flor. Hist.*, iii, 344-5, gives the best account of the war in South Wales. The details are worth working up. There is good material in G. T. Clark's *Cartae et Munimenta ad dominium de Glamorgan pertinentia*, for instance, the important inquest of 9 Oct. 1319 on *ib.*, iv, 74. Mr. W. H. Stevenson's note in *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xii, 755—761, and the document published therein, already more than once referred to, are also valuable.

sions of Despenser in South Wales are not only the starting point of the greatest crisis of Edward II's reign; they broke up the combination of parties which had controlled England since 1318. In 1318 the solid support of the marcher lords had secured the triumph of the middle party. In 1321 the equally solid defection of these same magnates rent the middle party asunder, and once more compelled a baronial triumph. In both cases, as in 1263, the decisive voice lay with the lords of the march of Wales.

Thomas of Lancaster was the chief gainer by the outrageous conduct of the Despensers. The old champion of the irreconcileables could now say, with good reason, that there was no trust to be placed in the king and his courtiers, and that Pembroke and his associates had been fooled by their own anxiety for compromise and conciliation. The old party of the ordainers, broken up in 1318, was now again reconstituted by the force of events. Of this party earl Thomas was once more the leader. We are again in the atmosphere of the early years of the reign, when in May, the northern lords assembled, in the chapter house of Pontefract priory, under the walls of earl Thomas's chief castle, and formed a league to defend their leader and their inheritance,[1] and when in June a gathering of northern clergy, barons and knights met together in the parish church of Sherburn in Elmet, and formulated once more the old demands for the purging of the court and the reinforcement of the ordinances.[2] In pursuing such courses the earl was simply renewing his former game. But this Lancastrian parliament, as Stubbs truly called the gathering at Sherburn, resolved to refer its grievances to a true parliament of England. This body met at London on 15 July, and care was taken to include in it representatives of shires, boroughs and lower clergy.[3] But though experience had taught the barons the

1. Bridlington, pp. 61-2. Stubbs first indicated the importance of the information given by this writer in his introduction to *Chron. Edw. I and Edw. II*, ii, lxxxvi-xc.
2. Bridlington, pp. 62—65.
3. *Return of Members of Parliament*, i, 62-3.

wisdom of shewing some respect to constitutional forms, the real decision lay, not with the timid estates, but with the lords of the northern and western opposition, who now met in London with thousands of armed followers in their train.[1] Under these circumstances it was easy to banish the Despensers, and to draft articles against them which once more re-echoed the old cries of the ordainers.[2] Late in August parliament separated, after a comprehensive measure of pardon to protect the triumphant rebels.[3]

The fall of the Despensers was due not so much to their being royal favourites, as to the incompatibility of the interests of the barons with the personal ambitions of the younger Hugh. It was to little purpose that the lord of Glamorgan cloaked his greed in high sounding, constitutional doctrine, except so far as it shews that his theory was in no wise the point of view of a mere creature of court favour. We have seen how he had posed as a champion of English law and royal prerogative against the anarchic traditions of the march. Even more subtle was his doctrine that obedience was due not to the king's person but to the crown, and that it was lawful accordingly for him, the chamberlain appointed in parliament, to compel Edward to do his bidding. In similar fashion he maintained that as chamberlain he had a right to dismiss and appoint household officers at his discretion,[4] and that, being nominated to his office by the estates, he could be removed by no inferior authority.[5] Such views were too deep for the conservative baronage. They were moreover in utter contrast to the undeviating pursuit of personal advantage by violence and fraud, which marked each step of Hugh's later career. He had packed the court, the two benches and the great departments of state with his dependents. He had outraged the interests of his old allies and had made the compromise of 1318 utterly unworkable. The

1. *Ann. Paul.*, pp. 293-98, vividly illustrates the real situation.
2. Bridlington, pp. 65—70.
3. Bridlington, pp. 72-3. The names of the persons pardoned are detailed in *C. P. R., 1321-4*, pp. 15—21. The pardons are all dated 20 Aug.
4. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 292. Compare Lancaster's similar claim as steward, pp. 107, 127, 133.
5. *Parl. Writs*, ii, i, p. 231.

result was he and his father were entirely isolated. They fell because not even their own dependents and nominees would support them. The very fact that their banishment was attended by no wholesale changes in the administrative *personnel*, shews that even men like Baldock were in no mind to risk their offices for their sakes.[1] Edward II was more solitary in 1321 than he had been in 1310 and in 1314.

The break up of the middle party was complete. Earl Aymer of Pembroke did not openly desert the king, but his private sympathies, as was natural to the lord of a Welsh palatinate, were with his marcher brethren.[2] When the storm burst he withdrew from England, having a good reason for absence in the prosecution of his third marriage with Mary of Saint-Pôl, an event which took place at Paris on 5 July.[3] Pembroke was, however, back in London on 20 July, soon after parliament had assembled, and faithful to his rôle of mediation, urged the king to consent to the banishment of the Despensers.[4] His chief henchman, Badlesmere, when in England, was assiduous in attendance at court in the discharge of his functions as steward until the end of 1320, and again made a sporadic appearance in May and June 1321.[5] After this Badlesmere openly threw in his lot with the opposition, so that he had to receive a pardon in August.[6]

1. The only important change was in the treasury, where Stapeldon was on 25 Aug., 1321, "discharged at his own request"; *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 417. That this had no political significance, is shown by Stapeldon's employment as a royal commissioner in the south-west; *ib., 1321-4*, p. 15. He probably withdrew in order to transact diocesan business. He was continually in his diocese from Sept. 1321 to his reappointment as treasurer in May 1322; Stapeldon's *Register*, pp. 556-7.

2. Murimuth, p. 33: "comes vero Lancastriae consensit eis expresse, et comes de Pembroke occulte."

3. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 292.

4. Malmesbury, p. 259, puts in his mouth a speech addressed to the king on this matter. Richmond also joined in his mediation.

5. Badlesmere's attestations of charters throws some light on his attendance at court. In 13 Edw. II he regularly attested all charters with two exceptions between 19 July 1319 and 28 Feb. 1320, but none for the rest of that term. In 14 Edw. II he attested charters from 9 Sept. till 29 Dec. 1320. After this his name is not found until 10 May. Between 10 May and 14 June he attested six charters. I can find no evidence of his being called steward after 14 June. As we shall see, he did not resume his functions after his pardon in August. For his attestations see *Charter Rolls, 13 and 14 Edward II*, passim.

6. *Foedera*, ii, 454.

(4) The Fall of Lancaster and the Reaction of 1322—1326.

Rapid as was the fall of the Despensers, their return was even more sudden. Within a few weeks of their withdrawal from England, circumstances gave the king a chance of striking a new blow for freedom and his friends. This opportunity came from the imperfect reconciliation of old enmities which had attended the shifting of parties in 1321. It is particularly seen in the curious position of Badlesmere. Though he pardoned him for his treachery, Edward II clearly found it harder to forgive Badlesmere than most of his associates. Anyhow for some reason or another the steward was never so fully reconciled to the king as to return to court to discharge his duties.[1] Before long he abandoned his office under circumstances that filled the king's mind with the blackest hatred towards him.[2] But Thomas of Lancaster was even more embittered than the king against Badlesmere. He could not forget his personal grudge against an old ally whose appointment as steward in 1318 he had regarded as a personal insult, as the flouting of his claim, as hereditary steward, to control the king's household. Badlesmere thus remained isolated alike from his recent associates and his ancient foes. Both sides now equally regarded him as a traitor.

The somewhat mysterious changes of Badlesmere's attitude are worth careful examination, since it was his ambiguous position that first gave the king a chance to strike a blow for freedom. Moreover his imperfect reconciliation with the northern lords prevented the whole of the baronial party from making common cause in supporting him against the crown. The result was that, within two

1. The steward of the household was the one household officer who normally attested officially the charters issued from the chancery. But the Charter Roll of 15 Edward II never mentions his name, though it affords no evidence that he had a successor as steward until Jan. 1322, when Gilbert Pecché began to act. See Appendix II, pp. 353-354, List of Stewards. For the name Pecché or Peachy, see *ib.*, p. 395.

2. *Flor. Hist.*, iii, 199.

months of the solemn reconciliation of parties in the London parliament, England was once more plunged into civil war.

It is generally said that the cause of the renewal of hostilities was the refusal of lady Badlesmere to allow queen Isabella to take up her quarters at Leeds castle in Kent, where the wife of the ex-steward was residing in October. The details, which I have given, of Badlesmere's attitude shews that this was no isolated act of rudeness, as has been often believed, but the natural, if lawless, act of the wife of an avowed enemy of the king. Edward was, however, shrewd enough to lay great stress on the insult to the queen, as a pretext for raising a large army to prosecute the siege of Leeds. Edward's appeal for help met with an extraordinarily favourable response, and put at his disposal a large military force. The remarkable circumstance is that many of the magnates, who had recently been Badlesmere's closest allies, should have joined the besieging army. Among these were Pembroke himself, his fellow mediator Richmond, Arundel and even Warenne, who had taken a leading part in the recent marcher rising. It looks as if Badlesmere's obstinate refusal to reconcile himself with the court had left him absolutely friendless. This, however, does not explain why the earls, who had followed Edward to the siege of Leeds, remained for the rest of the reign staunch in their devotion to the king.

Badlesmere was absent from Leeds, and was therefore free to seek for help to release his wife and followers. It was useless for him to appeal to Lancaster, for his relations to earl Thomas were even more hostile than his attitude to the king. The enemy of earl Thomas could therefore expect no support from the northern baronage which still followed Lancaster's lead. All that happened in the north was that Lancaster summoned another ambiguous "parliament" of his supporters at Doncaster. As a result of this the northern opposition once more slowly armed itself. It stood aside, however, until the fate of Leeds was settled; even after that it took no steps to make common cause with the friends of Badlesmere.

Badlesmere found more effective helpers in the magnates of the march of Wales, who retained the liveliest distrust of the Despensers even in their exile. Hereford and the Mortimers rapidly raised their forces, marched eastwards and joined Badlesmere at Kingston-on-Thames. There the news came that Leeds had yielded to overwhelming forces after a siege of a few days. It was useless for the hasty levies of the marchers to pursue their eastward march into Kent, and challenge a battle with the triumphant king. They promptly withdrew into the west, leaving all southern and eastern England in the hands of Edward and his friends.

The king's party shewed an energy, a unity, and policy, that contrasted very favourably with the timidity and disunion of their enemies. The host, which had mustered at Leeds, followed the retreating marchers into their own lands, and the early winter saw a bloodless campaign in the Severn valley, which culminated in the tame surrender of the Mortimers and the other leaders of the west country opposition. In December the Despensers were recalled from banishment, and at once began to take advantage of the defeat of their bitterest enemies. Only a few wrecks of the marcher host, under Hereford, escaped, and managed to join Lancaster and the northern lords, who were now under arms at Tutbury. On the approach of the king, Lancaster also lost heart and fled precipitately northwards. Just north of Boroughbridge, his retreat over the Ure was blocked by a second royalist army, consisting mainly of borderers commanded by Sir Andrew Harclay.[1] On 16 March 1322, the royalists won their final triumph. The crowning victory of Boroughbridge, where Hereford met his doom from a Welshman's knife, was soon followed by the execution of Lancaster, the wholesale proscription of the "contrariants," and the confiscation of their estates. It is typical of the divisions of those who professed a

1. For Harclay's career see Dr. J. E. Morris' article in *Transactions of the Cumberland and Westmorland Archæological Soc.*, new ser., iii, 307 and following. His name is really 'Hartlay,' or 'Hartley.'

common cause that, while Lancaster paid the penalty of his treason at his own castle of Pontefract, Badlesmere perished on the scaffold at Canterbury, also in the neighbourhood of his own estates. Thus the enemies were divided in death as in life. The last scene of all in the drama of their fall was the reversal of their common policy in the repeal of the ordinances by the parliament which met at York in May.

The cause of the disgraceful collapse of the opposition is mainly to be found in its division into two separate and unrelated elements, as the result of the feud of Lancaster and Badlesmere. Already in the summer of 1321, the northern and marcher oppositions had had their different points of view and spheres of action, but they were still able to combine for a common cause, and the union of the northern and western lords in London in July had secured them an overwhelming and almost bloodless victory. In the winter of 1321-2, north and west fought separately each for its own hand, and defeat in detail was the natural result of such a fatuous policy. The impracticability of the opposition gives some shew of justification of the desertion by Pembroke and Warenne of their old allies. The baronage was so utterly selfish and purposeless in its action, that its triumph might well have led to even greater evils than the victory of the king and the Despensers.

How far were the events of 1322 parallel to those of 1318? Superficially, Edward's later and more complete victory seems more personal to himself than that of 1318, and history has commonly spoken of the years between 1322 and 1326 as the period of the rule of the Despensers. I feel quite sure, however, that without the co-operation of Pembroke and the remnants of the old middle party, the royalist victory of 1322 would never have taken place. Certain it is that, between 1322 and his death in 1324, Pembroke still remained a powerful influence on the side of moderation and peace. If his self-defeating love of peace made him no effective check upon the Despensers in matters of internal administration, and still less in the

partition of the spoils of victory, he still had a field of his own in the conduct of the relations with the Scots. Two events now shewed that it was hopeless to continue hostilities. These were the defeat between Byland and Rievaux, when Edward narrowly escaped capture in the heart of Yorkshire. The other was the tragedy of Carlisle, when Harclay, the victor of Boroughbridge, the new-made earl of Carlisle, paid with his life the penalty of his desperate efforts to take the law into his own hands. All that could be done was to procure a long truce on terms which the Scots would accept. Under these circumstances was concluded the thirteen years' truce of 1323, which virtually concluded the Scottish war of independence by recognising Robert Bruce as the *de facto* ruler of Scotland. This truce was the last work of Pembroke's life, and it is characteristic of his attitude that his fellow negotiators were the younger Despenser and Baldock.[1] He died suddenly in France, on 23 June 1324, leaving no male heir, so that his earldom fell into abeyance. Weak as he had often been in action, doubtful as were some of his subtle changes of front, with him disappeared the best influence that had ever been exerted on the court and councils of Edward II.

The repeal of the ordinances by the parliament of May 1322, is, even more than the proscriptions and confiscations, evidence that the triumph of the Despensers had a reactionary character. Yet even in this repeal the constitutionalism of the younger Hugh found its expression. I have spoken already of his strange teaching, condemned by the barons of 1321, that homage is due to the crown rather than to the king's person. It was hardly the part of a mere favourite to appropriate, for his own purposes, doctrines that had seemed natural on the lips of the ordainers of 1311, and which clearly anticipated what the parliaments of the Restoration called, the damnable doctrine that war may be levied by the king's authority against the king's person. We must not now interpret too literally

1. *Foedera*, ii, 521; Bridlington, p. 84.

the famous declaration of the parliament of 1322, which repealed the ordinances on principles which have seemed to many to be a vindication of the right of all three estates to participate in valid legislation, and therefore to be the most important constitutional advance of the reign. I should prefer rather to accept the more refined explanation of the act which Mr. G. T. Lapsley has recently advanced.[1] Mr. Lapsley suggests that this enunciation of principle was not meant to extend to all legislation, but only to such fundamental constitutional changes as the ordainers had aimed at. If the men of Edward's reign could distinguish between the obedience due to the office and that due to the person of the king, they were surely intelligent enough to grasp the distinction between ordinary legislation and a fundamental law. It was reserved for comparatively modern times in England to consider the same method adequate for passing a private act, and carrying out a constitutional revolution.

More important than these theorisings are the solid facts that the York parliament of 1322 was not only a full parliament of lords, clergy and commons, but that it even contained for the first time representatives of the commons of Wales. Even now, however, the commons were sent home after less than three weeks, leaving the magnates in session for six weeks longer. Yet the precedents in favour of popular representation were too strong to be further resisted. The next epoch-making assembly, the parliament of January 1327, wherein the work of 1322 was undone, witnessed again the solemn participation of all three estates, including even the Welsh representatives, in the first formal deposition of a king by legislative act. It is not too much to say then that one result of the reign of Edward II, was the establishment of the practice of regarding only those parliaments as true parliaments, which contained representatives of the commons. It is true that the commons were still in the background; that in many matters of importance they were never consulted at all, and

1. *Eng. Hist. Review*, xxviii, 118—124.

that they were,—mainly, I imagine, to save expense—got rid of at the earliest possible moment. I cannot, however, subscribe to the doctrine that in the early fourteenth century the commons were not yet a part of parliament, but rather an accidental appendage to it, brought together for purely formal and ceremonial purposes. The real distinction between the magnates and the commons seems rather to be, that the latter were not considered to have any natural voice in the problems of administration and government, in which the magnates were the undoubted sole advisers of the crown.

We can trace Despenser's influence in matters of more practical importance than vague enunciations of insincere and premature theory. We see it rather in the care taken that the undoubted improvements brought about by the ordinances should not be jeopardized, when the ordinances as such were repealed. Vital in this relation is the remarkable series of "establishments" accepted by the parliament which repealed the ordinances.[1] By virtue of these, such things as the ameliorations in the forest law, and the limitations of the jurisdiction of the court officers, legalized during Edward I's last years, the provisions as to sheriffs of the statute of Lincoln of 1316, and many similar practical reforms still remained English law. We see the same spirit still more clearly in the radical reforms of household and chamber, chancery and exchequer, which will be the subject of our next chapter, and which were only seriously taken in hand, after the triumph of the courtier element put reforming specialists in the places so long claimed by conservative and sluggish baronial nominees. We can also detect a certain amount of the same radical spirit in some other miscellaneous reforms, which I shall have to lump together in summary fashion in my last two chapters.

The Despensers then remained reformers until the end. How then can we account for the universal odium which they excited, and for the suddenness and completeness

1. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 456-7; *C. C. R., 1318-23*, pp. 557-8. Compare Stubbs, *Cons. Hist.*, ii, 370.

of their fall? For one thing Englishmen of the fourteenth century loved neither reforms nor reformers, especially such reformers as made their radical policy a cloak for their personal ambitions. Yet I should not like to say that the Despensers' reforming policy was altogether lacking in sincerity, even though it is easy to admit that many of their reforms were sketched out on paper rather than carried out, even in the imperfect measure in which any mediæval law was really executed. The reason is rather to be sought in the conflict of personal ambitions in the king's environment, the incompetence of the monarch, and the self-defeating greediness of many of his most conspicuous ministers. Most of all, however, is the explanation to be found in the revival of the Despenser plan of a mighty marcher lordship, now that the obstacles which had prevented its earlier realisation were so dramatically removed.

It may be accounted for moderation for the younger Despenser that, when his father became earl of Winchester, he never gave effect to his earlier ambition to be styled earl of Gloucester. The reason may partly be that experience had shewn the lord of Glamorgan that men dreaded the appearance of power more than its reality. But I am rather inclined to base it upon the fact that earl of Gloucester was a title too limited to express the fulness of his power, and that he was biding his time to win some more grandiose dignity, such as that which his rival secured a few years later when he caused himself to be styled earl of the march of Wales.[1] A title limited to a single county was inadequate to express the territorial position in Wales and its march enjoyed by Despenser between 1322 and 1326. The stages of this process are too elaborate to be explained here, but I hope that before long they may be worked out in detail.[2] It will be enough now to add that Despenser at

1. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 343 : "et talis comitatus nunquam prius fuit nominatus in regno Angliae."

2. I must express my indebtedness for the facts in this paragraph to the degree thesis of my pupil, Mr. Harold Kay, B.A., on the *Marcher Lordships of Wales in the first half of the Fourteenth Century*, which I hope he will soon find time to work up for publication.

once got back all the lands that he had lost in 1320-1, and that to these, enormous additions were soon made. Gower fell to him, soon after John Mowbray was slain, fighting for earl Thomas at Boroughbridge.[1] The shares of Audley and Amory in the Gloucester inheritance were secured for him by Audley's forfeiture and Amory's death. The forfeiture of another "contrariant," John Gifford, put in the king's hands the lordship of Yskennin, with its castle of Carreg Cennin. This was now granted to Despenser, and resulted in his establishment in the district between the Towy and the sea. Along with Gower, Yskennin bridged over the gap between his old lordships of Cantrev Mawr and Glamorgan.[2] The grant of Yskennin was the more valuable since it was to be administered by Hugh with the same ample franchise enjoyed by him in Glamorgan.[3] A parallel eastward extension of his sphere of influence was obtained by the grant to him for life by the king's brother, Thomas, earl of Norfolk, of the honour of Chepstow, and all the old Bigod lands beyond the Severn.[4]

What Despenser did not hold directly he administered as guardian. Several of the greatest marcher lordships had now fallen to minors, and royal favour soon gave him the custody of many of these, including the lands of the young Lawrence Hastings, which comprised not only the Hastings lordships of Cilgerran and Abergavenny, but also the great Pembroke palatinate which he had recently acquired as one of the coheirs of earl Aymer.[5] Moreover the elder Despenser, earl of Winchester, obtained possession of the Lincoln lordships of Denbigh, Rhos and Rhuvoniog, the discredited Alice of Lacy and her second husband, Eubulo Lestrange, being forced to yield these fragments of earl Thomas's possessions to his mighty supplanters.[6] Thus Despenser ruled over all south Wales from Milford Haven and Cilgerran to Chepstow and Abergavenny. There the

1. *C. Chart. R.*, iii, 448.
2. *Ib.*, iii, 450.
3. *C. P. R.*, *1321-4*, pp. 245-6; *C. Chart. R.*, iii, 448.
4. *C. P. R.*, *1321-4*, p. 341; *ib.*, *1324-7*, p. 52.
5. *C. C. R.*, *1323-7*, pp. 288-9.
6. *Ib.*, *1318-23*, p. 620. Compare *C. Chart. R.*, iii, 448.

only region outside his direct sway was a little district round Carmarthen, still ruled by the king's sheriff of that shire, and the adjacent lordship of Kidwelly, which was still retained by Henry of Lancaster. North of this, Brecon was in the king's hands by reason of the minority of earl Humphrey's heir. Even in northern and central Wales there was only one strong marcher lord remaining. This was the earl of Arundel, lord of Clun and Oswestry, who, however, was appeased by the office of justice of Wales, and by the custody of a large share of the Mortimer lands. There was enough in all this to revive the jealousies which had already once destroyed the Despensers' power. But it is a testimonial to Despenser's intelligence that, after 1327, his supplanter Mortimer undoubtedly borrowed his methods, and went one better than he in his efforts to build up a mighty power in Wales and its march.

If the ambition of the Despensers was the ultimate cause of the fall of Edward II, fuel was added to the flame of discontent by the collapse of foreign policy, the French war and forfeiture of Gascony, the insubordination of the bishopric-hunting royal clerks, the eager scramble for wealth and power, and the grave disorders and unpunished acts of aggression which accompanied these developments. The personal wrongs of the queen, the greediness which sequestrated her estates,[1] the fatuousness which sent her to France and allowed Mortimer of Wigmore to escape from prison, brought about the last great crisis of the reign. I have no need to dwell upon the incidents of the fall of Edward II which Stubbs has worked out with admirable mastery.[2] It proved as light a task in 1326 to overthrow Edward and the Despensers as it had been easy to effect the other superficial revolutions of this reign. It bears upon what I have stressed already that Edward fled from his wife and her paramour into the Welsh dominion which the

1. This was on 18 Sept. 1324; *Foedera*, ii, 569. The queen was put on an allowance of 8 marks a day "pro expensis hospicii sui," and of 1,000 marks a year "pro omnimodis aliis expensis"; *Issue Roll*, no. 210, *18 E. II, Mich. t.*, m. 14.

2. *Introduction to Chronicles of Edward I and Edward II*, ii, xci—cii.

younger Hugh had been establishing. The utter failure of the lord of south Wales to resist Mortimer in his own chosen ground illustrates the futility of all the laborious efforts of a personal ambition that strove, but strove in vain, to run athwart the natural course of history. After the fall of Edward II, Despenser's dreams are only noteworthy as shewing to Mortimer the road to a similar aggregation of Welsh marcher lands. Yet Mortimer's ambition was almost as fleeting as that of Despenser's. If the policy of the aggregation of great groups of marcher lordships, thus initiated, has any permanent importance, it is because it prepared the way for the transference of the march to the direct rule of the crown, which was consummated in 1399 and in 1461, when the heir of the Lancasters and the heir of the Mortimers, successively mounting the throne, added their marcher lands to the direct possessions of the English monarchy. In the preliminaries of this process lies another important feature of the reign of Edward II.

V.

THE ADMINISTRATIVE REFORMS OF EDWARD II.

(1) The Methods and Authors of the Reforms.

Great administrative changes were a special feature of the reign of Edward II. Administrative reforms and re-adjustments were going on, more or less, all through the reign. There were even reforms during the long period of the struggle for the ordinances; but these were, so far as conscious, more largely efforts to buttress the court against baronial attacks than honest attempts to improve the machinery of government for its own sake. Apart from these, the only deliberate change of this period that has any permanent importance was the separation of the custody of the privy seal from the general administration of the wardrobe, and the consequential growth of an office of the privy seal. In 1318, however, we have a formal policy of reform enunciated in the household ordinance of York, which followed up the purgation of the *familia regis*, already effected, by a vigorous attempt to overhaul the system on which it was constructed. The subsequent household ordinance of 1323, carried the same process still further. The final steps were the result of the exchequer ordinances of 1323-6, and in particular of the ordinance of 1324. The result of these enactments was to establish the royal household as it existed for the rest of the middle ages, and in most respects as it continued until Burke's economical reform in 1782. By a series of parallel enactments the exchequer system was reformed only less drastically than the wardrobe. Here the great date is 1323, but the supplementary edict of 1324, and the final exchequer ordinance of 1326 are only less important.

In this drastic re-casting of two of the three great offices

of administration, the method of reform was in both cases the same. The changes were effected by ordinances drawn up by the king in council. We are in fact drifting towards the famous distinction between an ordinance in council and a statute in parliament. Already administrative matters were appropriately dealt with by an ordinance, even when, as was the case with the York ordinance of 1318, parliament was actually sitting at the time, and was certain to be sympathetic with the changes proposed by the council. Even to revolutionaries the king's government and its reformation was a matter, not even for the magnates, still less for the commons, but for the king himself and the narrow circle of his permanent advisers.

The policy which inspired the reforms is as clear as the method by which they were effected. Before 1318 they were either the result of the baronial effort to enforce the ordinances, or they followed from the attempts of the *curiales* to entrench themselves more securely in the last strongholds of the household. After the drastic purging of the court in 1318 the spirit of the ordinances prevailed, for at least the next three years, and it was then that the period of systematic reformation begins. What is most remarkable, however, was that the reaction of 1322 hardly retarded the reforming movement. If we may give the chief credit of the reform of the household to Pembroke and Badlesmere, the completion of their plans was carried out, after Badlesmere had fallen on the scaffold and Pembroke had died on his last embassy to France. Moreover, exchequer reform was only attacked with any seriousness after the triumph of the Despensers in 1322, and was persevered in until the very end of the reign. There is nothing astonishing in intelligent champions of a strong monarchy being greater reformers than a conservative aristocracy. This has often been the case throughout English history. It is, however, enough to show that the Despensers and their followers were not mere creatures of court favour, but politicians with ideas, which, however

unpopular among the magnates, were valuable and attractive in themselves. It would be unfair, however, to give any party the sole credit for these changes. As under Henry III, court and baronage did not greatly differ in their methods, when they approached in a serious spirit a practical problem of administrative reform. What is astonishing, however, is that the men, who had repealed the ordinances, carried out so many of their innovations in the spirit of the ordinances, and often gave effect to the very letter of the legislation which they had so solemnly annulled.

If we cannot claim any special measure of zeal for any one party, still less can we set on a pedestal any individual reformer among the politicians of that age. The credit for the amelioration of the household is to be divided among many, among whom Badlesmere and the younger Despenser, archbishop Melton, the two keepers Northburgh and Waltham, and the controller Robert Baldock must certainly be included. The lion's share of the improvements in the exchequer may clearly be assigned to bishop Stapeldon, who, reappointed treasurer in May 1322,[1] remained in office until 3 July 1325, and was therefore treasurer when the ordinances of 1323 and 1324 were issued. But Stapeldon, one of the most puzzling characters of the reign, was no mere ministerial bishop. During his three years of office he left the exchequer for long periods to the care of his deputy, Sir Walter Norwich, and his absence was on his own as well as on the king's affairs.[2] However busy with affairs of state, Stapeldon was always extremely active in the administration of his diocese. Not even his zeal as a bishop saved him from the illwill of the chroniclers. His supersession by archbishop Melton was clearly a popular act.[3] Nevertheless Melton's policy was not

1. The appointment was significantly "per regem," though parliament was still sitting; *C. P. R., 1321-4*, p. 112.

2. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, p. 613. *Receipt Roll*, no. 241, *16 E. II, Mich. t.*, speaks of his "recessus" from York on 8 Dec. 1322, though Norwich became his deputy on 3 Nov. Norwich was again acting in 1324; *ib.*, no. 250, *17 E. II, Easter t.*

3. Malmesbury, p. 283, emphasizes this. Stapeldon, he says, was "ultra modum cupidus et durante officio suo vehementer dives effectus."

different from his predecessor's. It was while Melton was treasurer that the third exchequer ordinance of 1326 was promulgated, and this was in no wise the least important of the series. Nor must we forget that the apostate Lancastrian knight, Sir Roger Bellers, also had his place among the exchequer reformers.[1] But the strongest and most active personality in the later years of the reign was, beyond doubt, Robert Baldock. Keeper of the privy seal from 1320, his elevation, on 20 August, 1323, to the chancellorship, in succession to bishop Salmon, marks the flood tide of reaction at its height, though he retained office till he fell with his master. Able as he was, he was neither respected nor trusted. What authority was to be expected from a chancellor for whom all the good offices of his master could not procure the humblest bishopric? Chancellor for three years, Baldock, when he succumbed to a fate, as cruel, but probably better deserved than that of Stapeldon, still remained simple archdeacon of Middlesex. The chroniclers look upon Baldock, Stapeldon and the two Despensers as chiefly responsible for the fall of Edward II.

Baldock's successors in the wardrobe were men of little personal importance. When Roger Northburgh, treasurer of the wardrobe, got his bishopric, he gave way to Roger Waltham, whose advent to office on 1 May 1322, coincided with the supreme triumph of the Despensers. In October 1323, Robert Wodehouse, Baldock's successor as controller, stepped into Waltham's place, and by a timely desertion of his master, managed to retain his post until 1328. More loyal was the new controller, Robert Holden, who followed Edward to his last refuge in Wales, and only lost power on his capture by Mortimer in Nov. 1326. The lay officers of the household seem to have been overshadowed by the chamberlain. Neither Gilbert Pecché, nor Simon Dryby, nor Richard Amory, the stewards between 1322 and 1325,

1. See later, p. 199. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 310, calls Bellers the king's principal councillor.

had great personal weight, while the last steward, Thomas Blount, is only remembered by his symbolic breaking of his official wand which declared the reign to be over. Altogether there is little to be got from studying the ministerial changes of this period. The most significant feature is in the appointment of magnates on the king's side to some of the great dignities. Thus Arundel was, from 1323 onwards, justice of Wales; and Pembroke and Winchester were, in succession, keepers of the forests south of Trent. In general, however, the ministerial history of the last years of the reign strengthens the impression that the real work was done, not so much by the higher dignitaries, as by the obscure clerks and knights whose personality is now so difficult to grasp.

Let us turn from the methods and the men to the changes themselves. Here there is some little difficulty as to the best way of going to work. The reforms of the different departments of state are only intelligible in their relation to each other, and yet clearness requires that we must take the various offices separately. To do this with any effectiveness will involve an occasional repetition, for which I shall have to apologise. With this caution I shall attempt to speak, firstly, of the changes in the household departments; secondly, of those in the chancery; and, lastly, of those in the exchequer.

(2) The Household Reforms.[1]

A. The Privy Seal.

Reforms of a sort in the household departments were going on all through the reign. Though the general attack on the courtiers, made in the ordinances,

1. The section dealing with the reforms of the household is in substance a summary of the conclusions which I have arrived at in the more elaborate work, which I hope soon to publish, on the history of the wardrobe, chamber and small seals. The authorities upon which it is based I shall discuss at some length in that work, and I therefore feel it enough to make a general reference to it, rather than quote my sources on this occasion. Many of the details are based upon the household ordinances, printed in the appendix to this work.

failed for nearly seven years to effect its purpose, one important permanent change was brought about in the household as the direct result of the provisions of the ordainers. We have spoken already[1] of the demand of the ordainers of 1311 that there should be a "suitable clerk" appointed to keep the privy seal, and that this clerk should, with other great household dignitaries, be appointed in parliament. The result of this was that by 1312 we have in Roger of Northburgh such a "suitable clerk," assigned to keep the privy seal, specially and personally responsible for the employment of the instrument of the domestic chancery, and liable to be called to account if the king went beyond the narrow limits, laid down by the ordinances, for the use of the privy seal. It is clear that, along with this keepership of the seal, went the custody of the household archives and responsibility for the preparation of the numerous writs and rolls, drawn up under the privy seal. Accordingly it was necessary that Northburgh should have round him a staff of clerks, who were inevitably soon differentiated from the ordinary wardrobe clerks, and were almost at once spoken of as the clerks of the privy seal. I shall soon speak further of this office of the privy seal, which I regard as a direct result of the ordinances of 1311.

There were ebbs and flows before the separation of the keepership of the privy seal from the controllership of the wardrobe became permanent. Roger Northburgh, the first known keeper of the privy seal who was not also controller, held office from 1312 to 1316. During that period the capture of keeper and seal, clerks and records of the seal, at Bannockburn, suspended for a short time the use of the instrument, without damaging the routine which its existence involved. For a time the king used, as a substitute for the lost privy seal, the privy seal of queen Isabella, and, as we shall see, the development of a new domestic seal, the "secret seal," was stimulated by this accident. Before long, however, Northburgh came back from captivity and

1. Above, pp. 98-9.

resumed his interrupted functions, and a ransomed knight was allowed to bring home with him to England the captured seal itself. But the separation of keepership and controllership was a hated thing, because it was imposed by the ordinances. Accordingly in 1316, when Edward felt himself strong enough to flout the ordainers, he put Northburgh in Melton's place as keeper of the wardrobe, but once more combined the keepership of the privy seal and the controllership of the wardrobe in the person of Thomas Charlton, brother of the chamberlain, John Charlton, lord of Powys. Little comfort came to the king from this, since the Charltons went over to the Pembrokian party. Accordingly in 1318 Charlton was continued keeper of the privy seal, but out of regard to the ordinances a new controller was appointed.

By the York ordinance of 1318 the "office of the privy seal" was henceforth to remain a separate sub-department of the household. The keeper had equal status, allowances for food, lodging, and robes, with the controller and the cofferer, and inferior, among the household clerks, only to those of the keeper of the wardrobe. If he only had wages "until he was advanced," it was because the king seldom paid a clerk a salary, when he could provide for him more cheaply by ecclesiastical preferment. Under him were the four "clerks who write for the privy seal." But the department was not yet autonomous. The wages of these subordinates were fixed by the steward and keeper of the household. Yet the distinct privy seal organisation was kept up, even when Robert Baldock, appointed keeper of the seal in 1320, became, a few months later, controller of the wardrobe as well as keeper of the privy seal, after the ancient fashion. When Baldock left the wardrobe in 1323 to become chancellor, the differentiation of the two offices had become permanent. It followed from the separation that the keeper of the privy seal, now gradually becoming an important political officer, was destined, like the chancellor a few generations earlier, to drift out of close relations with

the court. Even Northburgh had been constantly absent from court with his privy seal; his successor resided still less regularly. Not only did the barons approve of this; the king soon accepted the inevitable, and giving up the office of privy seal, as no longer under his direct control, established a new domestic chancery in the revived chamber. While the privy seal became, under Edward III, a seal of state, a new personal seal for the king had been found in the "secret seal" of the chamber.

Some remarkable results followed from these developments. Of the revival of the chamber I shall speak later on, but I should like here to emphasise the fact that, as a result of the separation of the privy seal from the household, and its development as an office of state, England had, after the middle of the 14th century, two independent secretarial and sealing departments of state, in addition to the third secretarial and sealing office, which, we shall see, grew up to supply the wants of the household.[1] To these we must of course add the exchequer, which also had its seal, its secretariat and its chancellor *eo nomine*, since the end of the twelfth century. This growth of four separate "chanceries," to use the best mediæval word for any secretarial department, was the more complete since the great seal, the privy seal, the secret seal and the exchequer seal were each served by a separate staff of clerks. Each constituted a distinct and self-contained department, out of any fixed relation to the other secretarial offices, and jealously preserving its own independent existence and separate traditions. A very different result followed from that which obtained in most western countries, and notably in France, the one country of the west with which England had constant and intimate relations, whether of friendship or of hostility. Now in France there were several royal seals, as in England, though not quite so many seals as in this

1. Even under Edward I there was a tendency in this direction, for Fleta tells us that the keeper of the privy seal, that is of course, in 1290, the controller of the wardrobe, was independent of the chancellor, being the only keeper of a royal seal in England outside his purview.

country. In France, however, there was only one secretariat, the royal chancery, controlled by the chancellor.[1] The French *clercs du secré*, the counterpart of our clerks of the privy seal, first appear in records in 1316, just at the very moment when Edward II's privy seal office was coming into being. In numbers, emoluments, dignity, the four clerks of Edward II's privy seal correspond exactly enough to the three *notaires suivants le roi* of Philip V. In the next generation, however, the secretariat of the French secret seal became infinitely more important than the narrow and self-contained department of the English privy seal. This was inevitably the case, since the French secret seal now acquired a much wider scope than the English privy seal. Both seals alike lost their original private character and became official, but while the English privy seal degenerated into becoming one link in a long chain of forms, the French secret seal took the place of the great seal, as the regular means of authenticating an important branch of the public royal correspondence. While English "letters close" required the great seal, French letters close were habitually sealed with the *sceau du secret*. This was possible without breaking up unity of administration, because, since the days of Philip the Fair, the French kings possessed a single centralised clerical department, served by officials of a common type, subject in all cases to the chancellor as their official head, and soon developing a strong corporate tradition. This was the great corporation of royal notaries and secretaries, of whose power and influence French administrative history is so full. While in England each office had an independent staff of its own, the French system was to assign members of a single notarial corporation to perform secretarial functions in the various offices of state. But while thus told off to write for the chancery, the *chambre des comptes*, or the secret seal, the French civil service clerks still remained members

1. For all that follows see P. Morel, *La Grande Chancellerie royale, 1328—1400* (Paris, 1900).

of the single corporate body, and therefore continued subject to the jurisdiction of the chancellor. This characteristic difference of English and French administrative history can be explained by the fact that all the French departments of state remained closely attached to the royal court. The centralising bureaucratic spirit, which, except in the judicial sphere, was so much stronger in France than in England, is largely to be accounted for by the different complexion of French and English political history. The struggle of monarchy and aristocracy in France was fought out normally in the field, and only in exceptional times, like those after Poitiers, in parliaments and councils. In England parliamentary conflict was normal, armed conflict exceptional. Thus the French administration remained royal and domestic, even when it became national and political. It followed that there was no real counterpart in France to that differentiation between the departments of the state and the departments of the household, which the power of the baronage under Edward II was permanently establishing as a central fact of English administrative history. The unity of secretarial organisation in France explains the lateness and the rarity of French departmental seals. Even the *chambre des comptes* had no corporate seal during the whole of the fourteenth century.

Never were French analogies and French methods more appreciated by English administrators than under Edward II. Accordingly, it was only after some experiments in the French direction that the system of separating the privy seal office from the chancery was triumphant. By 1323 the privy seal office, though still in the wardrobe, had acquired a distinct organisation within it. But the chancery itself had only gone "out of court", a generation or two earlier, and it was still, perhaps, an open question whether the co-existence of the seals did, or did not, involve the existence of two chanceries, one for each seal. No sooner was the organisation of the privy seal office complete than the experiment seems to have been consciously tried of intro-

ducing the French fashion of one chancery, or secretariat, for the two seals. The period of these experiments was between 1323 and 1326, when Robert Baldock, whom we remember as controller of the wardrobe and keeper of the privy seal between 1320 and 1323, acted as chancellor. Despite his long connection with the wardrobe, Baldock seems to have definitely tried to subordinate the privy seal office to the chancery. This was, in effect, the reversal of his previous policy of maintaining the privy seal in the wardrobe in the custody of a general wardrobe officer, and therefore in strict separation from the chancery. We have seen that henceforward the offices of keeper of the privy seal and controller of the wardrobe remained permanently in different hands. The natural result of this was the acceptance of the old device of the ordainers of treating the office of the privy seal as a semi-independent secretarial and administrative body. Baldock, however, seems to have gone back on this policy. He now imposed upon the wardrobe a succession of keepers of the privy seal, who had had no previous connection with the royal household. Up to this every official head of the wardrobe, every keeper of the privy seal, had been a promoted *garderobarius*. Each of the three obscure keepers of the privy seal, who held office between 1324 and 1326, had been, before his appointment, clerk of the chancery itself. To send a chancery clerk to keep the privy seal was but a first step towards the amalgamation of the office of the privy seal with the office of the chancery. Had Baldock's policy become established, there might well have resulted a unity of the secretarial offices in England as in France. The privy seal would have become not a small independent chancery, restricted in sphere yet complete in itself, but a branch of the great chancery under the high chancellor. Baldock was, however, among the most hated of Edward II's later ministers, perhaps because fourteenth century English opinion disliked all innovators. Like the other great reformer, bishop Stapeldon, he was done to death by the London mob during

the troubles that attended the fall of Edward II. With him perished all his schemes. This future secured for the office of the privy seal its independence of the chancery. In the next generation it also became independent of the household. The result was to limit its functions and prevent it attaining any really great importance. By the fifteenth century the privy seal became an additional otiose wheel in an over-complicated administrative machine, and in modern times the seal and the office have been abandoned as impediments to speedy and efficient administration. All that remains of the privy seal is a sinecure ministerial dignity.

B. The Chamber.

In the course of the reign the king's chamber, which had vegetated in obscurity for some eighty years, attained once more a position of importance, worthy of the original institution from which both the exchequer and the wardrobe had risen. The beginnings of this reorganisation of the chamber took place in the earliest years of Edward II's reign, but the movement became much more important after the passing of the ordinances.

The revival of the chamber under Edward II cannot but be regarded as the king's direct answer to the attempts of the barons since 1300 to secure for the exchequer the absolute control of all the king's finances. At the very beginning of Edward II's reign two great forfeitures swelled the king's scanty resources. These were the confiscated estates of the disgraced treasurer, Walter Langton, and the much more extensive temporalities of the knights Templar, which, taken into the king's hands while the pope and the council were settling the fate of the order, remained to a large extent under the royal control, many years after the pope and council had assigned them to the knights of St. John. A certain proportion of the lands of both Langton and the Templars was put into the hands of keepers, who were instructed to account for them, not in the

exchequer, but in the king's chamber. The new departure was made very cautiously at first, but soon began to assume larger dimensions. Accordingly, the chamberlains—Gaveston perhaps, certainly John Charlton and Hugh Despenser the younger—soon had in the chamber an organised office at their disposal. Astute clerks, the first of whom was Ingelard Warley, supplemented the unlettered knights and valets, who mainly officered the chamber when it meant little more than the king's bedroom. The ordainers strove to stay this process by demanding Charlton's exile from court, and by insisting that the issues of the land should be paid and accounted for in the exchequer. On the rare occasions when some show was made of executing the ordinances, a few perfunctory orders were issued that lands, hitherto accounted for in the chamber, should henceforth be accounted for in the exchequer. Unluckily, the desire of the ordainers that the king should "live of his own" led them to acquiesce in the appropriation of certain parts of the royal domain to the support of the household, and induced them to allow the revenues of specific royal manors to be paid directly into the wardrobe. It was but a step from the wardrobe to the chamber, and, as soon as the baronial pressure on the court was reduced, it was an easy thing to revive the system of the appropriation to the chamber, not only of these lands, but of a great many others as well.

As the result the chamber grew immensely in importance in the confused years between Bannockburn and the treaty of Leake. It was easier to widen its scope, since there was so little directly about it in the ordinances. Disregard for a merely domestic office, important only to the king as a man, unwillingness to wound the king's feelings unnecessarily by meddling with a department which concerned the royal privacy and dignity so nearly, may well have combined to make the barons neglect it. Anyhow, the ordainers left the chamber to the king and did not even insist upon the appointment of its head, the chamberlain, in parliament, though in 1318 parliament rectified this omission, as we

have seen, when it confirmed Hugh Despenser in that office. The baronial attack on the courtiers, as a whole, was a very questionable success, and the household, dealt with by the York parliament of 1318, remained as useless, as superfluous, as greedy and as irresponsible as the household of the heyday of Gaveston's influence. But while the barons were besieging to little purpose such outworks of the wardrobe as the marshalsea and the stewardship, the astute *curiales* were successfully building up an innermost keep of royal privilege by their resuscitation of the chamber. It was not likely that this elaborated court organisation, this concentric castle of defence, as deftly articulated as Caerphilly, or Carnarvon, or Coucy, would yield to the casual and unsystematic siege operations of the disorderly and unruly baronage. It was the stronghold, possession of which enabled the younger Despenser to worry his way into court favour and win for himself the highest influence in the state.

These years saw the revival of the chamber at once as a royal privy purse, as a source of "secret" and court expenses, and as virtually withdrawn from all responsibility to the exchequer. The chamber, too, became again a court chancery, the source of writs, letters, administration and sealing, so that it reproduced the characteristic dual aspects, administrative and financial, of the king's wardrobe. Side by side with the privy seal, the seal of the wardrobe, the sometime personal instrument of the king, which the barons aspired to turn, like the great seal, the seal of the chancery, into another seal of state, there now arose a new domestic royal seal, the secret seal, to enable the king still to have some individual and private token of his wishes, independent of the official seals, which were in danger of being used only as the barons directed.

It is a pure accident that the "small seal" of the English kings had become known as the "privy seal." Similar seals had arisen all over western Europe and were almost universally known as "secret seals." Now *secretum* and *privatum* are of course the most absolute synonyms. More-

over, the instrument which English officials called the king's privy seal had engraved upon it *secretum regis Edwardi*. With *secretum* staring in the faces of all who examined an impression of the king's small seal, the wonder is how Englishmen ever came to call it habitually *sigillum privatum* and not *sigillum secretum*. It is not to be marvelled that, in thirteenth and fourteenth century documents alike, this seal was occasionally called the "secret seal." Up to the very end of the thirteenth century "secret seal" and "privy seal" were simply different names for the same thing.

In the latter portion of the reign of Edward I a "secret seal" begins to be mentioned which is perhaps something different from the privy seal. At first this was a small stamp, used for sealing up enclosures that accompanied letters of privy seal, just as when letters of the great seal were despatched along with schedules, rolls and writs, these latter were sent *sub pede sigilli*, "under the foot of the seal." It is quite possible that this secret seal was still only the privy seal, though I am inclined to think that it was something else. However, in the years immediately succeeding the ordinances, we get undoubted traces of a secret seal which was demonstrably different from the privy seal. I have not come across any impressions of this seal, showing its nature and inscription, but the mark of the wax on the parchment shows that it was slightly smaller than the privy seal of the same period.[1] The first letter so authenticated that I have examined is dated 1313. In May 1318 an order under the secret seal has been preserved among the chancery warrants, which instructs Thomas Charlton, whom we know to have been at that date keeper of the privy seal, to draw up a letter under the privy seal. Such letter must clearly have been sealed with a stamp that was different from the privy seal. It is accordingly the first

1. The most accessible material for this investigation is contained in the P. R. O. series of *Chancery Warrants* and the corresponding series of *Exchequer Warrants*, a large proportion of each series consisting of writs of privy and secret seal. The chancery secret seals are mainly contained in *Chancery Warrants*, files 1328-30. See Déprez, *Etudes de diplomatique anglaise*, pp. 73—85.

absolute demonstration that the secret seal of Edward II was an independent instrument. Moreover, there is evidence under Edward III that the secret seal was kept "in the chamber." There is earlier evidence that, before the organisation of the wardrobe, the privy seal had also been the seal of the chamber. There is, moreover, a curious passage in an obscure chronicle of Edward II's reign, which connects in a muddled way this duplication of the king's personal seal with the falling of the privy seal into the king of Scots' hands at Bannockburn, and associates with one of these seals a clerk named Wingfield, whom we know to have been a clerk of the king's chamber.[1] Now the beginnings of the secret seal occur, as we have seen, absolutely at the same time, and that time the period immediately after the ordinances. On all these grounds I feel justified in the conjecture that the secret seal was from its origin the seal of the chamber. This is the more likely since the development of Edward II's chamber system was clearly suggested to his *familiares* by the great extension of the chamber and the chamberlain's office in other lands, and notably in France. In the year 1312, the year before Edward II's secret seal can first be proved to be other than his privy seal, we learn that the secret seal of his father-in-law, Philip the Fair, was kept by one of his chamberlains.[2] And in the distinction already existing in the French court between the *sceau de secret* which, as in England, was becoming officialised, and the king's personal *cachet*, or signet, we get exactly the same differentiation of the personal royal seal into two, which henceforth also characterises English history.

The importance of the chamber was much increased after the triumph of the court party in 1322. The system of reserving certain lands to the chamber, and exempting them,

1. The continuation of Trivet's *Annals*, printed only in A. Hall's edition of Trivet, p. 14 (Oxford, 1721-2).

2. Morel, *Grande Chancellerie*, p. 258; compare the more sceptical view in Giry, *Manuel de Diplomatique*, p. 653. The text of Bardin's chronicle, our source for this much contested statement, is quoted in *Histoire Générale du Languedoc*, t. x. pref., col. 30 (ed. Privat).

at least in the first instance, from the jurisdiction of the exchequer, was now openly developed on a large scale. An opportunity for this was afforded by the vast estates forfeited to the crown by reason of the treason of Lancaster, Hereford and the other stalwarts who had fought at Boroughbridge. A large proportion of these "contrariants'" lands in the king's hand were now annexed to the chamber, and their keepers were ordered to account, not in the exchequer, but in the chamber. Such forfeitures were not destined to remain long in the king's hands, and the typical chamber manors are rather to be sought in escheats, that from motives of policy were to be regarded as permanently incorporated in the royal domain. Such was notably the Fors inheritance of Holderness which Edward I had permanently appropriated for the crown. Burstwick was in those days the *caput* of the crown possessions in Holderness and perhaps the most typical of chamber manors. It is now an obscure little place, with the faintest suggestion of the remains of the manor house, where Edward held his court, and with a church that compares very unfavourably with the magnificent structures that, in the neighbouring parishes, still tower over the flat fields and dull villages of Holderness to testify to its ancient greatness. But the best features of the church of Burstwick belong to the reign of Edward II; and the fair image of a young king, preserved as an ornamented corbel of a fourteenth century chapel, may not impossibly be an attempt to represent in stone the king who first annexed Burstwick to his chamber, and made it his most usual northern home. In other cases also chamber manors were specially attractive as places of royal residence. Such a chamber manor was King's Langley, in Hertfordshire, Edward II's favourite home in the south, where the body of the beloved Gaveston reposed in the chapel of the convent of Friars Preachers, erected to enshrine that precious dust. It was a matter of policy, then, to withdraw the king's chief abiding places from the national jurisdiction, and submit them to the special personal

authority of the sovereign. In modern times a king would attain the same end by reason of the distinction between the private and official estate of the crown with which the middle ages were unfamiliar. Langley and Burstwick stood to Edward II, as Osborne and Balmoral to queen Victoria, or as Sandringham to Edward VII.

Chamber organisation now grew apace. Chamber accounts survive in the Public Record Office after 1322 for the rest of Edward II's reign. The chamber, though independent of the wardrobe, accounted at that time to the exchequer, and the exchequer has luckily retained some of the accounts thus tendered to it for verification. They reveal to us a whole hierarchy of chamber officers, receivers and controllers, stewards and auditors, knights and clerks, gentle and simple, influential and obscure. They show that the chamber had a revenue of its own, though that income was still small, and that both in its receipts and expenses it constantly overlapped the wardrobe. Moreover, they show Despenser, the chamberlain and therefore head of the chamber, constantly exercising a personal influence on the details of its work. I feel pretty sure that this revived chamber system was a conscious result of the Despensers' policy, and that by it they hoped to retain one centre of household authority, untouched by the reforms which, as we shall see, tended to limit the influence of other branches of the royal household. Perhaps the best proof of this is that after the fall of Edward II, the chamber lands and accounts entirely disappear. They were revived after 1330, when Edward III began to govern as well as reign. For a time this king stressed his chamber even more than his father had ever done, refusing, for instance, to allow it to account to the exchequer, and instituting an additional seal for specifically chamber business in the "griffin seal." These arrangements did not, however, last long. They collapsed almost entirely before the financial embarrassments of a king, compelled to wage continual war for his "heritage of France." After about 1355 the chamber, as restored

by Edward II and revived by Edward III, became a shadow of its former self. The chamber lands were transferred to the exchequer; the griffin seal disappeared, and, if the secret seal still remained, it took a new shape as the king's *signet*, the custody of which was henceforth in the hands of the king's secretary, who ceased speedily to be a chamber officer, having a department of his own in the signet office. From these modest beginnings arose the secretaryships of state of the Tudors, and all the modern administrative departments that centre round the secretaryships. Thus history again repeated itself. When the old court offices became ineffective, they gave rise to the signet office and the secretariat of state, which from the Tudor period stepped into the position of the mediæval chancery. Thus the most characteristic modern offices of state arose, like the mediæval departments, from the king's domestic establishment.

C. The Wardrobe.

Having dealt with the privy seal and the chamber, we must go back to the wardrobe in the narrower sense. The establishment of a privy seal office, and still more the revival of the chamber and the beginnings of the secret seal, must have tended to limit the functions of the wardrobe proper, by lopping off from it spheres of work with which it had previously been specially concerned. The same tendency was strengthened by the changes brought about by the York ordinance of 1318, and the later exchequer and wardrobe ordinances, which were consequential to it. In the minds of the men who drew up the ordinance of 1318, there was no intention of extending, or strengthening, the authority of the wardrobe. Their chief object was to purge the household of its unworthy members, and to take precautions to prevent the revival in the future of the disorders of the *familia regis*, against which the ordainers had fought so long, and so unsuccessfully. The best way to do this was by a rigid definition of the constitution and functions of the

household. Both the disorder and the strength of the king's household had in the past been derived from the same source. This was the absence of precedent and definition, which allowed every official to work for his own and the king's interests in his own way. Thus in the heart of the fourteenth century there still survived the primitive undifferentiated household establishment of our early kings, in which every royal officer was jack of all trades, administrator, judge, collector, book-keeper, paymaster, store-keeper, auditor, surveyor, scribe, secretary, as occasion demanded. What had perhaps seemed in the past to be the strength of the household now seemed to the reformers its weakness. Up to this point, they tell us in their preamble, the officers of the household had always been in arrears, and, "uncertain what they should do and what they should take of the king by reason of their offices, so that no control could be exercised over these offices, nor the officers charged as they ought, to the great damage and dishonour of the king."[1] This suggests that the extraordinary arrears into which the household accounts had fallen, referred to in an earlier chapter, were regarded as inherent in the disorderliness of the household system, and were not solely the result of the financial embarrassments which Edward II had inherited from his father. To remedy this the ordinances entered with great detail into the duties and emoluments, of every member of the household. It is for that reason that the ordinance was a much longer and more elaborate document than the last household ordinance which still survives, namely the ordinance of Edward I of 1279.[2] Innovations were not aimed at. The object of the reformers was to maintain the existing office under conditions that made further disorders more difficult. Their goal, then, was definition rather than reformation. The trend of all their enactments was to emphasize the need of division of labour

1. Appendix I., p. 270. Only the domestic work of the household is emphasized in this document; the political side is ignored.
2. I propose to print this ordinance in my book on the wardrobe.

in every state department. The plain reason for this was the fact that it was impossible to call a royal officer to account for doing his work ill, so long as there was no certainty what his true work was. Subject to this limitation, we are not to expect innovations in documents of this character.

Even the elaborate definition in the ordinance of the functions of the office of the privy seal, of which I have already spoken, was doubtless little more than the statement of the existing usage. But it is worth while to notice here that the duties of the controller are defined with special particularity, and that he is given such an immense amount of detailed supervision of the household and its accounts, that he could have had little leisure or opportunity to concern himself with general business of state. The same spirit of definition and limitation marks the provisions of the ordinances relative to the great wardrobe. Here again we have complaints of "the great damage and loss which had arisen from the wasting and ill-spending of things that came for the household by delivery of the clerk of the great wardrobe, for want of setting down the certainty of the price every day upon the account of the household." [1] To remedy this the clerk, or keeper, of the great wardrobe was to deliver the commodities in his keeping by indenture, specifying details and prices. In other ways also, the keeper of the wardrobe was to keep a tight hand over his subordinate. As some compensation, the clerk of the great wardrobe was allowed more authority over his own staff, which included the armourers, tailors, tentmakers, and other craftsmen of the household. Though stress was laid upon his residence in court, the exigencies of the great wardrobe office now required it to maintain permanent headquarters in the city of London, so that, even earlier than the office of the privy seal, the great wardrobe began to acquire an independent status.

So much for the ordinance of 1318. It was supplemented

1. Appendix I., p. 275.

by a second household ordinance, issued at York in June, 1323, about the same time as the first reforming ordinance for the exchequer. Both the York household ordinances seem to me so valuable that I have published the French text as an appendix to this book, and need therefore say the less about them now. For our present purpose, it is enough to mention that the ordinance of 1323 is mainly taken up with pleas for the reform of the system of drawing upon, and tendering, the accounts of the household.[1] The details show that the reforms of 1318 had been but little acted upon, and the interesting thing is that here also the policy of 1318 remains the policy of 1323. The semi-independent "foreign" officers who account in the wardrobe, such as the clerk of the great wardrobe and the butler, are to render their accounts twice or thrice a year. There is clear evidence that the delays in tendering the general wardrobe accounts were not yet over, and it was particularly complained that the last year's account was very diffuse, and that the staff was inadequate to grapple with it. Studied in connexion with the exchequer ordinance of 1324,[2] it enables us to state shortly what remedies were devised to prevent such difficulties recurring in the future.

The remedy of 1324 was this. The wardrobe was to be relieved by the various semi-autonomous branches being pushed still further on the road towards independence. The keeper of the wardrobe has been "charged with many foreign accounts, whereof he can have no knowledge, so that thereby the account has been delayed and put in arrear."[3] Henceforth the clerk of the great wardrobe was to account to the exchequer, and, like the keeper of the wardrobe, was to receive his funds direct from the national exchequer, his chief subordination to the wardrobe being the strict control which the keeper still exercised over him in details. Similarly, the king's butler was to account at the exchequer, and only that part of the wines

1. Appendix I., pp. 314—318.
2. This is printed, like the other exchequer ordinances, in Hubert Hall's *Red Book of the Exchequer*, iii, 908—929.
3. *Ib.*, p. 908.

dealt with by him, which was used for the royal household, was to be charged to the keeper of the wardrobe. In the like fashion the receivers of stores and victuals were to account directly to the exchequer, "so that the keeper of the wardrobe shall not meddle with such victuals, except such as shall be received for the entertainment of our household."[1] The same was to hold good of the keepers of the king's horses, the clerk of the hanaper of the chancery, and the messengers who went on royal embassies and missions. The effect of this was to bring all these departments into direct relations with the exchequer, which soon made their relation to the wardrobe exceedingly nominal.

The great result of these changes was the separation of the "foreign accounts" from the pipe rolls in which they had hitherto been imbedded, and their separate enrolment by themselves. For our immediate purpose, however, the most important consequence was that these innovations relieved the wardrobe proper of a large amount of its national work, and tied it down much more closely to the regulation and administration of the affairs of the royal household. It is significant then, that the exchequer ordinances of these years speak repeatedly of the wardrobe as the "wardrobe of the king's household," the phrase which a generation or two later became the ordinary method of describing it.

I do not say that all these changes were rigidly carried out, but they were sufficiently executed to make a real difference in the future history of the wardrobe. It is true that under Edward III, the early years of the Hundred Years War saw a recrudescence of political and martial wardrobe activity on a large scale, but it dried up before the hostility of parliaments, the stubborn prejudices of the exchequer, the growing complexity of the machine of state, and the increasing tendency to distinguish between the king's private and public capacities. Thus the reign of Edward II, which marks the culmination of wardrobe activities from

1. *Red Book of the Exchequer*, iii, 918.

one point of view, marks also the beginning of its decline. Continuing under Edward III, this declension went on so rapidly in the second half of the fourteenth century, that Richard II made much less conscious effort to exalt his prerogative through the traditional channels of household organisation, than did any of the three Edwards. Thus, in the long run the constitution overshadowed the household. No longer did the clerks of the wardrobe exercise a concurrent jurisdiction with all the great administrative officers of state. They gradually ceased to be administrators, judges, revenue collectors, arrayers and equippers of armies and navies, ambassadors, victuallers, clothiers, and all the rest of it. In the great days of the wardrobe, the wardrobe clerk worked at functions as diversified as those of the most isolated and solitary Indian civilian of the present day, to say nothing of having as his primary duty to attempt to put order into a royal establishment, as vast and disorderly as that of any eastern sultan or rajah. But when he lost this many-sidedness, he lost his influence and importance. After the fourteenth century he was a mere court officer, limited and circumscribed by the dull work of routine and ceremonial. During that same century he took for the last time the lion's share in the government of the country. And the reign which first suggests the marshalling of the forces, which were soon to narrow and restrict his sphere, is the reign of Edward II. It marks, therefore, a turning point in the history of English administration.

(3) The Chancery Reforms.

I have now spoken of the reforms carried out under Edward II in the administrative departments dependent on the court. My next task is to deal with the results of the spirit of administrative reform as it affected the two traditional departments of state, the chancery and the exchequer. Let us treat firstly of the chancery.

The chancery was the office which altered least during the reign of Edward II. There is absolutely no chancery

legislation corresponding to the reforming ordinances which, between 1318 and 1326, changed the face of the wardrobe and the exchequer. Such reforms as were brought about in it were due, either to the indirect effect of these ordinances on a closely allied department of government, or to the result of a gradual process of administrative changes, brought about from within, and for no other motives than practical convenience. In some respects the chancery went back on ancient lines, though these experiments in reaction, if numerous, were seldom long continued. I explained in an earlier chapter how, nearly up to the Barons' Wars, and again in the days of bishop Burnell, the custom had been to hand over the "issues of the chancery" to a magnate chancellor to make his own profit out of them, and how ultimately this system had been superseded in favour of the more economical and bureaucratic device of paying these revenues over to the wardrobe, and giving to the chancellor a fixed "fee" for the remuneration of himself and the clerks of his office, and for the several expenses of carrying on his department. It is with some surprise that we find that under Edward II there was an intermittent harking back to the old system, which treated the chancery as the personal property of the chancellor, which he might exploit in his own interests. Thus, as early as May, 1311, the keeper of the hanaper was ordered to hand over the issues of the seal to chancellor Reynolds, until a loan of £1,000, which Reynolds had advanced to the king, had been repaid.[1] This patent was at once cancelled, because it was found that Reynolds could be satisfied with a sum of rather less than half the debt, and that the hanaper was at once able to pay over to him such a proportion of his due.[2] Its significance cannot be

1. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 345. I owe this reference and all the following ones about the chancery to the kindness of Miss L. B. Dibben, who has put at my disposal the great mass of information she is collecting on the early history of that office.

2. *Ib.*, p. 346. Mandate to William Thorntoft, clerk of the hanaper, to deliver out of the issues of his office £418. 6s. 8d. in part payment of the £1,000 which the king owes him.

stressed because, like the handing over the customs to the Frescobaldi, it was plainly due to financial embarrassment, rather than to a conscious desire to exalt Reynolds. As ever, the barons were the conservatives and the king and his following the innovators. Accordingly, it was only when the ordainers of the school of Pembroke got the upper hand, that the restoration to the chancellor of the issues of the seal became a matter of deliberate policy. It is rather surprising to find that, three years after he had become chancellor, the baronial official, John Sandall, bishop of Winchester, received in 1317 all the issues of the seal by the king's gift "for the sustentation of his household and of the other burdens of the said chancery."[1] It looks as if the barons not only wished that the king should "live of his own," but that the chancellor should do the same. Anyhow, it seemed to the magnates that it was better that the surplus profits of the seal should swell the state of the chancellor rather than they should be diverted to increase the resources of the household. When Sandall resigned the chancery in June, 1318, the king again received the issues of the seal.[2] Only a month later, however, a similar grant of the issues of the seal was made to the succeeding chancellor, John Hotham, bishop of Ely, and in October the royal grant was formally renewed, or sanctioned, in parliament. The result was that Hotham exploited the profits of his office until his resignation in January, 1320.[3] The reactionary experiment was now dropped for six years. Both the baronial nominee, bishop Salmon, chancellor from 1320 to 1323, "whom the king nominated his chancellor in full parliament," and Robert Baldock, the curialist chancellor for the rest of the reign, had to content themselves with the "accustomed fees" of

1. *Hanaper Accounts*, *K.R.*, 211/7.

2. He resigned on 9 June: "a quo tempore rex habuit omnes exitus predictus"; *Ib.*

3. *Ib.*, *211/8*. Hotham held the issues from 8 July 1318 to 23 January 1320. This grant was expressly approved by the parliament of York of Oct. 1318: "jesqes au fin du procheyn parlement"; Cole's *Records*, p. 10. The limitation of the parliamentary grant was not observed.

their office. These were exceedingly moderate, and, I imagine, rather presupposed that the chancellor was able to make both ends meet from the revenues of the bishopric he normally held, and perhaps even from the unmentioned opportunities of doubtful gain which accrued to the king's ministers. Now Baldock held no higher church preferment than the archdeaconry of Middlesex, and the king's repeated efforts to procure him a bishopric had ended in failure. This must have meant that the legitimate profits of the office were hardly adequate for Baldock's requirements, and may account for fresh grants to him of the issues of the seal at the very close of the reign.[1]

Save for these experiments in reaction, the chancery, so far as it moved at all, moved on progressive lines. The persistence of the ordainers in upholding the rights of the great seal against the privy seal was all in its favour, though it was somewhat neutralised by the tendency to legitimatise the privy seal, and make it official, within certain definite lines. I do not think, however, that the solicitude of the barons for the traditional rights of the exchequer had any prejudicial effect on the fortunes of the chancery. Neither do I find, in the history of the early part of the reign, the decisive turning point in a long conflict between the chancery and the exchequer, such as has sometimes been imagined.[2] On the contrary, I can discover no traces of such a struggle, and believe that the theory reposes on a misconception of the earlier position of the exchequer which is based, in the last instance, on an undue following of the great authority of Madox. Most certainly it is a misreading of history to assert that the transference to the chancery of the nomination of sheriffs, required by the ordinances of 1311, by the parliament of Lincoln of 1316, and by the establishments

1. Baldock was granted the issues of the seal from 3 Feb. 1326 to Easter, and then from Easter 1326 to the Easter following; *Chancellor's Roll, 18 Edw. II*, m. 42.

2. Notably by the late Mr. A. Hughes, in his paper on "the parliament of Lincoln, of 1316" in the *Transactions of the Royal Historical Society*, new series, x, 41—58 (1896); see above, pp. 41 and 104-105. Unluckily Prof. Baldwin is among his disciples; *The King's Council*, pp 210 and ff.

of York of 1322, was in any wise the culminating issue of this hypothetical struggle. This change was rather a part of that policy of definition and differentiation of function, which underlay all the really good side of the administrative reforms of Edward II. There was, in fact, absolutely no reason why the chancery should carry on an imaginary feud with the exchequer. Its enemy was rather in the administrative offices of the household, against which it had a common ally in the exchequer. There was a certain amount of give and take in the adjustments of duties and spheres, but nothing that could cause any active rivalry between the two offices.

Only indirectly embarrassed by the financial disorders that nearly overwhelmed the exchequer, the chancery showed in the early years of the reign more capacity for self reformation than the exchequer was in a position to manifest. We may attribute this not to the chancellors themselves so much as to the able band of chancery clerks, whom the general lack of control, perhaps, set free to order their office after their own fashion. Conspicuous among these chancery clerks was William Airmyn, who is spoken of as the "principal clerk in the chancery," and sometimes, less officially, as "vice-chancellor." He was the man to whom the foremost place was generally given among the keepers of the great seal, when the custody of the seal was put into the hands of a commission of chancery clerks. Moreover, he was the first chancery clerk to combine the offices of keeper of the rolls of chancery and keeper of the *domus conversorum* in which these rolls ultimately found their home. Airmyn, doubtless, had his weak points, as witness the sharp practice which got for himself the bishopric of Norwich, which he had been empowered to seek for his chief Baldock in 1325. Yet, in his office, he was a reformer, and for one reform brought about by William, historians have good reason to be grateful. This was the composition of the first full and intelligible record of the proceedings of a parliament. Up to 1316 the rolls

of parliament, whether short or long, are an unsystematic putting together of odds and ends, eked out by a varying number of petitions of very unequal importance. The roll of the parliament of Lincoln of 1316, made by William, who was specially appointed to compile it, is the first parliamentary roll which gives us, in the form of short dated minutes, a record of parliamentary proceedings, day by day, and so enables us to get an intelligible idea of what the estates actually did.[1] It set an example, not always followed, even in the admirably full rolls of some of the later parliaments of the reign, which we have already found of such value to us. But all rolls of parliament were, at this period, similar in their origin to Airmyn's roll of the parliament of 1316. I mean that that they were the work of clerks of chancery. It is true that many of the rolls surviving, both before and after this roll of 1316, whose origin is so certain, are preserved in the records of the exchequer, as is notably the case with the rolls of 1318 and 1319, printed by Cole in his Records. There is no need, however, to imagine that there was a time, perhaps in 1316, when, as a result of the hypothetical triumph of chancery in a purely imaginary battle with the exchequer, the duty of compiling the parliamentary roll was transferred from the beaten exchequer to the victorious chancery.[2] The simpler, but absolutely sufficient, explanation is that, as was the case with many other records, several copies of them were made, one of which was for convenience of reference deposited in the exchequer.

We may also thank the clerks of Edward II's chancery for the increasing orderliness, detail and method of the chancery rolls. The result is that the patent and close rolls of Edward II's twenty regnal years contain as much matter, roughly speaking, as do the similar records of the thirty-five years of Edward I. Nor is this all. The bulk of the patent rolls was lessened by the systematic relegation of

1. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 350—364: "Memoranda de parliamento domini Edwardi regis Angliae . . . facta per Willelmum de Ayremynne, clericum de cancellaria prefati regis, ad hoc nominatum et specialiter deputatum."

2. This was Mr. A. Hughes' view in the article already referred to.

certain matters to other rolls, such as the fine rolls, which now contain exceedingly important enrolments of appointment. The result is, that while the calendar of the fine rolls of Edward I is contained in one volume, a similar calendar for the reign of Edward II requires two volumes. What the additional matter had to do with fines no one has as yet told us. These things seem very unimportant, yet they must needs be set down. We must remember that in any age, and particularly in the middle age, it is dangerous to despise forms. In the wise words of Maitland, "all this formalism is worthy of study; it is the necessary groundwork for ministerial responsibility and government by discussion."[1] But the increased formalism and bulk of the records of Edward II's reign are in no wise limited to the chancery records. They are equally found in the archives of the wardrobe and the exchequer, and were assigned by contemporary officials as one of the chief reasons for administrative reforms.

More important than improvements in form, was the completion of the emancipation of the chancery from the court, which was the indirect effect of the exchequer reforms of 1323. We have seen already how the separation of the hanaper department from the wardrobe was effected, when the clerk of the hanaper was ordered to account directly to the exchequer for the issues of the seal. Perhaps the apparent reaction in 1317–20, towards the old fashion of the chancellor exploiting the seal for his own advantage, was a step in the same direction. Anyhow, it was better for the independence of the office than the system of accounting for the profits of the seal in the wardrobe. When the profits of the seal were accounted for in the exchequer, the chancery sheds the last vestiges of its original position as a dependent office of the court, and stands forth in its later character as a self-sufficing office of state. This was the real chancery reform of the reign. It was not, however, so much a conscious change, as the last link in a long chain of development.

1. *Memoranda de parliamento*, Introduction, p. lxxi.

(4) The Exchequer Reforms.

Let us now turn to the course of exchequer reformation in the reign. Here we have to distinguish between the slow changes, worked out, either within the department by its own officers, or by political action from the outside, and the more deliberate and conscious reforms of the years succeeding 1323. At first the exchequer had its work cut out in vain efforts to pay the king's debts and to provide him with the means to live. It derived some profit from those remedial elements in the ordinances which strengthened its position by defining and limiting its scope. The ordinance that the issues of the land should all be paid into the exchequer was the starting point of a long development, which was ultimately to make the exchequer supreme in all national finance. Though it cannot be said to have been carried out to any great extent, it went so far with the general tendency of the times, that all through the reign the "foreign receipt" of the wardrobe is—so far as we know the figures—insignificant—save at one or two exceptional crises—as compared with the receipt from the exchequer. Accordingly to that extent the exchequer made a clear gain. The limitations to the hearing of pleas in the exchequer and to the use of the exchequer seal, for other than departmental business, were, after a fashion, a set off to this. I have already given reason for hesitation in accepting the existence of an "exchequer chamber" or an "administrative exchequer" at this time.

All through its history the exchequer was competent to make, of its own initiative, useful administrative reforms. Such, early in the thirteenth century, had been the clear and intelligible issue and receipt rolls, which give us the best conception of the general scope and direction of national finance. A study of these issue and receipt rolls of the early years of our reign shows both a remarkable continuity of the administrative personnel of the exchequer, irrespective of politics, and the persistent carrying on of the methods

and traditions of the reign of Edward I. With the ever increasing embarrassment of the finances, the issue rolls, which had gained in complexity under Edward I, became under Edward II increasingly and hopelessly complicated. Even the simpler receipt rolls show how bad were the business methods then adopted. The form of the issue roll now made it very difficult to ascertain anything like a balance of accounts, or to discover a clear statement of the gross amount of issues for the term. The easy-going officials of Edward II did not even take the trouble to add up the totals of the receipt rolls, which were at least arranged intelligibly and easy to sum up. Sometimes by accident the totals of the receipt for a term are recorded in the roll. More often the clerks were content to set down the sums received, day by day or week by week. Sometimes even the weekly totals are not added up, and often the despairing auditors' entry "examinatur, non summatur"—"examined, not added up,"—warns the student that he can only extract the information he desires by infinite labour on his own part. At last, for the sixth year of Edward II—July, 1312, to July, 1313—we have the receipt rolls of both terms (nos. 202–205) added up. The amount of exchequer receipt recorded is just less than £50,000, though we must never forget that these are bookkeeping figures, made up by entries and re-entries of tallies, and that they in no wise necessarily show the sums actually touched by the crown. It is the same in the issue rolls. We must not, therefore, overstress the significance of the totals, when next year, 7 Edward II, we find that the issue roll (no. 167) for Michaelmas term is added up for the first time in the reign, and attests payments almost as great in amount as those of the receipts for all the previous year. These are dull things to tell, but the modern student will feel deeply grateful to treasurer Sandall, in whose time the king's exchequer, by first adopting the ordinary precautions of a man of business with his accounts, has spared him much weary labour of uncertain result. Later on, such additions became usual,

at least as regards the receipt rolls, while even the issue rolls gradually become less complicated and unpractical in their form. Unluckily, there were a good many cases of reversion to the earlier and worse type, and the gross amount of exchequer revenue, for much of Edward II's reign, still awaits complete statement. In both types of rolls after 1316, we note the gradual establishment of exchequer control over the wardrobe. If this process was retarded in the years 1322 to 1323, it was once more to be pushed forward during the last few years of the reign.

There is perhaps a suggestion of even conscious reformation in 1318, when, after Sandall's third appointment as treasurer in November, 1318, groups of clerks were assigned for scheduling the debts owed to the king, and for their classification between the recoverable and irrecoverable ones.[1] This shows that the problem of the bad debt, imperfectly grappled with when Edward I removed the most hopeless of the debts due to the crown from the pipe roll, and put them on a special *exannual roll*, was beginning to be seriously tackled. During Stapeldon's first treasurership, from 1320 to 1321, much wider schemes were mooted, involving the arrangement, and, ultimately, the calendaring of the mass of the exchequer archives. Within a few months of Stapeldon's entrance into office, the treasurer, barons, and chamberlains were ordered to appoint such of the king's clerks as shall be necessary to "survey, dispose, and put into a proper state, before Michaelmas, 1320, the king's things in the treasury and the Tower of London, and the rolls, books, and other memoranda touching the exchequer of the time of the king's progenitors, which matters the king understands are not so well disposed of as is needed for him and the commonweal."[2] This order was only issued in August, and it shows some optimism on the part of the chancery to expect the work to be accomplished within less than two months, even with the promise of "reasonable expenses,"[3] to stimulate the zeal

1. *Issue Roll*, no. 186, m. 6, *12 E. II, Mich. t.*
2. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, p. 258. 3. *Ib.*, p. 258.

of the clerks engaged upon the task. Immediately afterwards, we find that both the two chamberlains, Master James of Spain and Master William Maldon, were assigned, with two clerks apiece, to discharge this important work.[1] Up to Easter, 1321, James and William with a large staff of clerks were still at work at the "arrayment" of the "rolls and other things in the king's chapel in the higher part of the Tower of London."[2] With Stapeldon's first retirement in August, 1321, the business seems to have flagged; the division of the archives, between those stored in London and those which had been taken by the exchequer to York at this period, could not have made it easier.

A further development soon followed when it was found desirable that certain sections of the exchequer archives should be "calendered" as well as "arrayed," and calendered, moreover, in connection with the relevant archives of the chancery and wardrobe. Practical reasons as usual brought about this new reform. No records were more constantly referred to in the course of the endless controversies between the agents of the English and the French crowns than those relating to Gascony, and a fire at the castle of Bordeaux had already compelled the English negotiators to rely largely on the documents kept in England. A royal clerk, Master Elias Johnston, who had in a subordinate capacity been assigned by Edward I to sort out, and keep ready, all documents that might be needed for such negotiations, was, in 1309, appointed formally keeper of the "processes" and memoranda touching Aquitaine, and held this office until 1336.[3] But this new class, set apart for practical reasons, was inaccessible, and so early as 1315–16 a petition from Gascony

1. *Issue Rolls*, no. 191, m. 8, *13 E. II, East. t.*

2. "In summa turri Londonensi"; *Ib.*, no. 193, *14 E. II, Mich. t.* This is doubtless the romanesque chapel of St. John on the second storey of the White Tower, or keep, which is thus proved to have been a place of deposit of exchequer records under Edward II.

3. E. Déprez in *Mélanges Charles Bémont*, p. 226; Johnston's predecessor was Mr. Philip Martel. His style was "custos processuum et memorandorum regis ducatum Aquitanie tangentium."

reached the English chancery, begging that a register of documents relating to Gascony should be sent to the castle at Bordeaux, and specifying the documents which it was suggested were to be transcribed.[1] It may well have been that this circumstance attracted Stapeldon's attention. Anyhow a calendar of certain types of archives, "papal and royal letters, charters, bonds, quittances, remembrances and other muniments," was ordered to be compiled, and as a first instalment, documents of these classes relating to Gascony were dealt with. In August, 1320, Master Henry of Canterbury, king's clerk, was ordered to make a calendar of such records for the use of the king's advocates of his claims in the "parliament of France,"[2] and in July, 1321, just before Stapeldon went out of office, Master Henry was ordered to complete the work without further delay, and to associate with himself in its execution two other experts, one of whom was Elias Johnston.[3] With Stapeldon's retirement however, further delay seems to have ensued, for, if the calendar were completed, no use seems to have been made of it.

Stapeldon's second treasurership began in May, 1322, and the spirit of reform was once more unloosed. On 4 December, 1322, the complete calendar of Gascon documents, within the prescribed limits, was delivered by the exchequer to Robert Baldock, the keeper of the privy seal, no doubt for custody in the wardrobe.[4]

The day before the Gascon calendar was handed to Baldock, the preliminary steps towards completing the scheme of making an inventory of archives were taken

1. *Chancery Miscellanea*, bundle 29, $^{8}/_{8}$.
2. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, pp. 319-20.
3. *C. P. R., 1321-4*, p. 5.
4. This "Kalendarium litterarum processuum et memorandorum ducatus Aquitanie" is now preserved in *Miscellaneous Books of the Exchequer, T. R.* vol. clxxxvii. It has never been printed, but a full account of it and its origin has just been published by Professor Déprez of Rennes in *Mélanges offerts à M. Charles Bémont*, (1913) pp. 225-242. M. Déprez, however, proposes to publish it in full with copious annotations. He has already printed the headings and the formal introduction, with its lofty enunciation of principle, similar in conception to that of the published "Stapeldon's Calendar."

by the issue of a new order to the treasurer and chamberlains to cause the "arrayment" and "calendaring" of all bulls, and of all other charters, deeds and memoranda touching the king and his estate and liberties in England, Ireland, and Wales, Scotland and Ponthieu, existing in their custody in the treasury and elsewhere. "Sufficient persons" were to be appointed by the treasurer and chamberlains at the "king's expense," and the work was to be done "as conveniently as it can be."[1] In the autumn of 1322 there was the further complication of the division of the exchequer into two sections, for while Walter Norwich, keeper of the treasury, was at York with most of the exchequer staff, Stapeldon went to London and received moneys and transacted business there.[2] There were, therefore, two exchequers working simultaneously at York and London. At last the re-transference of the exchequer to Westminster, in time for the autumn session beginning in 1323, facilitated the completion of the task. The result of all this labour was the well known "Bishop Stapeldon's Calendar," wherein we can still study the arrangement and description of all the bulls, writs, charters and other documents then kept in "the treasury of the exchequer."[3] A generation in which scholars are still concerned with the problems of the custody, arrangement and calendaring of our ancient records, cannot feel too much gratitude to bishop Stapeldon for this timely work, and it is hardly too much to say that we owe to Stapeldon, more than to any other one person, the fact that our vast collection of exchequer records before 1323 is still

1. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, p. 688. Dated 3 Dec. 1322 at York. It is curious that the Channel Islands are not included in the list of places whose records were dealt with. Among the sufficient persons assigned were Robert of Hoton and Thomas of Sibthorp, clerks, whose function was to array and order "cartas, scripta et cetera monumenta in certis castris et locis regni Anglie"; *Issue Roll*, no. 201, *16 E. II, M. t.*

2. *R. R.*, no. 241, *16 E. II, Mich. t.* Stapeldon's "recessus" from York was on 8 Dec. 1322; after 20 Dec. he received £3,988. 7s. 1d. at London.

3. It is printed in i, 1—155 of Palgrave's *Antient Kalendars and Inventories of the Exchequer*, Record Com., 3 vols., 1836.

preserved to us. Without such an effort the exchequer records may well have gone the way of the archives of the wardrobe and the privy seal, which, as separate collections, have wholly disappeared. It is worth remembering, too, that the effort was not a merely departmental one. Stapeldon's aim was to include in his survey the records of the wardrobe and those scattered in various castles and places throughout England. It was, therefore, an admirably designed plan to group together in a single synopsis an inventory of the administrative archives of the crown, outside those of the chancery. I imagine that these chancery records were safe enough under the keeper of the rolls of chancery, but that there was no similar responsibility clearly imposed on the chancellor of the exchequer or the remembrancers, the natural custodians of exchequer archives. In modern days the process of concentration was the other way about. By the act of parliament which marks the starting point of our modern centralised system of record keeping, the Master of the Rolls, historically only the keeper of the rolls of chancery, became also the custodian of the archives of practically all the central offices of state and law.

The first of Stapeldon's reforming ordinances of the exchequer was issued in June, 1323, at Cowick in Yorkshire. It was in form, like the household ordinances, an ordinance of the king in council. It was entitled "the articles ordained and provided for the arrayment of matters in the exchequer."[1] The idea at its root was that the incredible confusion of the exchequer accounts and the deplorable arrears of the accounting were due, not only to the embarrassed finances of the crown, but also to the old-fashioned and unbusinesslike way in which the accounts were kept. I have illustrated this already from the muddled arrangement of the issue rolls and the indifference to arithmetic in even the comparatively orderly receipt rolls. But these rolls were the most modern, and up to date of the exchequer

1. Hall, *Red Book of the Exchequer*, iii, 884—907, gives the French text and an English translation.

records, so modern that they were enrolled from their beginning under Henry III, after the so-called "chancery fashion" of fastening the various membranes together in one unending roll. Those who have had to unroll a hundred feet of parchment to verify one entry, will almost regret that the "exchequer system" of "filing" the membranes at the top, as is done with the pipe rolls, was not extended to these also, though they will admit that the "make up" of the pipe roll is almost as painful to him who would consult it, as is the "make up" of the chancery roll, winding out its endless length. The other new thirteenth century rolls, the memoranda rolls of the two remembrancers, have hardly yet been studied with sufficient care for it to be safe to lay down the theory of their arrangement or development. Yet even the memoranda rolls seem by this period to have settled down on the fixed, though not very clear lines on which they were afterwards carried on, doubtless as an indirect result of the strengthening of the remembrancers' staff and the definition of their duties by the ordinance of 1323, as we shall soon see. But the "great roll," or the "year roll" of the exchequer was still what we call the pipe roll, the oldest and most authoritative record of its work.[1] It looks as if the later rolls of issue and receipt had arisen to give a general conspectus of the revenue and expenditure of each half-yearly term, and so to remedy the system which treated the finances of the year as a series of separate accounts of the king with the sheriffs and other ministers of the crown. Even on their own lines however, the pipe rolls were becoming impossible. For one thing the amount of business, and therefore the size of the yearly roll, was now inordinately swollen. The ordinance tells us that in one department only of the exchequer, that of the treasurer's remembrancer, "the rolls and writs made by him in the time of this king amount to more, in a single year for the same time, than the rolls and writs of the same office in five

1. "Great Roll of the Exchequer," not Pipe Roll, was, I may note in passing, the ordinary mediæval name for this roll.

years or six together, in the time of the king his father." It is not likely that this was the rate of progress of every branch of the clerical work of the exchequer, but it is undoubted that both exchequer and—as we have seen—the chancery records are enormously greater in bulk for the reign of Edward II than for that of Edward I. One has only to wield the colossal pipe rolls of the period to experience this truth in a very practical way. According to the ordinance "the great rolls"—*i.e.* the pipe rolls—"are larger for one year of the king that now is than they used to be for three years, or four, of the time of his predecessors." And again, as regards the mass of individual documents apart from the rolls, "there have been more writs and letters made and delivered into the exchequer under the great and privy seal in every year at this present time than used in former times to be in ten years or more."[1]

The pipe roll was growing not only in size but in complexity. The ordinance speaks feelingly of the "overweighting of the great roll by much writing, whereby the settlement of the account has been, and is, delayed." To its proper material, the individual accounts of the sheriffs and bailiffs, directly responsible for the "farm" of lands and offices under the crown, had gradually been added a large number of "foreign accounts," including the accounts of the wardrobe, and its various subsidiary branches. All these "foreign accounts" had hitherto been entered upon the pipe roll, either at the end, or wherever there was room for them. And, as we have seen, the accounts of the wardrobe had included, up to this date, the accounts of all the great "spending departments" that were affiliated to it. Another cause of the overweighting of the "great roll" was the continued appearance of ancient and irrecoverable debts to the crown on the pipe roll, despite the remedial legislation of Edward I, which seems to have been as ineffective as most mediæval legislation was. A further trouble was the inadequacy of the exchequer staff, especially in certain

1. *Red Book of the Exchequer*, iii, 884.

departments, for the business of the ordering of the national accounts. And this inadequacy was intensified since the most important officers after the treasurer, the barons, had the habit of keeping sheriffs and bailiffs waiting, when they came to tender their accounts, because these dignitaries preferred to hear pleas rather than do their proper work of examining the ministers' accounts. Moreover, exchequer pleas were often held in the same room as that in which the "full exchequer" was sitting, so that the barons were supposed to be listening with one ear to the lawyers and with the other to the sheriffs. This is a typical picture of the easy-going mediæval ways of "transacting business." The barons certainly showed feats of dexterity which can only be compared to the intellectual resource of the fashionable modern "leader," conducting cases in two courts at once. We need not wonder that, in the words of the ordinance, "these accounts cannot be sufficiently rendered, heard or concluded with great diligence and perfect quiet."

The Cowick ordinance of 1323 provided a remedy for all these obstructions to the punctual and effective working of the exchequer. Strict directions were issued for the drawing up of the yearly roll, which was to be written after the ancient fashion "in great letters in full exchequer." "And if by chance he who wrote it erred, let him not presume to erase the mistake, but to cancel it, and to write beside it that which was correct." "And inasmuch as the said roll has such great force in itself, let all the pipes and accounts be henceforth well and fully examined, before they be put together, and the roll made of them at the end of the year." Moreover, the pipes—that is the individual membranes—of the "foreign accounts" were to be "put by themselves, and the other pipes of the sheriffs' accounts by themselves." Two rolls, in fact, were henceforth to be made, "with such titles as are fitting." The "foreign accounts" are enumerated as including the accounts of the king's wardrobe, of Gascony, Ireland, Wales, the customs, the escheators, the custody of the temporalities of vacant bishoprics, the profits

of abbeys and priories in the king's hands, the aids of the clergy and laity and every kind of aid, and accounts of castles, honours, forests, manors and other king's possessions, "such as have not been committed to farm but to custody."

Besides this great measure of relief, the debts to the king, which, seeming still recoverable, were left by Edward I in the annual roll, were now to be removed, and written only in the *exannual roll*, whose title was to be "the roll of debts extracted out of the year rolls," on which also summonses for the payment of these overdue sums were to be based. These debts were for the future not to be entered afresh in the exannual roll of future years. To perform all this new work and to catch up arrears, large additions to the exchequer staff were ordered. The special "apposal" of debts not in the great roll was entrusted to a baron and clerk assigned for the purpose, so that the two accounts could go on at the same time. The "engrosser of the exchequer," the clerk responsible for the writing of the rolls, was to "take to himself at the king's expense as many helpers as may be needed, so as he may with greater haste" perform his old and new duties becomingly. Among these fresh assistants were two clerks "appointed at the king's wages to engross the foreign accounts."

Very elaborate provisions were made to distinguish the work of the two remembrancers, whose offices had now considerably more than a century of history behind them. These two clerks appear originally acting as colleagues, like the two chamberlains. But the remembrancers had already become so far distinct as regards their functions, that one was called the king's remembrancer and the other the treasurer's remembrancer. Nevertheless, "the office of the two remembrancers has been much confused for long time past, and is so still," so that "down to the present time it has not been made certain what the one ought to have in keeping and what the other." To remedy this, definite functions were assigned to each, so that their work was not

in the future to overlap. Thus, the king's remembrancer only was to "make remembrance of," that is to say, enrol on his memoranda roll, writs under the various seals received in the exchequer. He was also to keep the estreats of lands concerning the king, the taxation rolls, the red book, the books of the fees and the statutes and transcripts of charters. The treasurer's remembrancer had also "memoranda rolls" of his own, had the custody of the "estreats" (extracts) from the chancery rolls, sent by that office to the exchequer for the sake of acquainting it with any political acts affecting the revenue and pleas of the exchequer. The enumeration of the functions of the two remembrancers is elaborated in immense detail. The effect, as Mr. Charles Johnson says, was that "henceforth the king's remembrancer was more particularly concerned with the casual, and the lord treasurer's remembrancer with the fixed revenue."[1] Great additions were made to the staff under the remembrancers, so that in effect their respective spheres developed into two sub-departments of the exchequer.

A fifth baron of the exchequer, the so-called "cursitor baron," was now for the first time appointed, as also "four sufficient men with their clerks" as auditors, and a special clerk to keep matters touching the forfeited lands of the contrariants. Moreover, the barons were tied down to their financial work, as the first charge upon them, by the provision that they were not to engage any day in holding pleas, until the sheriff who was accounting had rendered his accounts in "full exchequer." "And let the barons take heed that no plea from henceforth be held in the exchequer without the king's special mandate, or unless the pleas concern the king in things appertaining to the place or his ministers there. And these things must be done in such a fashion that the execution of the accounts be not delayed or disturbed." Discipline in the whole office was braced up by the order that no accounting officer was to be represented

1. *Encyclopæd. Brit.*, eleventh edition, *s.v.* Exchequer.

by attorney, save by the king's leave, or through inability to travel, or other sufficient cause. Similarly, no clerk or other officer of the exchequer, or of the receipt, was to be admitted as an attorney in any manner of plea or account. Moreover, while the various clerks were bound to look closely after the rolls, the "chamberlains of the tallies" were "to put in order all the foils of tallies in their keeping."

In May, 1324, the second ordinance of the exchequer was issued by the king and council at Westminster.[1] It supplemented that of 1323. It was almost entirely devoted to speeding up the accounts of the keeper of the wardrobe by disembarrassing him of the many "foreign accounts" for which he had hitherto been responsible. It was now that the great wardrobe, the butlery, the victualling departments, the stud and stables, the hanaper, and the rest, were separated, as we have seen, from the wardrobe, and made to account directly to the exchequer. The control of the exchequer over these offices was thus better secured, as it also was by such supplementary measures as the forbidding of "imprests," or partial advances, out of the wardrobe in times of peace, in lieu of the full wages and salaries due. The same object was furthered by the provision of a special clerk to recite and enrol documents from the household office sent to the exchequer, and, above all, by the ordering that the yearly accounts of the wardrobe, which were reckoned by the king's regnal years, which ended early in July,[2] should be put in order, so as to be presented to the exchequer at the beginning of its Michaelmas session next following.

A small but significant modification of tradition, now indirectly brought about, shows how the spirit of reform

1. *Red Book of Exchequer*, iii, 908—929.

2. *Ib.*, p. 928. The regnal year of Edward II ended on 7 July. The wardrobe year, according to the ordinance, ended on 3 July. I do not understand why there was this difference of four days, since most accounts did as a matter of fact run through the regnal year of 8 July to 7 July. The vital point is that the keeper of the great wardrobe and the butler were to have their accounts ready by 30 Sept., and the keeper of the wardrobe a fortnight later.

was in the air. About the time this ordinance was issued a remarkable change in the method of appointing escheators was effected. Up to 1324 there had been appointed one escheator for the counties north of Trent, and another for the district to the south of that river. Apparently two escheators were not regarded by the reformers as sufficient to accomplish the detailed and important work assigned to them. In the course of 1324 the two escheators were replaced by nine, or, if we include the escheator for North Wales, ten escheators. Each of them had charge of a group of counties such as, for example, Wiltshire, Hampshire, Oxfordshire, Bedfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Berkshire. This system of a separate escheator for a small group of counties lasted for the rest of the reign. In 1327 Isabella and Mortimer went back to the old system, which was carried on until 1335. It was then definitively abandoned in favour of a modification of the plan first started in 1324. It is curious that the fashion of appointing escheators should thus vary with the vicissitudes of contemporary politics. Probably the relegation of the duties to more numerous officials was regarded by the court party as a more effective way of securing the rights of the crown.

Another projected exchequer reform of this period, which I am unable to illustrate from records, is said by a hostile chronicler to have arisen from the greediness and ambition of one of the barons of the exchequer. This was Sir Roger Bellers, a Leicestershire squire and a former Lancastrian partisan, who had won knighthood and his place at the exchequer by a timely desertion of earl Thomas in 1322. The opportunity probably came when on 9 August, 1325, Bellers was appointed as *locum tenens* of the treasurership, until the return of archbishop Melton, "who is going for some time to the north by the king's command."[1] Bellers proposed some sort of division of the exchequer into two parts, hoping that he would himself be set over one of them. This was possibly a device for making permanent some

1. *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 159.

such splitting up of the exchequer as that which we noticed in 1322, when money was received and accounts tendered both at York and Westminster at the same time.[1] Such a proposal was particularly appropriate when the northern metropolitan, anxious to spend part of his time in his province, was treasurer. Anyhow, a plan for legitimatising a fashion, by which the exchequer could both have its headquarters at Westminster and also follow the court in its wanderings, may well have been an honest device to secure its more effective control of all finance by giving to the exchequer some of the mobility of the wardrobe. But the enemies of reforming courtiers looked upon it as a wanton attack on the tradition which regarded the exchequer as from all time one and indivisible.[2] The murder of Bellers in January, 1326, as the result of a private feud in Leicestershire, was looked upon as God's judgment on the innovator. Nothing more was heard of the projected reform, but every fresh change of exchequer arrangements was in the direction of increased differentiation.

Even later than Bellers' collapse came the third exchequer ordinance, published at Westminster on 30 June, 1326. The issue of so important a scheme of reformation when archbishop Melton was treasurer, shows that Stapeldon was not the only radical head of the exchequer in these years. This ordinance was largely a re-enactment of that of 1323, in terms which suggest that the new system had not as yet become practical politics. Some useful new provisions were added, notably that which, while providing that the sheriffs' accounts shall be heard "in the full exchequer," since the exchequer of accounts has been of old a single body, also ordered that the "foreign accounts" be heard and rendered in another house adjoining. It also provided

1. See above, pp. 192-193.

2. Robert of Reading, pp. 231-2: "Scaccarium domini regis apud Westmonasterum prima sua institutione semper indivisum, superba sua praesumptione in duas partes dividi procuravit, ut et idem . . . . coram ipso medietati praesideret, reliquam vero partem caeteris baronibus permisit regendam."

for increased severity of audit, for the half-yearly control of the remembrancers by the treasurer and barons, for the annual enrolment by the "chancellor of the great seal and keeper of the privy seal" of all writs for payments in the exchequer,[1] and for the delivery by the escheators of their inquests and rolls into the exchequer. Some relief to the accounting officers was provided by the exchequer recognising writs of great or privy seal, addressed to those functionaries, by virtue of which they had made payments from their revenues. Up to now such ministers had been put to the trouble and expense of obtaining a special mandate to the exchequer under great or privy seal, directing it to make the allowance aforesaid. Sheriffs and bailiffs were to be "sufficient persons" with "good estates of land in their counties." "And let not the sheriffs be so often changed as they have been."

How far were these ordinances executed? This question is an important one, but it can only be answered with any fulness by a scholar who will take the pains of working carefully through the exchequer records of the decade immediately succeeding the reforming ordinances, and comparing exchequer procedure at the end of Edward II and the beginning of Edward III's reign with the business methods in use before 1322.[2] Such a task would be well worth attempting, and when some of the chief exchequer records are calendared in print, like the records of chancery, would not be an impossibly difficult one. One who has but dipped here and there into these records can only offer a strictly provisional and personal answer. There can be no doubt, however, that a real effort was made to put things

1. *Red Book*, iii, 950. If this order was carried out by the keeper of the privy seal, there is no evidence of the present existence of what may be called a privy seal "liberate" roll. There are, however, numerous files of original privy seals, preserved by the exchequer, many of which are orders for the payment of money, and therefore kept as "warrants for issues."

2. The comparison of the memoranda rolls of the two remembrancers for these two periods should be of special interest, as showing to what extent the elaborate differentiation of the king's and treasurer's remembrancers' functions were actually carried out.

straight, and the best proof of this is the fact that no subsequent accounts, either of the wardrobe or of the great wardrobe, figure in the pipe rolls, but are carefully audited by themselves and entered as "enrolled accounts," in rolls distinct from the pipe rolls of each year. However, the arrears in accounting were not to be made up in a day, and before the new system was well in working order, the disorders culminating in the revolution of 1326, stood in the way of immediate reform. If, then, these separate "enrolled accounts" go back as far as 1315–16, this circumstance is only evidence that they were made up years later than the time that they covered. It is more significant that the last pipe roll, containing wardrobe accounts proper, is that of 1322–3, when Benstead's belated accounts of 1307–9 were at last settled by his executors. The wardrobe accounts of 1315–16, and of subsequent years, all appear in separate enrolments. But it was not until after 1330 that the final straightening out of these arrears was accomplished. The results are still to be seen in those magnificently written, and finely bound volumes, which tell us, in meticulous detail and with many quite modern facilities for reference, what was believed, under Edward III, to have been the correct accounts of the wardrobe transactions in the days of his father. The feeling that they after all are not quite contemporary documents must rather chasten those who wish to use them. We can only hope that they are an honest attempt to get at the belated truth, and not faked for some ulterior purpose.

In some respects the Stapeldon-Melton reforms were slow in being executed. Thus we find, in defiance of the ordinance of 1326, the hanaper accounts, the butler's accounts, the accounts of the king's horses, of the forests, of various subsidiary wardrobes, some fragmentary chamber accounts, and many analogous accounts still appearing normally in the pipe rolls of the greater part of Edward III's reign, though the ordinance specifically classed most of them with the wardrobe accounts proper as "foreign

accounts"[1] and ordered that they should be rendered and audited separately from the ordinary sheriffs' and ministers' accounts, and in the same fashion as those of the wardrobe. It seems that these accounts were separately audited[2] but it was not until 42 Edward III that a separate roll of "foreign accounts," in addition to the "enrolled accounts" of the household and wardrobe series, became a matter of course. Thus slowly the ideas of the reformers of Edward II's exchequer became realized. But I should be much surprised if the more minute study, which some day may be expected to be bestowed on these problems, did not make it clear that the concluding years of our reign were even more emphatically a turning point in the history of the exchequer than they are in the history of the household.

1. *Red Book*, iii, 933.
2. See P. R. O. *List and Indexes*, no. xi.; *List of Foreign Accounts*, and, especially, Introduction, p. iii.

VI.

FOREIGN AND IMPERIAL POLICY, WARFARE, AND THE CHURCH.

Up to this point, our interest in the reign of Edward II has rarely strayed from the administrative and constitutional fields. I would gladly have extended my survey to other aspects of Edwardian history, but it is impossible to do so within the limits prescribed to me. In two concluding chapters, I shall, however, endeavour to suggest in outline the general lines on which such a survey might be undertaken. The space that I shall devote to the consideration of the very miscellaneous subjects, which I shall attempt to discuss, will, I must add, be determined not so much by their relative importance, as by my general wish rather to indicate new points of view than to emphasize once more a well recognised standpoint. Subject to this limitation, I now propose to deal briefly in the present chapter with Edward II's reign in its relation to external policy, the art of war and the church, and, in the concluding chapter, to treat the social and economic development of the period. As in the previous chapter, nearly all that I have to say will have relation to the later and more eventful years of the reign. These sections may be regarded as supplementary to the story of political and administrative reform already told.

(1) Foreign and Imperial Policy.

There is no need to speak at any length on the external history of the reign of Edward II. The main facts concerning both Edward's relations to the British Islands, and the foreign policy of the reign, are sufficiently well known. The former seem a record of disaster; the latter a catalogue of futilities. Yet the failure of Edward II to carry out his

father's imperialist plans produced permanent consequences in all the three kingdoms. Even the foreign policy of the reign, centring as usual round English dealing with France, is worth a little more attention than it usually receives. Let us deal with these subjects in turn.

A. Scotland.

I need not dwell once more on the collapse of the imperialistic visions of Edward I. The old king had half realized the forcible union of England with Scotland and Wales, and made some little effort to strengthen the decaying supremacy of the English lords of Ireland. Most of this work was now undone, and only in Wales did Edward I's policy leave behind it the results which he designed to accomplish. The successful vindication of Scottish independence by Robert Bruce made it certain, before Edward II's reign was over, that even Britain was to consist of two states and not one. Moreover there was trouble in the future when Edward II's successors strove from time to time to hark back to his inherited policy. There was also permanent danger to both countries, when the smaller northern state was constantly compelled to maintain its independence by playing into the hands of the foreign enemies of England. Yet we must never forget that the downfall of English ambitions was brought about, almost as much by the slackness of the English baronage, as by the valour of Bruce and his Scots, and by the ineptitude of Edward II. As far as claims went, the ordainers maintained their right to control the whole inheritance of Edward I. They formally included in their sphere the direction of the government of Scotland, Ireland and Gascony, as well as the direction of that of England.[1] We need not see in this, either a prophetic vision of an imperial Britain in the future, nor a simple suggestion of greediness, though in it there was more of the latter than of

1. This comes out clearly in the "ordinationes comitum secundae" in *Ann. Lond.*, p. 202, where the barons added to the list of officers to be appointed by the baronage in parliament, "bons et suffisaunces ministres en Gascoigne, Irelaunde et Escoce"

the former. The stolid indifference of the barons to great plans of premature centralisation was, I imagine, in no small measure due to the consciousness that the cause of Bruce was not altogether dissimilar to their own. We must not overstress their want of patriotism. Their instinct was that of their class all over Europe, and it in no wise made altogether for evil. Good peace and administration, disciplined government, and social progress were only obtainable, under mediæval conditions, by the establishment of many centres of political influence. We may no longer give, to the monarchs of a few great countries, all the credit for the building up of the modern nationalities of Europe. A good duke of Brittany or of Burgundy, a good duke of Austria or of Saxony, did the same sort of work of discipline and direction within his sphere, as did any French king or Roman emperor of the German nation. And in the same way it is thinkable that the ultimate unity of Britain was better brought about by the failure of Edward II in Scotland, than it would have been by the establishment of an over-great monarchy, based solely on force, yet too weak to control the remoter regions wherein it claimed to exercise power. The rule of English kings in Scotland might have been as bad for real national unity, as was the domination of German monarchs in Italy for the national union of Germany.

B. Ireland.

Against the successful revolt of Scotland under Robert Bruce, may be set the failure of Edward Bruce to destroy what remained of the English power in Ireland. Yet Edward Bruce's collapse was not so much for the benefit of the English crown, as it was for the advantage of the Norman-Irish barons and the more purely Irish clan chieftains, who, for the next two hundred years, were to divide among themselves the government of Ireland, after a fashion which, if disorderly, was also picturesque, and by no means incompatible with some real development of Irish civilisation. One potential means of developing Irish culture was secured under Edward II by the bull, obtained from Clement V, by archbishop Leek of Dublin in 1312, for the

foundation of a university in Dublin.[1] This was not quite a "paper university," for after the war with Bruce was over, we find evidence that there were in the Dublin schools of the later years of this reign a few masters and scholars, for whose use archbishop Bicknor drew up statutes in 1320. In the next generation, however, the whole thing died out. The growing weakness of the central power made a university in Dublin impossible.

Irish historians have generally admitted that the expedition of Edward Bruce was the turning point in the history of the Anglo-Norman "colony" in Ireland, and I have no reason for quarrelling with a view that fits in so agreeably with my general theme. We should be more confident in the justice of the verdict, were the history of fourteenth and fifteenth century Ireland worked out in the detail which the abundance of documents, both of official and national provenance, may well admit. Irish history has, of late years, been rightly receiving more attention than it has met with in the past. But there is still a regrettable tendency for enquirers to limit their attention to one side of the evidence, and to select from it facts which seek to prove some modern political doctrine. We shall never get a real history of mediæval Ireland unless we are able to include both the "English" and the "Celtic" material in our survey, and unless we abandon the well-worn and meaningless generalisations about national characteristics, which have made historical study a buttress of prejudice and error on both sides alike. Celtic Ireland can only be understood when Celtic scholars will appreciate the importance of the archives of the governments, preserved in Dublin and London. Anglo-Norman Ireland can only be properly interpreted in the light of sympathetic appreciation of the Celtic point of view. For my part, I find it difficult to see much difference in practice between the methods of government of the Fitzgeralds and Butlers and those of the great Celtic clans. Feudal Ireland and Celtic Ireland are not so far apart as they are sometimes imagined. And both are a long way off any modern conception of an Irish nationality.

1. Denifle, *Die Entstehung der Universitäten des Mittelalters*, i, 639-43; Rashdall, *Universities of the Middle Ages*, ii, 719-21.

C. Wales.

The same revival of local independence, which is characteristic of Scottish and Irish history under Edward II, also manifested itself in the history of Wales, though conditions restricted the revival within narrower limits. Yet even if the Welsh of the principality made no more serious efforts to reverse history, the march of Wales was constantly alive with new movements, and there was constant interaction between the principality and the march. The politics of the Welsh march are so closely allied with the broadest streams of English history that I have perforce had to say much upon this subject at an earlier stage of this book. The recrudescence of feudal separatism in the march of Wales, which at once followed the removal of Edward I's strong hand, has already been noted. The agglomeration of groups of small marcher states in the hands of great houses, such as those of Mortimer, Fitzalan and Despenser, was the more emphatic when a Mortimer and a Fitzalan controlled in turn the government of the principality, which, nominally, was a source of strength to the king or a training ground for his son. But Edward of Windsor, the future Edward III, was never made prince of Wales, though he became earl of Chester in 1312,[1] and count of Ponthieu and duke of Aquitaine in 1325.[2] Between the rule of a Mortimer and an Arundel there was no room for a young prince. However, the unity of direction, which was common to principality and march alike, made for peace. Wales "rebelled very little" against Edward II. The plan of concerted action between Edward Bruce and the Welsh came to nothing,[3] collapsing with his Irish

1. There is no record of Edward of Windsor's creation as earl of Chester, but on 24 Nov. 1312, when he was only eleven days old, he received by charter the counties of Chester and Flint; *C. Chart. R.*, iii, 202-3. Henceforth the chamberlain's accounts of Chester and Flint speak of him as earl, as, for instance, A. Jones' *Flintshire Ministers' Accounts, 1301-28*, p. 65, "the lord king . . . . gave to the lord Edward his son, *now earl of Chester*." The undated account is with good reason assigned by Mr. Jones to the year 1312-13. In 1314, when aged two, Edward was first ordered as earl of Chester to supply troops against the Scots; *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, 427. In 1320, at the age of eight, Edward was summoned to parliament as earl of Chester; *ib.*, ii, ii, 219.

2. The appointments, by patent, not by charter, are dated 2 Sept. and 10 Sept. 1325 respectively; *Foedera*, ii, 607-8.

3. Malmesbury, p. 211.

failure; and Sir Gruffydd Llwyd, of Trevgarnedd, the bardic hero of Welsh resistance to Edward II, is still of unproved historicity. But this quietness of Wales is not to be set down so much to the sympathy of the Welsh for a Welsh born king, as some people have imagined, as to the coercive power of the great English families, who in fact governed both principality and marches.

Some practical amelioration of the hard conditions of a conquered people undoubtedly took place, both in the principality and in the march. This process was begun in Edward's replies to the Kennington petitions, issued when he was still only prince of Wales,[1] and continued in the Lincoln ordinances for north and south Wales, issued on 7 February, 1316.[2] But these ordinances, though referring markedly to the king's natural interest in his native land, cannot in any wise be set down to the personal action of Edward, who, as we have seen, was at the moment deprived of all real power in the interests of Thomas of Lancaster. Similarly, we cannot safely attribute to the Welsh born prince's individual initiative, either the repeated efforts made to remedy abuses and constrain the king's Welsh ministers to moderation, or the issue of charters to additional north Welsh towns.[3] They are rather to be assigned to the gradual spirit of administrative reform which was so marked a feature of the time. In Wales, as in England, no one party or person can claim the credit of these. Mortimer of Chirk, as justice, promoted native born Welshmen to sheriffdoms and other offices, against the commands of the central authority,[4] and Hugh Despenser strove to advance the economic prosperity of his south Welsh principality by making Cardiff, its capital, the

1. *Record of Carnarvon*, pp. 212-25, Record Com.

2. *Foedera*, ii, 283-4. Professor E. A. Lewis, in his excellent study of the *Mediæval Boroughs of Snowdonia*, pp. 232—237, gives some interesting observations on Edward's Welsh administration, which I have found very useful.

3. Lewis, *op. cit.*, pp. 283-7, prints Edward's charters to Newborough (1303) and Bala (1324).

4 *Rot. Parl.*, i, 273.

seat of the staple of wool.[1] I have spoken elsewhere of the representation of Wales in the epoch-making parliaments of 1322 and 1327.[2] As far as numbers went, the forty-eight Welsh representatives bulked larger than the corresponding members for English districts of the same size and importance; but it is noteworthy that on each occasion it was the principality only that sent representation. The march, not being in the king's hands, had no more claim than Cheshire or Durham to send members to an English parliament. We may connect, then, the beginnings of Welsh representation with the fact that Edward II always kept the government of the principality directly dependent upon himself. When the continuous English line of princes of Wales begins with the Black Prince, the principality had no more reason for being represented than any other palatinate. But I must not be tempted to develop any farther a subject on which I would gladly have lingered. I have said enough to show the importance of the reign of Edward II in the conciliation and administration of Wales and its march. It is quite a mistake to think that the history of Wales stops short with the conquest of Gwynedd by Edward I, to be resumed, after a century and a quarter, on the meteoric appearance of Owen Glendower on the historic stage. However, until the history of fourteenth century Wales has been written at length, it would be highly rash to indulge in confident generalisations about it. All I need say is that the subject is crying aloud for treatment, and that the materials for its investigation are extraordinarily ample.[3]

1. *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 247; *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 564. See also later p. 262. Some glimpses of the state of trade in both the principality and the march at this period may be obtained from the summary of mediæval Welsh customs accounts in E. A. Lewis' "Contribution to the Commercial History of Mediæval Wales," in *Y Cymmrodor*, xxiv (1913).

2. See above, p. 151. On 18 April, 1322, Arundel, as justice of Wales, was ordered to summon twenty-four "de discretioribus, legalioribus et validioribus hominibus" from North Wales, and a similar number of like persons from South Wales; *Foedera*, ii, 484. No return was, however, made to this writ. In 1327 similar writs were issued, and North Wales returned six members from both Carnarvonshire and Anglesea, and five from Merioneth, as well as two burgesses each from Beaumaris, Carnarvon and Conway boroughs; *Return of Members of Parliament*, i, 77. The absence of extant returns on the earlier occasion does not justify the conclusion that the Welsh members did not sit at York.

3. My former pupil and colleague, Mr. Arthur Jones, Lecturer in History in the Birkbeck College, University of London, tells me that he is

D. France and Gascony.

Edward II ruled over his mother's county of Ponthieu and over such fragments of the Gascon inheritance of Eleanor of Aquitaine as the constant and successful aggressions of the French crown still left to him. As he held both Ponthieu and Gascony as fiefs of the French king, his feudal relations to his overlord immensely complicated the national relations of the English and French states. Indeed it is hard to disentangle the political relations of England and France from the problems of vassalage and feudal franchise which were so constantly bound up with them. Neither the general dealings of Edward II with his French neighbour and kinsman, nor his efforts to uphold his authority in Ponthieu and Gascony have, as yet, been examined in the detail which the copiousness of the materials allows, but the investigations are well worth making, even admitting that no great modifications of our general views of his policy can be expected to result from them. Enough, however, has been written by French historians of the general relations of Edward II to the four kings, who governed France during his reign,[1] to enable us to remedy to some extent the incuriousness of our English historians in the matter. We find that, despite the near kinship and double marriage relation between the English and French royal houses, and despite the very close

engaged on the study of this neglected subject. His edition of the *Flintshire Ministers' Accounts, 1301—1328*, published through the enterprise of the Flintshire Historical Society (1913), is an excellent first step in that direction. Another pupil, Mr. J. G. Edwards, is also devoting himself to the history of Wales between the Edwardian conquest and the death of Edward II.

1. Conspicuous among these I may mention M. Gavrilovitch, *Le Traité de Paris 1259*, pp. 96—111 (1899); P. Lehugeur, *Histoire de Phillipe le Long, 1316—1322*, pp. 240—266 (1897), the best consecutive study of Anglo-French relations for any part of Edward II's reign with which I am acquainted; and E. Déprez, *Les Préliminaires de la Guerre de Cent Ans*, pp. 14—26 (1902). To them may be added E. Albe, "Les suites du traité de Paris de 1259 pour le Quercy," in *Ann. du Midi*, 23e année, pp. 472—491; 24e année, pp. 54—78, 218—231, 396—410 (1911-1912). All these also touch on Anglo-Gascon questions. Miss H. Johnstone informs me that she has made collections to illustrate this subject, notably the "War of Saint-Sardos," and its preliminaries.

social, political and commercial intercourse between the subjects, high and low, of the two realms, there was, underlying their apparent friendliness, a deep incompatibility of position which rendered a cordial understanding impossible. There was the constant problem of the relations of the French overlord to his Gascon vassal, the interminable debates as to the interpretation of the treaty of Paris of 1259 and of the subsequent explanatory treaties. The "process" of Périgueux[1] of 1311 was as ineffective as the "process" of Montreuil had been before Edward II came to the throne. As time went on, there was a gradual intensification of the strain which, under Edward III, was to make the Hundred Years' War inevitable.

In dealing with these questions, we are no longer working out the after results of the policy of Edward I. We see ourselves rather anticipating the special problems of the reign of Edward III. The personal friendliness between the courts made slow and doubtful the development of the strong forces which made for hostility. Yet in the conflict of these opposing tendencies, we discern how, insignificant as is the foreign policy of Edward II, it has some prospective importance by reason of the fact that the whole relations of the two realms centre round the constant undermining of the English power in Gascony and the vain efforts made by the agents of the English dukes to resist it. In the ineffective attempts to gloss over differences of policy by marriage bonds and personal ties, we see the beginnings both of the great war of the next reign and of the long efforts of diplomacy, which retarded its outbreak until a good ten years after Edward II's death. Passing over minor difficulties that were for the moment smoothed over, we have, at the end of the reign, a real, though short, outbreak of hostilities in the "War of Saint-Sardos," whose whole course showed the futility of the previous efforts of the two courts to maintain the peace. In the inability of the English to resist French aggression; in the feverish efforts to raise

1. There is a very convenient and clear summary of these negotiations in Madame Lubimenko's *Jean de Bretagne, comte de Richmond*, pp. 80—91. Gavrilovitch, *op. cit., pp.* 124—144, prints the minutes of the *processus* and the long grievances of the English.

armies, which would not materialize, to fight for the king's Gascon inheritance; in the occupation of Gascony by Charles of Valois almost without resistance, we learn that the inevitable struggle could have in the long run but one inevitable end. Gascony was, as under Edward III, the root of the troubles between the two kings; but already we have the contributing causes of the later and more famous rupture at work in the French championship of the Scots, in the rivalries of English and French sailors and traders, and in the close commercial relations of England with the great Flemish cities, at this time on quite irreconcilable terms with their French overlord. Nothing essential is wanting, save the English king's claim to the French throne, and that, as we now recognize, was not at the root of the Hundred Years' War.

Turning from Edward II's general French policy to his administration of Ponthieu and Gascony, we see the same notes of normal feebleness of control, and spasmodic, though earnest, efforts towards reform, which characterised his policy in numerous other directions. With regard to Ponthieu I have nothing to say, but am content to leave the subject to the competent scholar who is now engaged in investigating it.[1] As regards Edward's southern dominions, the ordinances of 1311 had declared that Gascony, like Ireland and Scotland, was in peril of being lost for lack of good ministers, and provided that "good and sufficient ministers" should be chosen by the baronage to replace these unworthy officers.[2] The ordinances were so far respected that they saved Gascony from the heavy hand which the Frescobaldi had laid upon its finances, but it can hardly be said that any other material amelioration of its condition resulted from them. The short-lived seneschals of Edward II[3] had not a sufficient tenure of power to be able to carry out any real reforms, even if they had actually ruled at Bordeaux for the whole of their brief periods of

1. Miss H. Johnstone will soon publish, in the *English Historical Review*, an article on the Edward's administration of Ponthieu before his accession to the English throne. For its seneschals see Appendix II, p. 398.
2. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 282.
3. For personal details see Appendix II, pp. 394—396.

office. But they were sometimes absentees; were sometimes engaged in negotiations at Paris or some nearer centre of French diplomacy; and were all hopelessly crippled by the embarrassed state of the finances of the duchy and the constant calls for pecuniary assistance, made by the English king for his own purposes. In any case, officials, who were changed more than twenty times in the twenty years of the reign, could hardly have hoped to exercise any real authority. On the whole, it is a wonder that they did so well as they did.

The financial officers of Gascony, the constables of Bordeaux, held office longer than the seneschals. There were only ten constables during twenty years, and some of them had a reasonable period of authority. But in Gascony as in England the real element of continuity was supplied by the officials of secondary rank. The best instance is the case of the controller of the castle of Bordeaux, the minister who stood to the constable[1] in the same relation as that in which the chamberlains stood to the treasurer of the exchequer, or the controller of the wardrobe to its keeper. To this office Edward I appointed John Guitard to act during the king's pleasure, from 30 March, 1305. Guitard retained this place for the whole of Edward II's reign, and was still in office in the early years of Edward III. This is the more significant as Guitard was a Gascon clerk, working with Gascon subordinates, and often called upon to discharge higher functions when the constable was absent from his post.[2] In him, and his subordinate Albert Medici,[3] lay the real continuity of Gascon administration, which went on much in the same way, whatever English nobleman, or English clerk, happened from time to time to be sent out

1. His function was "ad audiendum et testificandum reddicionem compotorum" of the constable of Bordeaux and the receivers of customs at Bordeaux; *R. G.*, iii, no. 4718. This function was supposed to involve annual attendance at the exchequer at Westminster.

2. Guitard was also "custos sigilli quo in Burdegalesio utimur ad contractus"; *G. R., 1—3 Edw. II*, m. 23. He often acted as deputy of the constable.

3. He was for many years "contrarotulator maiorie ville nostre Burdigale et scriptor scribanie prepositure Umbrarie nostre Burdigale." "L'Ombrière" was the castle of Bordeaux. Albert became constable in 1326.

to represent the home authority. Thus in Gascony, as in England, the subordinate officials did most of the work, and upheld under great difficulties the traditions of orderly and sound government.

The finances of Gascony were closely conditioned by those of England, and the constable and controller were expected to account regularly before the exchequer at Westminster. The worst troubles of Gascony were financial, and between 1309 and 1311 the duchy was the prey of the grasping Amerigo dei Frescobaldi, who was made constable of Bordeaux, though he never resided there, but acted through his deputy, Ugolino Ugolini. The ordinances did Aquitaine the good service of getting rid of the Frescobaldi, though they also turned loose on their native land spoilers so expert as the Calhaus, whom the favour of their kinsman, Gaveston, had, for a time, attracted to wider fields of exploitation in England. The remedy now adopted was the renewal of the system of Edward I's reign. But the restoration of the financial control of an absentee English constable, acting through Gascon agents, was not a sufficiently strong measure to retrieve the difficulties of the situation. The English government, whether controlled by Edward or by the barons, expected to get from Gascony appreciable subventions for carrying out its ambitious schemes in England. Failing these, it saw no remedy save the pledging of Gascon revenues as a security for loans absorbed in the general service of the English crown.

A temporary salvation was now to come from pope Clement V. What Clement had done as pope for Edward II we shall soon see.[1] But Clement never forgot that he was a Gascon nobleman, a born subject of the Gascon duke, and a former archbishop of Bordeaux. From 1305 to 1308, it looked as if his only difficulty was whether he should rule the church universal from Gascony or from Poitou.[2] He never lost a chance of restoring to their ancient opulence the family of the Gots, and his nepotism, unsatisfied with five cardinal nephews and as many duchies

1. See below, pp. 228-30.

2. This is clearly brought out even by the skeleton itinerary of Clement in Mas Latrie, *Trésor de Chronologie*, pp. 1124—1127.

and rectorships in Romagna, ultimately took the form of providing his numerous kinsfolk with castles, lands, treasure and churches in Gascony.[1] At his native place of Villandraut,[2] he erected one of the completest and most dignified of Gascon castles, and there and at Uzeste[3] he endowed colleges of secular clerks for whose service he erected stately churches.[4] Two of his kinsfolk entered the higher circle of Gascon nobility when his nephew Bertrand de Got became viscount of Lomagne and Auvillars,[5] and when Bertrand's daughter and heiress, Reine, became the wife of John, count of Armagnac.[6] The resources of the papacy swelled the scanty patrimony of the house of Got, and the pope, as a private person, was ever willing to embark on any speculation, which if of doubtful financial attractiveness, would at any rate glorify his family and increase his hold on his fatherland.

The necessities of Edward II now gave Clement his opportunity. After long negotiations conducted by papal agents, Clement agreed, *tanquam persona priuata*, to advance him a sum of 160,000 golden florins of Florence, the equivalent of £25,000, sterling, on condition that the

1. Ehrle, in *Archiv für Literatur- und Kirchengeschichte*, v, 148, enumerates 10 brothers and sisters and 24 nephews and nieces of Clement V.

2. Villandraut, chef-lieu de canton, ar. Bazas, dep. Gironde. It was anciently styled Saint-Martin du Got.

3. Uzeste, cant. Villandraut (5 kilometres), ar. Bazas, dep. Gironde.

4. Details of Clement's position as a Gascon nobleman are given in E. Berchon, "Histoire du pape Clément V" in *Actes de l'Académie de Bordeaux*, 3me série, 55me année, 1893, pp. 493—535. See also F. Lacoste, *Nouvelles Etudes sur Clément V* (Bordeaux, 1896); C. Wenck, *Clemens V und Heinrich VII* (Halle, 1882); and Ehrle, "Process über den Nachlass Clemens V," in *Archiv für Literatur- und Kirchengeschichte*, v, 1-158 (1889). Both Ehrle's comments and the texts throw special light on Clement's financial relations with Edward II. Clement's *Regesta* have been published *in extenso* in eight magnificent folios at the cost of Leo XIII (Rome, 1884—1892).

5. Lomagne, capital Lectoure, comprised most of the modern arrondissement of Lectoure, dep. Gers, and the cantons of Beaumont and Lavit, dep. Tarn-et-Garonne. Auvillars is an adjacent canton of that name in Tarn-et-Garonne, the three cantons constituting the whole of that department south of the Garonne.

6. This was the John I of Armagnac who survived to be the great enemy of the Black Prince. His marriage with Reine took place in 1311, but on her death in 1325 (*Foedera*, ii, 609) Lomagne went to John and became permanently part of Armagnac, Lectoure later becoming the capital of that county.

whole "issues" of Gascony were handed over to the pope or his nominees to administer.[1] A small sum of £30,000 *chapotenses*, for each of the first two years and £18,000 *chap.*,[2] subsequently, was to be paid back by the pope to Edward to enable him to meet the expenses of maintaining the duchy. The contract was announced on 28 October, 1313; the whole sum was paid down in the course of March, 1314, and the issues were handed over to the pope's nominees on 16 March.[3] But Clement died on 20 April, and, when his remains were entombed in his own church of Uzeste, there was an end to any schemes he may have entertained for establishing his family in Gascony in such a position as to anticipate, however slightly, the glorious territorial nepotism of the popes of the Renascence.

In his testament Clement V left the bulk of his vast accumulated treasure to his nephew Bertrand, on the condition, which may or may not have been a real one, of employing the major part of it on the projected crusade and other pious uses. The possession of this great store gave the viscount of Lomagne continued importance during the long papal interregnum, but the unfulfilled conditions afforded John XXII an opportunity of attacking him, which involved a famous trial in the years between 1318 and 1321, and ended in the unconditional submission of Bertrand. A side issue of this process was the question of Clement's loan to Edward II. By the terms of the contract, Bertrand and the other executors and heirs of Clement V continued to receive the issues of Gascony for several years. This period, between 1314 and 1317, is called in Gascon history

1. The contract is printed in *Foedera*, ii, 231, from the Gascon roll. Pains were taken to procure its confirmation by Philip V, *ib.*, ii, 231. For the method of payment see Ehrle, *op. cit.*, p. 45.

2. The 'libra chapotensis' or 'chipotensis,' a usual currency in Aquitaine, was of lower value than the *livre tournois*, £1. 5s. *ch.* being equivalent to £1 *tour.* As the pound sterling was worth £4 *tour.*, it was equivalent to £5 *ch.* Such sums as £6,000 and £3,700 sterling were ridiculously inadequate to pay for the expenses of government in Aquitaine.

3. *C. P. R., 1313—1317*, p. 205. Each florin was evaluated as three shillings and three halfpence sterling. Clement also lent 100,000 florins or more to Philip the Fair; Ehrle, p. 91.

the "time of the obligation,"[1] and the Gascon rolls give abundant evidence of the difficulties in which the government was involved by the appropriation of the local revenues to foreign collectors. There was appointed, doubtless on the Gots' nomination, a new constable of Bordeaux, a clerk named Aicard Barbe, who accounted for the receipts on behalf of "those having a claim for the receipt of the issues of the duchy by reason of the obligation."[2] The subordinate receivers of Saintonge and Agenais equally acted as the agents of the king's inexorable creditors.[3]

To make matters worse, Edward II got little benefit from Clement's loan. The whole sum was paid over to Antonio di Pessagno of Genoa, who after 1311 stepped into the place left vacant by Amerigo dei Frescobaldi, and recouped himself, after this fashion, for the advances which he doled out to keep up the king's household and government.[4] It is no wonder that Edward strove to go beyond his ordinary taxes in Aquitaine, and that he sent on a special mission to his duchy, Sir John Benstead and Thomas of Cambridge, the ex-chief baron of the exchequer, to solicit contributions from the Gascons towards the expenses of his war against the Scots.[5] There is no evidence that these efforts were rewarded by any considerable success.[6]

1. "tempus obligacionis," *Misc. Books Exch. T. R.*, clxxxvii, 191.

2. "Recepta de compoto domini Aicardi Barbe, constabularii Burdigale, pro causam habentibus in recepcione exituum ducatus predicti virtute obligacionis," *ib.*, p. 192.

3. *Ib.*, p. 191.

4. *C. P. R.*, *1313-17*, pp. 203—206, records payments made by Anthony amounting to £111,505. 15s. 8½d., for which he had accounted at the wardrobe and received bills of the wardrobe. Among his receipts were the £25,000 from Clement V, *ib.*, p. 205. The date of Anthony's quittance is 27 Nov., 1314. He was appointed on 18 Oct., 1313, to receive Clement's loan; *Gascon Roll*, *7 Edw. II*, m. 10. In 7 Edw. II the receipts of queen Isabella's wardrobe were "de Antonio de Pysane £5,303. 11s.; summa totalis recepti £5,559. 18s. 11d."; *Exch. Accts.*, *K. R.*, 375/9. The Genoese practically supported the queen's establishment for the whole of the year.

5. *G.R.*, *9 Edw. II*, mm. 16, 20; *ib.*, *10 Edw. II*, m. 8. Their credentials are printed in *Foedera*, ii, 273-4, under the date 17 July, 1315. Among the persons they solicited for aid was the viscount of Lomagne himself, from whom a further loan of 60,000 gold florins was sought; *ib.*, ii, 259. Cambridge's account for expenses is in *Exch. Accts.*, *K. R.*, 309/22.

6. Their report is in *Chanc. Miscell.*, 26/10.

The "time of the obligation" continued until November, 1317, when a remarkable attempt was made to set things straight. This was no less than the appointment of Pessagno, the king's chief creditor, as seneschal of Gascony.[1] The financier is no longer "our beloved merchant" but "Sir Anthony of Pessagno, knight." His nomination is worth recording as the first instance of a creditor of the merchant class being advanced to a great office of state, hitherto limited to noblemen. His mission was to resume into the king's hands the issues of Gascony from the executors of Clement V, and to obtain their consent to this step.[2] But the appointment was not a success, and was not of long duration. Anthony was only a year in office and spent part of that in negotiations with John XXII at Avignon. However, he won over the consent of the viscount of Lomagne to the termination of the obligation, and so fulfilled the great object of his mission. Bertrand, already involved in his litigation with John XXII, was in no position to make a stiff fight, and the English king made a serious effort to pay his debt to him. Accordingly in July, 1318, the accounts of the "time of the obligation" were rendered before the archbishop of Bordeaux.[3] But it was no great change for the better to get out of the hands of the old pope's executors into those of Anthony. The complaints, which invariably followed his appointments to any office,[4] had already begun to flow to England, and he was

1. *Foedera*, ii, 345. The date is 3 Nov.

2. *G. R., 11-12 Edw. II*, m. 16, "ad resumendum in manum nostram omnes exitus ducatus predicti de executoribus testamenti bone memorie domini Clementis nuper pape quinti, etc."

3. *G. R., 11-12 Edw. II*, m. 7. The relevant documents, now probably lost, were calendared in "Stapeldon's Calendar" as including "Instrumentum principale super fine compotorum exituum ducatus Aquitanie factum coram archiepiscopo Burdegale," and the "Ratificatio . . . per dominum B. vicecomitem Leomanie et Altiuillarie"; *Misc. Books Exch.*, clxxxvii, 192. Bertrand recovered a large part of what the pope had advanced to Edward; Ehrle, *op. cit.*, pp. 40, 57. He got nothing back of his uncle's loans to the French king; *ib.*, pp. 57, 135.

4. See, for example, the complaints of the Cornish tinners against him, when, after the fall of Gaveston, Anthony obtained a commission to buy all the tin produced in Devon and Cornwall. In 1316 the tinners procured the revocation of the patent; G. R. Lewis, *The Stannaries*, pp. 142-3, 241-2, *Harvard Hist. Studies*, 1908.

in November charged to attend in person at Westminster to render his own account of his stewardship.[1] He was at once replaced by Sir William Montagu, and with that practically ends the Genoese adventurer's connection with English history. He was never seen in England for many years, though so late as 1320 he was still offered safe-conducts to induce him to tender his accounts to the exchequer.[2] Later on he became a bitter enemy of Edward II, and in 1325 was accused of inciting his brother Manuel, the admiral of the king of Portugal, to send an armada for the invasion of England.[3]

The administration of Gascony went back to normal lines under the seneschalship of Sir William Montagu, after whom there was sent to Gascony the ex-wardrobe clerk, Richard of Elsfield, as constable of Bordeaux.[4] There ensued, however, a continued series of changes in the office of seneschals which prevented a real improvement. The period of confusion had relaxed the duke's hold over his duchy, and made it impossible for his officers to resist the steady encroachments of the French king on his sovereign rights. Appeals to the French court were encouraged, and it was but natural that sufferers from such an intolerable régime as that of Arnold Calhau, the English seneschal of Saintonge, should carry their complaints to a powerful and sympathetic overlord.[5] So early as 1314 the suzerain was sure enough of his power to forbid the circulation of "sterling," and the minting or circulation of Bordeaux moneys within the duchy, as infringing the uniformity of

1. *G. R., 11-12, Edw. II*, m. 5.

2. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 508, a safe conduct dated 11 Oct., 1320, and available till the Michaelmas following. Compare *C. C. R., 1318-1323*, p. 85, an order to the exchequer of 8 June, 1319 to audit with all speed the accounts of what Pessagno had received in Gascony for the king's use.

3. *G. R., 18 Edw. II.*, pt. ii dorso. The king speaks of Antonio as "quidam A. de P. noster olim familiaris." Next year, however, Manuel was an ambassador from Portugal to Edward offering an alliance; *Foedera*, ii, 625. In 1332, Anthony, though still having doubtful relations with the exchequer, was again the king's counsellor and ambassador to France.

4. Elsfield was *ostiarius garderobe* in 1314-15; *Exch. Accts., K. R.*, 376/7.

5. See for these *Foedera*, ii, 351-2. We must not overstress his acquittal in 1317. Calhau was Gaveston's cousin. See above, p. 13.

PUBLIC
DEPTFORD

monetary standard, which was claimed to be the law of France.[1]

All through the reign strong external and internal sources of evil had been acknowledged, and frequent proposals for reform had been sent to England by the seneschal and his council. Moreover, the need of reform was recognized by the despatch from time to time of commissions from England, which, if possible sources of reformation, must also have restricted in various ways the not over great authority of the seneschals for the time being. Bishop Salmon of Norwich, John earl of Richmond, Guy Ferre and the other English representatives at the abortive Périgueux conferences of 1311 had also been charged with ordering the king's affairs in Aquitaine.[2] They busied themselves with such matters as setting up a court of appeal in Gascony, to avoid the necessity of recourse to the parliament of Paris; with the organisation of public archives in Gascony, with the remedying of troubles in Bordeaux[3] and the like.

More systematic commissions of reform began when the Pembrokian triumph established a wiser rule in England. The first commission was that of Hugh le Despenser the elder and Bartholomew Badlesmere, despatched in February, 1320, to enquire as to the excesses of the seneschal and inferior officers of Gascony.[4] Next came the appointment of John Hotham, bishop of Ely, and of Amaury de Craon, the former seneschal, in February, 1324,[5] and that of Alexander Bicknor, archbishop of Dublin, Edmund, earl of Kent, and William of Weston, doctor of laws, in March, 1324, for the reformation of the rule of Gascony.[6] Their destination in the first instance was to Paris, to appease the troubles which the "affair of Saint-Sardos" had recently exacerbated. Nothing effective was done there and on 20 July, 1324, Edmund's appointment as

1. *Foedera*, ii, 240, 250. See also Déprez, *Les Preliminaires de la Guerre de Cent Ans*, p. 24.
2. *G. R., 7 Edw. II*, m. 6.
3. See for these matters Lubimenko, *op. cit.*, pp. 91—101.
4. *Foedera*, ii, 418; *G. R., 13 and 14 Edw. II*, m. 11.
5. *Ib., 15, 16 and 17, Edw. II*, m. 7.
6. *Ib.*, m. 5. *Foedera*, ii, 547-8. The commissions vary, as do the names of the commissioners.

king's lieutenant threw on him the responsibility of resisting French invasion as well as of retaining the duchy. Kent's failure in the first task gave him the opportunity of undertaking the second. However, before the end of 1324 all Gascony save Bordeaux, Bayonne and Saint-Sever was in the hands of Charles of Valois.[1]

Negotiations for peace soon followed; and it was arranged that the king's son, Edward, earl of Chester, should receive Aquitaine and perform homage to Charles IV for it. On 10 September, 1325, Edward was appointed duke.[2] He soon made his way to France, accompanied by his mother, and did homage to his uncle. A partial restitution of Gascony followed, leaving the Agenais in French hands. But Edward II never allowed his youthful son more than the title of duke of Aquitaine. The administration was still continued in the name of the old king, who styled himself "governor and administrator" of his son's lands.[3] Accordingly, he appointed the last seneschal, Oliver of Ingham, and the last constable, Albert Medici, who ruled what was left of his son's duchy, until the return of both son and wife precipitated the revolution which hurled Edward II from the throne.

Such periods of war and invasion naturally left little mark on the history of Gascony. Accordingly, the last important Gascon reform was that embodied in the royal ordinance, issued on 8 February, 1323, at Pontefract.[4] By it a serious effort was made to give unity of administration to the whole of the king's dominions in southern France. It sought to maintain the supremacy of the seneschal over the whole of the duchy, by the provision that the subordinate seneschals of Agenais, Périgord, Saintonge and the Landes, and the hardly less important mayor of Bordeaux, should receive their commissions under the Gascon seal, instead of directly

1. *Cont. Guillaume de Nangis*, ii, 58, ed. Géraud, Soc. de l'histoire de France, 1843.
2. *Foedera*, ii, 607.
3. "Edwardi filii nostri primogeniti, Aquitanie ducis, ac comitis Cestrie, Pontiui, et Montisstrolii, ac terrarum ac rerum ipsius gubernator et administrator."
4. *Foedera*, ii, 505-6.

from the English chancery. Similarly, the financial supremacy of the constable of Bordeaux was secured by the enactment that henceforth he should appoint the treasurers and receivers of the minor *sénéchaussées* and that they should account to him. It was also laid down that a Gascon chancery should be erected under a "sufficient clerk, learned in written law, as chancellor and keeper of the seal," who was to "live on the profits of the seal," and be appointed by the seneschal and council. The policy of setting up "seals for contracts," hitherto only allowed at Bordeaux, was to be extended to Blaye, Libourne, Saint-Macaire and La Bastide de Craon. Moreover, the number of ministers in Gascony and their fees were strictly defined.

This interesting ordinance shows how the reforming spirit, so strong in England, was also extended to Gascony. It had hardly become law when the political troubles with France came to a head. The outbreak of the war of Saint-Sardos and the ensuing conquests of Charles of Valois gave the friends of the English king's power in southern France no further opportunity of putting their house in order.

(2) The Art of War.

Let us now turn to the chief lessons of the military history of the reign. As most of the fighting that mattered took place within the three kingdoms, its more obvious morals have always been brought home to us. That Bannockburn was a turning point in tactics, as well as in politics, is among the commonplaces of history. Yet most of the recent accounts of the great battle seem to me to be constructed on essentially wrong lines. I may say this without giving offence, since my own attempts at describing the battle are among those open to reproach. We have assumed that Bannockburn was a defensive battle of immobile Scottish pikemen, holding a carefully prepared position, north of the Bannock, in the broken and wooded land through which ran the direct route from the south to

Stirling. The recent writings of Mr. W. M. Mackenzie,[1] and a visit to the traditional site of the engagement have convinced me, that the true story of the battle is something quite different. Though Bruce had carefully prepared to fight in the spot where he is generally supposed to have fought, his success in the skirmishes of 23 June made it desirable, and possible, for him to change his whole plan of operations. Disheartened by Gloucester's failure in the scuffle along the high road, alarmed at the defeat of Clifford's horsemen by Randolph's pikemen in the "carse" to the north-east, the English army abandoned, on the evening of 23 June, all intention of accepting battle in the place carefully prepared for them, and moved bodily into the carse, where the troops encamped for the night "upon a plain near the water of Forth, beyond Bannockburn, an evil, deep and wet marsh, having sadly lost confidence through the events of the day." [2]

The sore plight of the English was well known to Bruce. Accordingly on the morning of Midsummer day, he took the bold course of leaving his strong position and marching into the carse. This movement was a virtual challenge of the English to fight further to the north-east in the level ground nearer the Forth, a position very much to their disadvantage. Bruce's success on this field meant the ruin of the English, but victory could only be secured by the defeat of cavalry by infantry in a level plain. The battle of St. John's day was fought between armies, facing each other on lines running almost north and south. The English right rested on the Forth, opposite Cambuskenneth, and was in easy communication with Stirling. Its left extended nearly to the lower Bannock, and retreat was only possible, save in the direction of Stirling, by crossing the Forth or the Bannock. Mr. Mackenzie emphasizes the fact that the Scots attacked the English. It is perhaps injudicious to press this point too

1. These are "The Real Bannockburn" in *Transactions of the Glasgow Historical Society* (1910); the notes to Mr. Mackenzie's edition of Barbour's *Bruce* (1909), and his *Battle of Bannockburn: A Study of Mediæval Warfare* (1913).

2. *Scalacronica*, p. 142.

far. I should admit, however, that they threw themselves into the way of their enemy, and deliberately forced a battle. It is hard, however, to believe that Bruce in 1314 ventured upon what the English commanders of the Hundred Years' War never dared to risk, namely, to attack with dismounted followers a heavily-mounted army of men-at-arms. On the contrary, it seems almost certain that, when the two hosts got into close quarters, the English horse took the immediate initiative by charging the dense "schiltrons" of Scottish pikemen.[1] But when the attack failed to break through the impenetrable array, the Scots in their turn assumed the offensive. The English horsemen were easily beaten; the infantry hardly got into action; of both arms, the luckiest were those who fled towards Stirling and thence escaped home by circuitous routes. Great numbers were drowned in the Forth and the Bannock, and so, in one day, the freedom of Scotland was secured.

Two of the chief authorities[2] for the battle, compare the struggle in set terms with the Flemish victory over the chivalry of France at Courtrai, twelve years before. How close the analogy was, will not be realized until some one takes the pains of comparing in detail the incidents of the first two victories of pikemen over feudal cavalry in western Europe. Here, it is enough to say that, while the shame of Courtrai was soon wiped out for the French by the glories of Mons-en-Pévèle, there was no reversal of the verdict of the victory of St. John's day. Important as is the position of Bannockburn in the history of tactics, it is not quite a precedent for purely "defensive battles" such as Crécy and Poitiers. The lessons that the Scottish tactics were only safe in a defensive fight was only learnt at Halidon Hill, which saw the easy discomfiture of the Scottish schiltrons, charging up the slope against the men-at-arms, flanked by archers, who were stationed to meet them on the crest of the hill. We must not, however, treat the Scottish pikemen as if they were light-armed irregulars, like the Welsh and Irish

1. *Chron. de Lanercost*, p. 225. "Et magni equi Anglorum irruerunt in lanceis Scottorum, sicut in unam densam silvam."
2. Monk of Malmesbury, p. 206, and *Scalacronica*, p. 142.

auxiliaries of the English. On the contrary, they were, like the Flemish infantry at Courtrai, solidly equipped, well disciplined and adequately armoured warriors, who if not technically "men-at-arms" were fitted to cope with them on equal conditions.[1] The superiority of such a force over mounted men-at-arms, was at once made clear to every English warrior who had experience of northern warfare. It was driven home still more when, in 1319, the aggressive schiltrons of Scotland scattered the "disorderly array"[2] of Yorkshire in the battle of Myton, and, in 1322, drove Edward II to panic flight from Byland or Rievaux to Bridlington.[3]

That the English soon learnt their lesson, is clear from the details of the battle of Boroughbridge, where the Cumberland knight, Andrew Harclay, governor of Carlisle, and a warrior of great experience against the Scots, easily defeated the demoralised Lancastrians by holding the passage over the Ure by a force of dismounted knights and men-at-arms, arranged in a schiltron after the Scottish fashion.[4] Applied to a purely defensive battle, and strengthened by better archery support than the Scots had at Bannockburn, Harclay made short work of the followers of the rebellious

1. The Scots, who fought on foot, rode horses on the march; compare Trokelowe, p. 84, "equites suos penitus dimittebant." Lanercost, p. 239, shews that at Myton in 1319 the Scots forming the schiltron of pikemen, on winning the day, "equos suos ascenderunt, et Anglicos sequebantur." Malmesbury, p. 203, also speaks of the Scots in terms which suggest dismounted "hobelers," if not men-at-arms. "Et nullus eorum equum ascendit, sed erat unusquisque eorum *levi armatura munitus, quam non faciliter penetrasset gladius.*" No very light armour could have warded off sword thrusts. Compare what *Annales Gandenses* (p. 32) say of the Flemings at Courtrai—where the French men-at-arms succumbed to infantry, but not light infantry, for they were opposed "vulgaribus peditibus, licet fortibus, et virilibus, bene armatis et cordatis, et expertos gubernatores habentibus."

2. I borrow the phrase from the *Scalacronica*, p. 148.

3. The battle was on the steep hill north of Byland. It is uncertain whether Edward was at Byland or Rievaux; *Chron. de Melsa*, ii, 346. Bridlington (p. 79) says at Byland, and he ought to know, but several chroniclers say at Rievaux. Sir James Ramsay over-emphasises the evidence for Rievaux; *The Genesis of Lancaster*, i, 133. I regret that the precise and valuable account of Edward II's reign, given in this work, was published too late for me to use it as much as it deserves.

4. See my note on "The Tactics of the Battles of Boroughbridge and Morlaix," in *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xix, 711-13. The source for the details in *Chron. de Lanercost*, pp. 243-4.

earls, though they also dismounted their men-at-arms for the assault on the bridge. Boroughbridge, with its defensive tactics and its effective archery, is a step nearer Crécy than Bannockburn, and deserves a more prominent place than has always been allowed to it in military history, just as Harclay, for his quick adaptation of Bruce's methods, and his shrewd improvements on them, merits a permanent fame among our mediæval masters of the art of war. Nor did Harclay stand alone, for in the abortive expedition of 1322, the last attempt under Edward II to invade Scotland in force, the English deliberately preferred heavy infantry to cavalry and even to archers.[1] I have now said enough to show that the reign of Edward II was a turning point in military history, since it witnessed the critical stages of the transition from the fashion of fighting under Edward I to the English military system of the Hundred Years' War.

(3) Ecclesiastical Policy.

We must now make an abrupt transition to the ecclesiastical history of the reign. Edward II inherited from his father the two rather conflicting points of view, which, at various times, had determined the old king's attitude to problems of church and state. There was the heroic, but rather fruitless, policy of conflict, which had come to a head in the struggles with Peckham and Winchelsea, and had made its mark in legislation in the anti-clerical statute of Mortmain and the anti-papal statute of Carlisle of 1307. There was also the more normal feeling, that it was as well for an orthodox king to keep on friendly terms with the ecclesiastical authorities, and that, with an accommodating pope, like Clement V, it was a waste of energy to carry on the old heroics. Though Winchelsea came back from exile, as soon as Edward II was on the throne, and though the returned archbishop threw all his weight on to the side of the ordinances, it was the policy of mutual accommodation that prevailed in this reign and so secured the general

1. See J. E. Morris, "Cumberland and Westmorland Military Levies," in *Transactions of Cumberland and Westmorland Archæological Assoc.*, new ser., iii, 324.

friendship of crown and papacy, of church and state. Accordingly, there is no period of the reign in which there is the least suggestion of the renewal of the chronic mediæval conflict of the "two swords." On the contrary, the time may be regarded as one in which the loosely grasped secular sword was pushed aside by the more skilfully directed sword of the church. Under Clement V, the first of the two popes of the reign, friendly relations were facilitated by reason of the pope's willingness to resign to the crown the lion's share of the material spoils of the church. Under the dominating and dogmatic John XXII, his successor, the renewal of the higher style of papal assumption brought even more solid fruits to the church than had been secured by the pliant complaisance of Clement. The dividing line between the two pontificates corresponds pretty accurately with the deep line of division between the two political periods of the reign.

While Clement V was still pope, papalism secured a double triumph in the abandonment of any effort to enforce the statute of Carlisle and in the permanent establishment of *annates*, first imposed by a bull of Clement in 1306, as a regular source of papal revenue from the English church.[1] Besides these new exactions, so called "crusading" tenths continued, as of old, to be levied, not only in England and Wales, but also in Ireland and, so long as Robert Bruce allowed it, in Scotland. In the result, these levies produced much more benefit for the English kings than for the crusading cause, or even for the papal authors of these taxes.[2] But papal taxes collected by English bishops, like John Halton of Carlisle, represented alien authority in the shape little calculated to offend national susceptibilities, at least south of the border.

The alliance of church and state was never more close than when the business in hand was the spoil of the church.

1. Clement V's bull has been recently published, from a Salisbury episcopal register, by Prof. W. E. Lunt in his valuable article on "The first levy of Papal Annates," in the *American Historical Review*, xviii, 62-4.

2. I may refer to my remarks on crusading tenths during this period, especially in Scotland, in my *Introduction to the Register of Bishop Halton of Carlisle*, pp. vii—xxii, Canterbury and York Soc.

And the reign of Edward II first saw the suppression of a great monastic order in the abolition of the knights of the Temple by Clement V, in the council of Vienne. If this were the work of the ecclesiastical authorities, the state took a good share of the spoils. Though the lands of the Templars were assigned to the knights of St. John of Jerusalem, a considerable portion of them remained permanently in the possession of the crown or its nominees. The Hospitallers found that the only way to secure part was to renounce the rest. Despite the large alienation of church property thus effected, the dissolution of the order of the Temple must still be accounted as a manifestation of papal authority. And it is significant that the case against the Templars first brought into England agents of the papal inquisition.

Winchelsea, the last of the zealots for ecclesiastical privilege among the Edwardian bishops, died in 1313, and Clement V in 1314. When after a vacancy of nearly two years, James of Cahors became John XXII, the real Avignon period of papal history began.[1]

I must pause for a moment to emphasize the deep mark which John XXII's masterful personality imprinted on English ecclesiastical history. Under him "first fruits" became a universal and permanent obligation, and the "good asses" of England bore this new burden with their accustomed docility.[2] It was due to John that foreign ecclesiastics were permanently established in England as collectors of papal taxation, instead of the English prelates, to whom that duty had sometimes recently been delegated. Notable among these was the papal nuncio, Master Rigaud of Assier, canon of Orleans, like the pope, a Cahorsin, who was promptly despatched to collect arrears of tenths, of Peter's pence, of king John's tribute money, and of other

1. Clement V was made pope in 1305, and mainly resided in Gascony and Poitou until the end of 1308. After 1309 he partly lived at Avignon, which only became the permanent papal headquarters after John XXII took up his residence there.

2. Murimuth, p. 28, "Anglici, sicut boni asini, quicquid eis imponitur tolerantes"; compare *ib.*, p. 175.

dues from England to the apostolic see.[1] It was not long before Rigaud's activity provoked an order, forbidding him attempting anything to the prejudice of the crown, as "complaints have arisen that he is exercising various new, unusual and inconvenient practices against ecclesiastical persons and laymen of the realm." [2] It was clearly the personal work of John XXII that appointment to English bishoprics, hitherto only exceptionally made by direct papal nomination, became henceforth, normally and almost invariably effected in that fashion, not only in this reign but for the rest of the middle ages. Robert of Reading tells us that John reserved the nomination of English bishoprics to himself, because he was disgusted with the appointments which had been been made hitherto through the instrumentality of Edward II. The hostile Westminster monk approved the pope's action, as that of a restorer of the English church to its pristine purity.[3] But John's policy would have been better justified, if he had not on several occasions pushed his complaisance to the king to the extent of "providing" to English sees notoriously unworthy clerks. It may, however, be set down against this, that John stopped some of the worst jobs which the English government wished to perpetrate.

How completely John carried out the policy of papal nomination, can be realized from the fact that, while between 1307 and 1316 there were only two individual English prelates appointed by the pope,[4] there were between 1317 and 1326 ten bishops established by papal reservation and provision.[5] While in the former

1. Rigaud de Asserio's *Register*, appendix, pp. 555-8, Hampshire Record Soc., prints his various commissions. See also above, p. 113, and *Cal. Papal Letters*, ii, 127.

2. *Foedera*, ii, 356; *C. C. R., 1313-18*, p. 593 (6 Feb. 1318).

3. Robert of Reading in *Flores Hist.*, iii, 175-6. Perhaps the Westminster monk is more intent on abusing Edward II than praising the pope. But John's extension of the system of papal nomination was not limited to England.

4. These were Walter Reynolds, appointed in 1309 to Worcester and translated in 1313 to Canterbury, and Walter Maidstone, made bishop of Worcester in 1314.

5. These were:—1317: Thomas Cobham to Worcester, Louis of Beaumont to Durham, and Adam Orleton to Hereford. 1320: Rigaud of Assier to Winchester, and Henry Burghersh to Lincoln, 1322: Roger

period ten English bishops owed their sees to capitular election,[1] in the days of John XXII, only four were so appointed, two of whom obtained their sees after great difficulty and a long contest. Moreover, the last of these appointments dates no later than 1319.[2] Between 1320 and 1326 there was not a single case of successful capitular election, and five chapter appointments in succession were quashed by the pope. Among John XXII's nominees were aristocratic youths, like Louis of Beaumont and Henry Burghersh, who stood well with pope and government; respectable officials like Roger Northburgh, the old *garderobarius*, and scandalous self-seekers of the official type, such as Adam Orleton, John Stratford and William Airmyn. Two of John's bishops were Frenchmen, namely, Beaumont and Rigaud of Assier. Only one represented a high spiritual type, and this was Thomas Cobham, the "good clerk," the "flower of Kent," the distinguished academic teacher, who received in his promotion to Worcester some consolation for his election to Canterbury being set aside in favour of Walter Reynolds. The two other bishops made by John had at least the merit of not being politicians, but they appear so seldom in the chronicles that it is somewhat rash to generalize as to their character. After 1322, however, John XXII deserves undoubted credit for rejecting the nominees of Edward II, as rigorously as he ruled out the elect of the chapters. It may be accounted to him for

Northburgh to Lichfield. 1323: John Eaglescliffe to Llandaff, and John Stratford to Winchester. 1325: John Ross to Carlisle, and William Airmyn to Norwich.

1. These were:—1308: Walter Stapeldon to Exeter. 1309: Eineon Sais to Bangor, and John Droxford to Wells. 1310: John Keton to Ely. 1311: Richard Kellaw to Durham. 1313: Gilbert Seagrave to London. 1314: David ap Bleddyn to St. Asaph. 1315: Roger Mortival to Salisbury. 1316: John Hotham to Ely, and John Sandall to Winchester. The last four were elected during the long papal interregnum between 1314 and 1316. The reservation of Durham had already been ordered by Clement V; *Foedera*, ii, 313.

2. These were:—1317: William Melton to York, and Richard Newport to London. 1319: Stephen Gravesend to London, and Haymo Heath to Rochester. Of these, Melton, elected in 1316, before John was pope, had to wait eighteen months at Avignon, before he could obtain confirmation and consecration. Haymo Heath, elected in 1317, had his election referred to Rome, and was only confirmed in 1319; *Cal. Papal Letters*, ii, 188-9.

righteousness, that he quashed the election of Robert Baldock to the see of Norwich and so saved England from a most unworthy bishop.[1]

We may also count among the good deeds of pope John that in 1318 he issued a bull of foundation which technically made Cambridge a university established by papal authority. He was more successful in this than was Clement V, when in 1312 he set up a university in Ireland. Another meritorious act of John XXII was the authorisation of the "new taxation" of the dioceses of the province of York in 1318, by which the districts, which had felt the chief stress of the Scotch invasions, were relieved by a substantial reduction of their assessments.[2] The pope was also actuated by excellent motives when, following the example of Clement V in 1312,[3] he sent, in 1317 and later, legates to England to mediate between the king and both his Scottish and baronial enemies. The firm attitude of Bruce prevented any great success in the former quarter, but it was in some measure due to the papal legates that the pacification of 1318 was effected. The mission of the cardinals Gaucelin of Eauze and Luca Fiesco in 1317, and still more that of the archbishop of Vienne and the bishop of Orange in 1324, anticipate the mediation of the inevitable two cardinals, who moved uneasily between the English and French camps in the early campaigns of the Hundred Years' War.

In strong contrast to this long series of papal encroachments on the authority of a weak king, stand the vigorous measures adopted in the end of the reign to protect the interests of the state on the outbreak of war against France. Improving upon the rather tentative measures taken by

1. In this paragraph on papal nominations to bishoprics under Edward II I have been much indebted to the material collected by my pupil, Miss Ethel Hornby, M.A., in her degree thesis on that subject. The details of appointments given in text and notes are largely taken from her work. The dates and details collected by her compelled the conviction that John XXII was responsible for the change described in the text. Stubbs, *Cons. Hist.*, iii, 312-23, has some weighty paragraphs on this subject, but does not emphasize sufficiently the extent to which the policy of John XXII exceeded the action of Clement V.

2. See for more details on this subject later, pp. 236-7.

3. *Ann. London.*, p. 210.

Edward I against "alien men of religion," during his war with Philip the Fair, Edward II in 1324 laid his hands upon all the alien priories, lest the French monks, who held them, should send their incomes out of the country to support the cause of the enemy. Nor were the alien religious the only sufferers. French secular clerks, beneficed in England, had to endure a similar suspension of their revenues. A monastic chronicler reckons the sufferings of beneficed foreigners, who for a great space obtained nothing from their cures, save scanty food and raiment, as among the chief inconveniences arising from the French war.[1] However, in 1326, the crown agreed to allow the alien priors and also the beneficed aliens to "redeem" their property by contracting to pay fixed amounts of money and corn to the state.[2] The precedent of Edward II was carefully followed when the beginnings of the Hundred Years' War involved the alien priories in a larger and more famous suspension. The whole transaction was a mere move in the political game, but some of the chroniclers accuse Edward on this account of sacrilege. They are equally angry at his laying hands on temporalities of his personal enemies among the bishops.[3] But it requires a robust faith to believe that political reprisals against an Orleton, a Stratford, an Airmyn, and a Burghersh have any real ecclesiastical significance. There is, however, a slight suggestion of future anti-papalism in some of Edward's later poses. In 1325 he forbade a prior of Lewes going out of the realm to answer a citation procured by his chief, the abbot of Cluny, "considering the prejudice done thereby to our royal dignity, since no one ought to be drawn to answer outside the realm for anything whereof the cognisance belongs to the king."[4] Here is the language of the statute of Praemunire, if not of the statute of Appeals. Years before this, the well known outbursts of indignation of the monk of Malmesbury against

1. Blaneford in Trokelowe, pp. 150-1; Robert of Reading, pp. 225-6, says the sustentation allowance to foreign prelates was three shillings a week and to foreign religious eightpence a week each.

2. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 313; compare *ib.*, p. 307.

3. See for example Robert of Reading, pp. 218-19.

4. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 529.

the greed of the curia of Avignon showed what some English clerks thought of the administration of Clement V.[1] But we must distinguish between purposeless grumbling, such as every generation saw, and definite steps towards a remedy, such as came from the state alone, and were therefore sadly to seek in the reign of Edward II.

1. Malmesbury, p. 198. "Domine Jesu, vel papam tolle de medio, vel potestatam ejus minue quam praesumit in populo."

VII.

SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC HISTORY. ORIGINS OF THE STAPLE.

(1) State of Society under Edward II.

The social and economic history of the reign of Edward II is still an unworked field, and I can only suggest in outline a few points which, on first examination, have struck me as interesting, leaving others to work them out, and to test the truth of my impressions. It has been a commonplace of both contemporary and modern historians to emphasize in exaggerated terms the miseries from which England suffered under Edward II. In all ages there are prophets of evil, and the chronic disorders of society always gave mediaeval pessimists plenty of material for pointing their moral. But, if we analyse the chroniclers with any care, we shall find that a large part of their dreary picture is drawn with relation to particular districts or to particular periods of the reign. The north, which was exposed to the incessant ravages of the Scots, and was the scene of much of the civil strife, was in these respects in an exceptional condition. Here the misery and desolation were real enough. A comparison of the figures of the "new valuation" of the churches of the province of York, effected in 1318, with that of the "taxation of pope Nicholas," made in 1291, is more eloquent than the rhetoric of any annalist. By the later assessment the two sees, that felt the worst burden of Scottish invasion, had their valuation cut down enormously, Durham falling from nearly £11,000 to a little over £2,000, and Carlisle from over £3,000 to £480 respectively.[1] On the other hand the taxation of the diocese of York was only reduced by two-sevenths. The reason is clearly that, though the northern part was open to occasional forays of the Scots, the greater part of Yorkshire, Nottinghamshire and North Lancashire was outside the

1. See the table in Stubbs' *Const. Hist.*, ii, 580.

area of constant and devastating attack. Indeed, such decline as there was may be as much set down to the general disorder of the times as to Scottish inroads; though these were mitigated for Yorkshire by the frequent presence of the court and government departments. The utter collapse of the two border dioceses speaks for itself.

The worst times were the black years between Bannockburn and the treaty of Leake. For these four successive years there were cold, rain, flood, famine and pestilence, involving such mortality as had not been seen for a century.[1] The north suffered worse than the south, and tales were told how in Northumberland, men could only keep body and soul together by devouring the flesh of dogs and horses. The Scottish invasions and the exceptional feebleness of the government brought the troubles to a head.

In 1318 a rapid improvement followed immediately upon the better political conditions then established. The bushel of wheat, which in the previous years had sold for three shillings and fourpence, could now be easily procured for sixpence. There were more favourable seasons, less fighting and wiser government. The revenue began once more to yield better results;[2] and though there were constant threatenings of war, there was very little fighting, outside Yorkshire and the march of Wales. Mediæval society was always disorderly, and the effectiveness of government was so circumscribed that, just as good kings could not make earth an Eden, so bad kings had strictly limited opportunities of doing mischief. The worst signs of continued political trouble, the marchings and counter marchings of the rival armies of king and barons, were not in themselves sufficient to throw the land into confusion. The skilful policing of London in July 1321, by the mayor, Hamo of Chigwell, made it possible for the huge trains of

1. The trouble began in 1314 (Malmesbury, p. 214; *Flores Hist.*, iii, 174), and was at its worst in 1315 and 1316. The relevant passages in the chronicles are: Malmesbury, pp. 209, 214, 219, 238; Bridlington, p. 48; *Ann. London*, p. 237; Murimuth, p. 24; Trokelowe, pp. 89—98; *Flores Hist.*, iii, 174, 340-1.

2. Prof. Willard informs me that the subsidy rolls from this time begin to show an increased yield.

the northern and western barons to be assigned separate quarters in different suburbs, so that the parliament passed over without any disorder.[1] When a threatened civil war could thus be averted by good management, there was a very practical guarantee for the maintenance of the public peace, so that there were few signs of abnormal trouble and distress during the concluding years of the reign.

Even in the worst period of the reign, the general machinery of administration went on much as usual. At every possible stage the administrative records were kept with remarkable fulness and care, even though the financial records fell, as we have seen, into terrible confusion. The judges went on circuit, or sat at the courts at Westminster or York, just as regularly, and worked through their lists just as carefully, as if all had been well with the state. Thus the Year Books of Edward II's early years are exceedingly copious and instructive. Maitland, who began the great scheme for their republication, has well emphasised their importance for social history. Yet we may search the published four volumes of reports of trials, for the years 1307 to 1311,[2] without finding evidence of more disorder or more difficulty in administering the law than was chronic under mediæval conditions. Even more evidence of the normal course of public business, despite days of trouble and distress, is found in the three volumes, which record the proceeding of the general eyre of Kent, the "longest eyre ever holden," when five justices sat at Canterbury for the whole year preceding Bannockburn, and hundreds of jurors, suitors, and officials from every part of the richest shire in England flocked together to the county town, while Hervey of Staunton and his comrades heard all manner of pleas, alike on Sundays and week-days, in term time and vacation time, only interrupting their unceasing labours for a short month's holiday in August.[3]

1. See *Ann. Paul.*, pp. 294-6: "et sic in pace unusquisque et sine strepitu hospitabatur."

2. *Year Books of Edward II*, Year Books Series, i, ii, iii, and iv, Selden Soc.

3. See the three volumes of the *Eyre of Kent, 6 and 7 Edward II*, Selden Soc., Year Books Series, nos. v, vii, and viii, and especially Mr. Bolland's introduction to vol. i, sections 1, 3, 4, 5, and 15.

The reported cases of the eyre form an extraordinary picture of brutal crime and greedy treachery, but they are not worse than the criminal records of any other mediæval assize, in what are generally considered more orderly and prosperous times.

Another sign that the reign of Edward II was not altogether unprosperous is the remarkable number of pious foundations. I will not say that the dedication of wealth to the church is in itself a sign of material prosperity. In the darkest days of feudalism men set up cloisters in their despair of the secular world. But no such thoughts as those, which in the days of Stephen drove a Walter Espec to a monastery, inspired the comfortable benefactors of religion and learning under Edward II. They gave, not of their necessity, but of their superabundance, and those of them that we know best were rather benevolent and prosperous worldlings than enthusiasts for high ideals. It is not then off the point to appeal to the new foundations of our period, as a sign that there was superfluous wealth, available for pious purposes. The reign saw the creation of two universities in Edward's dominions, though one of these was in fact over a century old, and the other barely struggled into a short existence. The intercession of the government of Edward II procured, in 1318, the bull of John XXII, which formally founded the university of Cambridge, and so converted the unordered and struggling schools of that city into a *studium generale*, established, like Toulouse or Montpellier, by papal privilege.[1] Moreover, a bull of Clement V had, in 1312, established the short-lived mediæval Irish university at Dublin.[2] But these were formal rather than munificent acts. A much more characteristic aspect of the benevolence of the reign assumed the shape of collegiate foundations at Oxford and Cambridge.[3] Indeed in no period of twenty years, except perhaps the generation after the Black Death, were so many new colleges established in the two English universities. No

1. Denifle, *Die Entstehung der Universitäten der Mittelalters*, pp. 374-6.
2. *Ib.*, pp. 639—643. There was a real, if small, university of Dublin in 1320 and also in 1358. See also above, pp. 207-8.
3. Rashdall, *Universities in the Middle Ages*, ii, 490-94, 561-3.

doubt the foundations of the reign were small, but they shewed the drift of fashion in such things, and it is significant that the king and his ministers set the lead. At Oxford Edward II refounded, and provided a habitation in his own palace for, the monastic college of the Carmelite friars, and at Cambridge Edward set up the King's Hall for the children of his chapel. Again at Oxford bishop Stapeldon, afterwards treasurer, founded what was later known as Exeter College,[1] and Adam of Brome, the chancery clerk, founded Oriel College, while Michaelhouse, at Cambridge, owed its establishment to the judge and exchequer official, Hervey of Staunton. The saintly bishop Cobham of Worcester set up a university library for Oxford. He is the chief non-ministerial benefactor of the universities during the reign. To complete our list, however, we must go on for a few years and record the two great foundations at Cambridge, by the widows of prominent actors in our drama, that of Clare Hall by the Gloucester co-heiress, Elizabeth of Clare, widow of Roger of Amory, and that of Pembroke Hall by the widow of earl Aymer, Mary of Saint-Pôl.

Other undoubted signs of social progress are to be found in the growth of English towns, as is witnessed by the large share which London and Bristol took in the politics of the reign, and by the inter-relation of municipal and political changes during the period. The growth of the political and economic importance of London is especially remarkable. Hamo of Chigwell, the clerk who turned fishmonger and became mayor, was one of the most important minor personalities of the reign. His career has hardly been worked out sufficiently for it to be safe to dogmatise about it, but his political leanings seem, like those of most sensible people, to have been towards the Pembrokian policy.

Of great significance for the period was the growth of an English capitalist class, which was able to compete with the Italian bankers for royal favours and commercial

1. Stapeldon founded "Stapeldon Hall" before his ministerial career began. His statutes are printed in Hingeston-Randolph's *Stapeldon's Register*, pp. 304—310. They are dated 1316, one of the worst years of distress.

privileges. Indeed, most of the names of the monied houses, which later financed Edward III, for instance, the Poles and the Conduits, began to appear under Edward II. The result was that, when the Frescobaldi were driven from the realm by the ordainers, there were English merchants able to carry on their work, not only in controlling the export trade, but also in helping to finance the king's government. If they were not sufficiently wealthy to do all that the king wanted, they prepared the way for the famous merchant princes of the reign of Edward III. They were strong enough, however, to compete vigorously with the Bardi, who aimed not unsuccessfully in stepping into the place of the banished Frescobaldi, and had their position further strengthened by the withdrawal of the Genoese financier knight, Sir Anthony of Pessagno,[1] from English politics and business. It was a sign of advance that so brisk a struggle between English and alien merchants was now become possible.

(2) The Establishment of the Compulsory Staple.

The chief points of the economic history of Edward II's reign are all well illustrated by that remarkable consolidation of the staple system, which is, perhaps, the most characteristic feature of its commercial progress. Accordingly, leaving other matters aside, I shall venture to suggest in some detail the most important turning points in the development of the staple of England under Edward II. It will show that much of the credit of a system often supposed to have been the result of the conscious policy of Edward III, is to be set down to the period of his father.

In the thirteenth century there were in various parts of Europe markets of a special sort called staples.[2] These

1. For Pessagno see also above, pp. 219-21. His interesting career is well worth working out in detail.

2. The general economic histories have little to say on the origins of the staple. They are treated with more fulness in Miss Adaline Jenckes' *Origin, Organisation and Location of the Staple of England*, a Philadelphia doctoral dissertation of 1908. But the author covers too wide a field for her work to be final, and the authoritative monograph has still to be written. I am glad to say that my colleague, Prof. Unwin, is devoting his

staples were in essence great depôts of merchandise, established at convenient places on the chief trade routes, and it was natural enough that the townsfolk of a place possessing a staple should do what they could to attract trade to it, sometimes no doubt by compulsion.[1] Thirteenth and fourteenth century England was a land of farmers and graziers, and its chief general exports were wool, skins and leather, to which tin and lead, from the mines of Devon and Cornwall, must also be added. The chief demand for these commodities came from the only neighbouring regions where commerce was organised on large lines, and where textiles were manufactured on a wholesale scale for a universal market. This was the Netherlandish district, including the counties of Flanders and Artois, the duchy of Brabant, and, though to a less extent, the united counties of Holland and Zealand. Accordingly it was to the ports of these regions that English produce was mostly directed, and its course was the more free since, until the end of the thirteenth century, the greater part of the export trade from England was in foreign hands. Up to that period English traders had neither the capital and organisation, nor the enterprise and imagination necessary to compete successfully with the Netherlandish, French and Italian merchants, who were as successful in controlling the sea trade to and from England, as they were in dominating English banking and finance.

Fiscal, political and economic reasons combined to make it important to English monarchs to control the export trade as strictly as possible. The easiest way to do this was to encourage merchants to frequent some particular favoured markets. Accordingly, since the days of Henry III, there had arisen a staple of English wool in the Low Countries,

attention to the subject. I owe much to his suggestion and advice in what I have written here. I have also been helped by the earlier part of the thesis of my pupil, Mr. L. H. Gilbert, B.A., on the *History of the Staple of English Wool, 1313—1353*, which, I hope, he will soon be able to complete and publish.

1. See for this R. Häpke, *Brügges Entwicklung zum mittelalterlichen Weltmarkt* (1908), pp. 222—233. "Dieser Stapel ist mit *Nederlaghe* oder *depositio merciorum* identisch." It was not until 1323 that a "Zwangstapel" was established for Bruges.

though this staple was a voluntary one and there were no penalties on traders who preferred to take their wool elsewhere.[1] Under Edward I the organisation of the customs revenue on a large scale made it imperative that trade should go in certain definite channels to facilitate the collection of so important a branch of the royal income. Accordingly, in 1297, an ordinance of king and council laid down that no "passage of wools or leathers, of messengers or of merchants" was henceforth to be allowed save from certain specified British and Irish ports, where collectors of customs were established, where a "cocket seal" was to be kept, whose stamp was the official notification that wool had paid customs, and where staple commodities were consequently to be concentrated for export, after due payment of the royal duties.[2] This device, however, was a simple plan for the collection of revenue, complicated by the immediate political necessities of a critical period.[3] It only became important, as a stage in the growth of the staple, because of its connection with other measures which gave Edward I some claim to be regarded as the father of the English staple system. It is true, however, that the "home staples" of a later period did grow out of these special centres of export, established to facilitate the collection of customs.[4]

1. *C. C. R.*, *1318-23*, p. 235. There is no reason for doubting the statements to this effect by the English merchants of 1320.

2. *C. C. R.*, *1296—1302*, pp. 86-7, prints at length the ordinance of 1 March, 1297. The specified ports for England were Newcastle-on-Tyne, Hull, Boston, Yarmouth, Ipswich, London, Sandwich, Southampton and Bristol. The ports of Wales and the March were Chester, Beaumaris, Milford and Haverford, but the words "nul passage des leynes ne des quirs" are here omitted, and the monopoly only extended to the "passage des messagers ou des marchauntz." For Scotland the monopoly was vaguely given to the "leus ou sont les coketz, e a Kircudbright," when a cocket seal has been sent to that town.

3. For instance the careful measures taken for the exclusion of Lombard merchants, and the prevention of the introduction of treasonable correspondence.

4. The statement that in 1291 "Edward I assigned staples to certain towns in England, Ireland and Wales," Jenckes, *op. cit.*, p. 8; is based upon the mistake of the editor of the calendar of the Lincoln municipal archives in *Hist. MSS. Comm.*, 14th Report, viii, pp. 6-7, where a document of 19 Edw. II. is misdated "19 Edw. I," *i.e.* 1291 instead of 1326. The document in question is a copy of the ordinance of 1326. See later, pp. 260—262.

The beginnings of the staple system in the later part of Edward I's reign are due to the combination of the new plan of giving a monopoly of the export of wool and leather to special customs ports with the old plan of a "foreign staple," and the new importance given to the staple trade by the political and fiscal exigencies of the most critical years of the great king's reign. There is some evidence, though it is not of a very conclusive character, that already certain ports in Flanders, such as Bruges, and in Holland-Zealand, such as Middelburg, had been recognised by Edward as "foreign staples," though there is no proof that any compulsory foreign staple had as yet been devised. But after 1295, the war with France, the dependence of Flanders on Philip the Fair, and the alliance of the count of Holland and Zealand with the French excluded English merchants from frequenting any of the usual staples of Flanders or Holland. However, a remedy was at hand in the alliance of Edward I with his son-in-law, John, duke of Brabant, which opened up the great Brabançon port of Antwerp to the exporters of English wool, excluded from their usual haunts. Edward I was able to confer a real benefit on the duke by making his dominions a market of English wool, and the export of that commodity to Antwerp created a fund, equally available for financing a foreign ally or maintaining an English army. In 1296 duke John shewed his gratitude by a remarkable charter to English merchants.[1] This was emphasised in 1297 when duke John took the strong step of granting Antwerp, the staple town and the chief port of his dominions, to Edward I to be held by Edward of the duke in fee.[2] The charter was renewed in 1305 in ampler form.[3]

The details of these charters of John of Brabant prove that there was in 1305, if not also in 1297, a "staple" at Antwerp, which was something much more than a simple

1. See H. Obreen, "Une Charte brabançonne inédite de 1296," in *Bulletin de la commission royale d'histoire de Belgique*, t. lxxx (1911). Prof. Unwin, *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xxvii, 810-11, suggests that this is the document calendered in an inventory of the charters of the merchant adventurers in 1547, printed in Schanz, *Handelspolitik*, ii, 577.

2. *Foedera*, ii, 206, from a patent of 6 Edw. II.

3. This is also printed by Obreen, *op. cit.*

market, like the earlier staples. It proves that the "merchants from the realm of England"[1] were established as an organised corporation, under a "mayor, captain, or consul," and empowered to treat with the municipality, hire houses, purchase goods at reasonable prices, pay a definite scale of tolls and duties, punish offenders, and discharge other semi-political as well as commercial functions.[2] We are quite near the staple of the next reign, but not quite at it. We have a society of merchants, under a mayor, established in a foreign "staple town." But the name staple does not occur in the charter and is found very scantily in the records of Edward I's reign. We have the thing rather than the name, and the thing is still hidden away in the background. Above all, there is no evidence that all wool from England was necessarily sent to Antwerp. Antwerp was, indeed, a favoured, privileged, and organized market, but it was not yet a compulsory one. Moreover, difficulties soon arose from the new state of things. Before long English merchants raised bitter complaints of the exactions of the duke of Brabant, and commercial relations were broken off for a time in 1302.[3] In 1306, after maritime Flanders had, by its successful revolt, shaken off the yoke of Philip the Fair, Edward I allowed merchants to go to Aardenburg in Flanders, "as they had been wont to go to Bruges."[4] But the market at Aardenburg, like the earlier market at Bruges, was only a special wool market, favoured and protected by royal decree. There was no compulsory foreign staple under Edward I.[5] But apart from compulsion, there were all the elements out of which the later monopolistic and compulsory staple grew.

1. They are always "mercatores de Anglia" or "les marchanz de reaume de Angleterre." It is not quite certain from the phrase whether they were Englishmen or traders from England. Probably both.

2. *Ib.*, p. 25. "Præterea volumus . . . quod mercatores de Anglia . . . maiorem, capitaneum, sive consulem sibi, si voluerint, eligant." This is in 1305, but in 1297 the merchants could hold "lor assemblees, courts et congregationz." It is, then, hardly rash to say that there were mayors of the staple before 1305.

3. *C. C. R., 1296—1302*, pp. 439, 540, 551. In 1303 commerce was resumed on the duke's apology; *ib., 1302-7*, p. 110.

4. *C. P. R., 1301-7*, p. 435.

5. Häpke, *op. cit.*, p. 68. "So lag noch keine Stapelzwang vor."

The reign of Edward II saw the establishment of a compulsory staple system for English merchants, and therefore marks a decided advance on the reign of Edward I in this relation. With the advent of coercion also, judicial proceedings came, through which the establishment of the English staple system is revealed with absolute clearness in the English records. In the early years of the reign things remained much as they had been since 1297. The merchants trading to Brabant had to run the gauntlet of French and Flemish hostility, and the early chancery rolls of the reign are full of complaints of the outrages perpetrated by the Flemings and men of Calais on them. On the other hand, the duke of Brabant complained in his turn that, by 1310, English merchants had ceased to hold staple at Antwerp, and induced Edward to issue a proclamation that access to that port was still safe and open.[1] Various circumstances were now drawing English trade into more southerly regions. The increasing cordiality of the political relations of England and France made commercial dealings the easier, and the possession of Ponthieu by the English king made him a near neighbour of the Artesian cloth centres. Thus it was that the city knight and alderman, Sir John Bakewell, who was seneschal of Ponthieu between 1299 and 1305, and became in 1307 a baron of the English exchequer, had been, up to his death in 1308, "used to attend to the affairs of the merchants of England and France,"[2] doubtless by the royal direction. Moreover, the absolute dependence of Edward II on Italian merchant financiers, such as the Frescobaldi, naturally tended to divert our commerce into more southern channels.

With the exile of the Frescobaldi by the ordinances, the chance for the English merchant was again come. A few months after the ordinances, we find two negotiations carried on simultaneously in the interests of English traders beyond sea. In 1312 Richard Stury, burgess of Shrewsbury, was sent to treat with the count of Flanders as to the wrongs of English merchants.[3] The reason for Stury's

1. *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 293, 18 Dec., 1310.
2. *Ib.*, p. 53. For the problems involved in this person's career see later, Appendix II, pp. 336 and 341.
3. *Foedera*, ii, 188.

selection is clearly that he was "mayor of the merchants of our realm," the first holder of that office whose name seems to have been preserved.[1] It looks as if the "mayor of the merchants" were arranging for the transference of the staple of wool from Antwerp to Flanders, probably to Bruges. Whatever was the case with the court and its alien capitalistic advisers, the bulk of English mercantile opinion seems still to have been in favour of having the staple located in the region where our chief commercial interests were centred, that is in Flanders. Accordingly, not much later there was a second negotiation in progress, whose origin seems to be due to the efforts made by the French to secure the staple for some French commercial centre. While these opposing currents were still ineffective, the decision of the problem was transferred from foreign courts to the merchants, by the first known ordinance of the staple, issued by the king and council on 20 May 1313.[2]

The ordinance of the staple of 1313 is a landmark in English economic history, and shows the definite establishment of the system towards which things had been drifting since 1296. It put an end to the merely preferential staple, and set up a monopolistic staple in its place.[3] It recited that up to this time merchants, both natives and aliens, had been free to take their wool and wool-fells at their discretion

1. Richard Stury, burgess of Shrewsbury, represented Shrewsbury in the "model" parliament of Nov. 1295, the Lincoln parliament of 1301, and the Westminster parliament of 1313; *Return of Members*, i, 5, 14, 40. He was sent on 26 Nov., 1312, as one of two envoys to Flanders (*Foedera*, ii, 188), and when so acting on 13 Feb., 1313, is called "maior mercatorum de regno nostro"; *ib.*, ii, 202. On 22 Aug., 1313, he is called "mayor of the wool staple"; *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 15, that is after the "charter" or "ordinance" of 1313. He was violent in his methods, being accused in 1303 of breaking into a barn at Shrewsbury; *ib., 1301-7*, pp. 198-9. In 1320 he was defendant in an action of novel disseisin; *ib., 1317-21*, p. 536. Two other mayors of the staple under Edward II, Charlton and Béthune, were also members of parliament, both for London.

2. Issued as a patent, *C. P. R. 1307-13*, p. 591, it is spoken of sometimes as the "charter," and more often as the "ordinance of the staple." It is printed in Jenckes, *op. cit.*, appendix, pp. 61-62, and Varenbergh, *Relations diplomatiques entre le comté de Flandres et l'Angleterre*, pp. 440-1.

3. Häpke, *op. cit.*, pp. 67-68, puts the extent of the innovation very clearly. "Die Urkunde von 1313 spricht es selbst aus dasz es sich um *eine neue Einrichtung*, Schaffung eines gesetzlichen Stapels handelt." "Stapelzwang" now begins.

to various places in the lands of Brabant, Flanders and Artois, but ordered that henceforth both classes of merchants should export their commodities "to a fixed staple, within one of the aforesaid lands, to be appointed by the mayor[1] and community of the same merchants of our realm." The same body was also to have authority to change the staple place. Power was given to the mayor and his council to exercise jurisdiction over all exporters, notably by imposing fines on both alien and English merchants who contravened the ordinance.

The staple of 1313 was in a sense a new departure, but the ordinance accepted, without alteration, the organisation that was already in existence, and Stury remained mayor, after, as before, the ordinance. But he is now called mayor of the wool staple, as well as mayor of the merchants. The novelties involved in the ordinance were the fixing of the staple by the merchants themselves, the power to change the staple place at their will, the right the staple officers now had of fining and exercising jurisdiction over all merchants, the restriction on free trade, the subjection of the foreign merchants to the organised "merchants of this realm," and the virtual conversion of a private society, privileged by foreign monarchs, into a public association, backed up by the authority of the English state. The ultimate control of the society was in the hands of the representatives of the chief boroughs of England, whose nominees were henceforth summoned in quasi-parliamentary form through the sheriffs, whenever any problems of the staple needed discussion.

There was naturally a strong opposition to the new system, and the general neglect of merchants to observe the ordinance led to strongly worded "writs of aid," addressed to the collectors of customs on behalf of Stury and his colleagues. The ports to whose officers these writs of aid were addressed were clearly the ports which had collectors of customs and "cocket seals," and to which staple com-

1. The mayor now had a seal, a symbol of corporate life. See *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 15. It is not impossible, however, that this had been the case since 1297.

modities, now as in 1297, compulsorily went for export.[1] It would be rash to call these places "home staples" as yet, but the writs of aid show that the co-operation of the cocket ports was necessary, if the "foreign staple" was to become a reality. The home staple was, therefore, already in germ, although its association with the foreign staple was still in the future.

It is impossible not to connect the staple ordinance of 1313 with the issue of the more famous ordinances of 1311. The organisation of the first compulsory staple, then, is, like the institution of an independent keepership of the privy seal, one of the permanent marks left by the ordainers on our institutions. To the ordainers the staple ordinance doubtless seemed the necessary corollary of the exile of the Frescobaldi, who had up to now controlled the wool trade, collected the customs, and acted as the chief bankers and loan-mongers of the king. Apart from this obnoxious family, the ordainers made no attempt to exclude foreign merchants from the export trade. That would have been impossible at a time when English shippers were only just struggling into prosperity, and were often only able to freight a single ship by an elaborate combination of interests. But even more definitely than in the Brabant charter of 1297, the aliens were now subordinated to "the merchants of this realm" with whom the directive force of the ordinance lay. Unluckily the times were not yet ripe for English control of the English export trade. It is, however, a sign of the new tendencies at work that we are able to claim for the ordinances of 1311, so often regarded as a mere illustration of baronial reaction, a modest place of their own in English economic development. Yet, though for fourteen years, 1313 to 1326, strenuous efforts were made to carry out the ordinance of

1. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, pp. 15 and 56, dated 22 Aug., 1313. The ports enumerated are Newcastle-on-Tyne, Hartlepool, Hull, Lynn, Yarmouth, Ipswich, London, Sandwich, Chichester, Southampton, Bristol and Chester. The English and Welsh ports are not quite the same as those mentioned in 1297; see above, p. 243. Hartlepool has displaced Boston, and Lynn and Chichester are new English ports. The disappearance of the Scotch towns and the limitation of the Welsh trade to Chester are interesting.

the staple, the attempt was not much more successful than was that to execute the ordinances of 1311.

At first there was great competition between French, Artesians, Flemings and Brabanters to secure within their own lands the coveted "fixed staple." The mayor and his council had a valuable privilege to sell, and there was no want of customers for it. If Antwerp and Brabant soon dropped out of the running, Flanders and Bruges had in their favour the natural trend of the wool trade to the greatest manufacturing centres and most cosmopolitan port of the west. It is not unlikely that a staple in France was proposed. However, the chief seats both of commerce and of political authority were passed over, and the prize went to Artois, then ruled by the countess Maud, whose daughter Joan was the wife of Philip of Poitiers, the future Philip V, and who had neither the strength nor the wish to set herself up independently of her overlord. The town chosen was Saint-Omer, a place best known for its rival churches but economically conspicuous as a venerable seat of the cloth trade, whose wimples were famous, and which had, so far back as the days of Henry II, already sent to England the most famous financier of his age.[1] Like most mediæval ports, Saint-Omer was at some distance from the sea, but it was easily accessible by sea-going ships up the river Aa, and was not, therefore, necessarily an impossible or an inconvenient seat of the English staple. Its selection was probably due to the fact that Philip the Fair, preferring that the staple should be within his kingdom, and alive to the danger of its location at Bruges among rebels who had thrown off his sway, agreed to take under his protection the staple at Saint-Omer.[2] Anyhow, the English staple was already established there by May 1314.

The fixing of the staple place did not involve the better keeping of the ordinance. Robert, count of Flanders, pleaded urgently for the transference of the staple to

1. The conjecture of Prof. Haskins that William Cade came from Saint-Omer seems to me to be a happy one; *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xxviii, 730. For Cade see also above, p. 45.

2. *Foedera*, ii, 248, 251.

Bruges,[1] and the power of the staplers to change the staple place at their will left no finality in the matter. The king's interest in the English merchants was limited to what he could get out of them. He doubtless obtained loans and advances in return for the ordinance, but the English traders' capital was not great enough for him to be able to rely upon them altogether. Before long the society of the Bardi of Florence stepped into the place left vacant by the Frescobaldi, as the king's chief financial agents and bankers. They had to be rewarded by licences to send their wools to ports more convenient than Saint-Omer for their trade, part of which was the export of wool to Italy.[2] Wool ships still sailed to Brabant, though the French did their best to stop them.[3] Saint-Omer pleased no one; not even the French king. In May, 1314, Philip the Fair was complaining to Edward that the staplers shut themselves so closely in Saint-Omer that the fairs of Lille, at the moment within the royal domain, were deserted by them.[4] In 1315 Louis X was suggesting the transference of the staple to some place within his dominions between Calais and the Seine.[5] His suggestion was taken so seriously that writs were issued for a parliamentary conference of merchants, to be held side by side with the Lincoln parliament, to consider what was best to be done.[6] At the same parliament of 1316,[7] the complaints of the Flemings were discussed and more seriously three years later.

Besides the rivalries of Flemish and French claims for the staple, which combined to make precarious its location at Saint-Omer, a new point of view was soon raised that went still deeper into the root of the matter. This was the policy of fixing the staple in England itself instead of beyond sea.

By 1318 the mayorship of the staple had passed to the

1. *Foedera*, ii, 252.
2. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 169, may be an early example.
3. *Ib.*, p. 545.
4. See Philip IV's complaints in *Foedera*, ii, 248, that the staplers attended the fairs at Lille less than when the staple was at Antwerp.
5. *Foedera*, ii, 281.
6. *Ib.*, ii, 281.
7. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 356-7.

London mercer, John Charlton, who represented the city in the important York parliament of October, 1318.[1] There, with his brother member, Roger Palmer, Charlton had made a spirited protest against the encroachments of the household jurisdiction on the liberties of the city, which, set down on the roll, clearly shows the sympathy of London with the general Pembrokian policy.[2] Accident, however, has informed us that, among the discussions of this assembly, were certain important debates on economic problems, no suggestion of which is recorded on the roll of that parliament. The question, already ventilated in earlier parliaments, was seriously raised whether it was to the profit of king and kingdom that certain places should be established within England, where wool and other staple articles should be exclusively bought and sold. One special argument adduced was that, under the existing system, counterfeit moneys were introduced into England from foreign parts to the loss of the king and to the special detriment of merchants, whose main business was within the English realm.[3] No conclusions were arrived at for the moment, a negative result fully justified by the extraordinary press of business, which, as we have seen, the York parliament had to deal with. It is pretty clear, however, that there was a large body of mercantile opinion in

1. *Return of Members*, i, 55.
2. Cole's *Records*, p. 31.
3. *Exch. Accts. K. R.*, 457/5, includes a series of writs and returns for a conference on 24 April, for knowledge of which I am greatly indebted to Mr. A. E. Bland, of the Public Record Office. The preamble runs: "Licet inter alia regni nostri negocia in parliamentis nostris hactenus habitis ventilata, de stabiliendo certa loca infra idem regnum in quibus, *et non alibi*, in ipso regno lane venderentur et emerentur, fuerit sepe tactum, et in parliamento nostro habito ultimo apud Eboracum inde seriosius quam alibi tractaretur, idem tamen negocium utrum ad nostrum et incolarum dicti regni proficuum cederet, vel quibus locis commodius, ex certis impedimentis finaliter non fuit deductum; super quo, ac eciam super illo quod diuerse monete, que de cuneo nostro non sunt, nostre monete contrafacte, in dictum regnum de partibus exteris in dies apportantur, ut dicitur, in subuersionem monete nostre, in nostrum preiudicium manifestum, in quibus tam quorundam burgensium quam mercatorum et aliorum precipue, qui infra regnum nostrum, et non in partibus exteris, merchandisis utuntur, informaciones siue consilia sunt plurimum opportuna." The sidelight thrown on this hitherto unknown aspect of the York parliament justifies, I venture to think, the narrative I have constructed in the text. Compare *ib.*, 457/32, to which Mr. Bland also kindly directed my attention.

favour of the proposed policy, and quite certain that important steps were immediately taken to give effect to it.

The chief difficulty in the way was the conflict both of mercantile and of political interests. There was a strong desire in some quarters to put the staple back at Bruges, and this question had to be settled before the English staple could be fairly considered. The "mayor of the merchants of the realm" had stayed behind at York "on business touching the state of the said merchants," until 19 November, when he had a safe-conduct to go to Flanders,[1] doubtless on business connected with the staple. But, though Charlton's safe-conduct lasted until Easter, he was back in London early in the new year, for on 20 January, 1319, he was directed to set forth the king's pleasure to a quasi-parliamentary assembly of representatives of the chief commercial towns, brought together to discuss the expediency of the staple of wools being removed to a Flemish city.[2] It looks as if the need of French friendship, and the vested interests created by the charter of 1313, had put an abrupt end to Charlton's negotiations in Flanders. Anyhow, if Charlton had urged the expediency of the English staple to the Flemish authorities, it is not likely that he received any encouragement from them to persevere in a policy so detrimental to continental interests. It may well be, then, that the English government sought to strengthen his hands by a further reference of the whole policy of the Flemish staple to an assembly of merchants. Unluckily, we have no information, save that contained in the writs, as to the meeting of 20 January. It is clear, however, even if it ever met at all, that little favour was shown to the revival of the staple at Bruges.

Events had moved apace. No more was heard of the Flemish staple, but on 8 and 9 March writs were issued

1. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 239.

2. *Ib.*, p. 250; the writ to London is printed in *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, 196. It was to treat "super stapula lanarum in partibus Flandrie tenenda, juxta formam carte nostre inde confecte, et super aliis diuersis statum mercatorum regni nostri tangentibus." Two citizens or burgesses were summoned from each constituency. Charlton is described as "per consilium nostrum plenius informatus." He was then the official spokesman of the government.

summoning, through the sheriffs, representative bailiffs and other citizens or burgesses of the chief commercial towns to meet on 24 April at Westminster, to consider the advisability of fixing the staple at certain places within the realm of England.[1] A very large number of towns were returned by the sheriffs as having chosen their representatives,[2] and it is certain that the assembly was actually held.

The importance attached to the meeting may be inferred from the fact that it was delayed until the exchequer got back to Westminster from its lengthened absence at York. This return had been fixed since January for the fortnight after Easter, that is Sunday, 22 April 1319.[3] The Easter session of the exchequer would, under such circumstances, naturally begin on Monday, the 23rd. The very day after, the treasurer and barons were diverted from their natural business of the Easter "view" of the sheriffs' accounts to assist, with certain members of the council, in the discussions of the assembled merchants. The whole problem of the staple touched finance so nearly that it was looked upon as exchequer business. Accordingly, though the writs had gone out of chancery, they had been tested by Norwich, the chief baron, and the returns were made to the exchequer,[4] where, it is likely, the meeting was held. All

1. This is the assembly from whose writs the preamble has already been quoted. The return of the writs is written usually on the dorse. That of Oxford records that the borough was ordered to send "unum balliuum et quatuor de probioribus et potencioribus burgensibus ville nostre ad tractandum simul vobiscum ac cum ceteris mercatoribus regni Anglie de stabilienda certa loca infra idem regnum in quibus et non alibi," etc. *Exch. Accts., K. R.*, 457/5.

2. *Ib.*, 457/5. Though this large bundle of writs is clearly incomplete, it is very full for certain shires of the south and east. For instance, the sheriff of Somerset and Dorset sends returns of representatives chosen from Bridport, Shaftesbury, Dorchester, Lyme, Weymouth, Melcombe and Ilchester. The returns from the midlands and north seem to have been mainly lost. The variety of phrase and form, and the rudeness of the handwriting of some of the returns, especially of those sent in separately from the writs, is curious. London was asked to return two bailiffs and six citizens; *Letter Books of the City of London, E.*, p. 105. This is the only reference I know to this assembly that has found its way into print until the publication of Mr. Bland's note referred to later, p. 256.

3. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, p. 175 records the writs of 22 Jan. ordering the restoration of exchequer and common bench to Westminster for the quinzaine of Easter.

4. The Bristol writs were addressed, for instance, "dominis magnificis, venerabilibus, atque discretis thesaurario et baronibus de scaccario et aliis de concilio domini regis."

these little details suggest that considerable importance was attached to the deliberations of the assembled merchants.

Unluckily, we are not completely informed as to the results of the Westminster conference. One remarkable document, preserved in the exchequer archives, suggests that no general resolution was come to, by reason of divided counsels, but that a strong party had been formed to uphold a definite policy, which this writing expounds at length. On its back are written out the names of the shires and towns which accepted the policy it advocates. The list includes London and Stamford and perhaps Shrewsbury, and fourteen counties ranging up the Thames valley from Essex to Gloucestershire, and then up the Severn valley by Herefordshire, Worcestershire, Warwickshire, and Shropshire to Staffordshire and Cheshire.[1] But it excludes the counties south of the Thames, save Berkshire, excludes the whole south-west, all the north, the east midlands north of Buckinghamshire and Bedfordshire, save Stamford, and the whole of the east, north of Essex. There was as much wool-growing in the excluded as in the included shires, so that it is very difficult to suggest other than local reasons for the lines of division.

The policy advocated in this remarkable document was, no doubt, suggested by London to the shires of the Thames valley and the west. It was that there should be two staple towns set up in England, one to the north and the other to the south of Trent, and that for this purpose, places should be chosen which were capable of defence, well situated for the repair of foreign merchants, and the protection of their lives and property, with a good harbour in the place itself, and where they could use the law merchant and no other law or customs. Moreover, foreigners visiting these staples were to be prohibited from going farther into the realm, or sending agents to purchase goods on their behalf elsewhere than in the established staples. It was also forbidden to introduce foreign money into the staple

1. The inclusion of Cheshire, a palatinate, with the ordinary shires, is very unusual, but is quite certain.

towns, though bullion and plate could be brought in. By such a policy the impoverished English towns, it was urged, would be enriched and revived; English merchants, who had suffered grievous wrongs in foreign markets, would have their own; stores of specie would flow into the realm and afford material for coining good money in the royal mints; the circulation of foreign or counterfeit money would be prohibited; the king would be discouraged from borrowing from foreigners; English resources would not be used to help lands at war against us, and the treasure, now in the hands of aliens, would be diverted to the enrichment of Englishmen. It is a strongly-worded manifesto of the patriotic English merchant who sees his own and his country's gain in the exclusion of the foreigner and the diversion of native products from continental to English markets. It represents, doubtless, the point of view of the London capitalists, who, like Charlton himself, regarded this policy as satisfying their economic interests as well as their patriotic prejudices.[1]

The division of the Westminster conference of merchants made any immediate settlement impossible. Even those who wished for an English staple might well dispute as to which were to be the staple towns, and the Londoners' policy of centralisation of the staple in their own city,[2] even with a single northern staple thrown in, was not likely to commend itself to the men of the north and east, who, up to then, had had the choice of six places of export, north of the London-Bristol line. In particular it was against the interests of the wool-growing districts of the eastern counties, which saw direct exportation of their wares cut off altogether, and high freights chargeable for bringing their commodities to either of the two proposed staples. But there were still strong advocates of the foreign staple, not only among the aliens, but among English merchants whose

1. The manifesto of the Londoners and the southern and western shires, written in French, is contained in *Exch. Accts. K. R.*, 457/32. This important and illuminating document has now been printed *in extenso* by Mr. Bland, its discoverer, in his note on "The Establishment of Home Staples, 1319," in *Eng. Hist. Rev.*, xxix, 94—97 (1914).

2. I assume the Londoners intended that the southern staple was to be at London, though nothing is said openly to that effect.

interests centred in the Flemish trade. To defend his policy against their attacks on it, Charlton preferred to continue the staple, as long as it was abroad, at Saint-Omer, which was convenient to few on economic grounds, though it had political advantages in the eyes of the friends of the French alliance. His insistence on the Saint-Omer staple soon brought Charlton into conflict, not only with the Anglo-Flemish interests, but also with the Bardi, whose opposition to Saint-Omer was based on their dislike to any fixed staple at all. The attitude of the Bardi was the more dangerous, since they were the bankers both of Edward II and of the Despensers,[1] and by simply withholding the advances, on which the government depended, could at any time stop the machine of state. Moreover, their point of view was shared by many Englishmen, though not quite for the same reasons. The wool-growers, the smaller merchants, who bought up wool locally and took it to the ports, were anxious, like the Bardi, for a more open market than that which suited the London capitalists. It was to no purpose that the foreigners were bribed to accept the law by liberal dispensations from the operation of the ordinance. They were allowed to export wool direct to Italy; to take it to other ports than Saint-Omer; to act as if the ordinance had never been passed. These concessions stimulated rather than abated the agitation for the repeal of the ordinance of 1313 altogether.

In the York parliament of 1319 the question again cropped up. The policy of the Bardi drove all friends of fixed staples, whether home or foreign, to make common cause in defending the charter of 1313. Complaints to the king of the non-execution of the law led to the appointment of Charlton, as mayor, to hold judicial proceedings against violaters of the staple and impose heavy fines upon them.[2] Charlton's zeal in carrying out these instructions soon brought him into conflict with the merchants interested in free export. Their complaints to the council resulted in a remarkable meeting, held before the king, his ministers, the

1. *Ann. Paul.*, p. 321.
2. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, pp. 234-5; *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, 218.

justices of both benches, the barons of the exchequer and others of the royal council "in the green chamber of his palace of Westminster" on 13 April, 1320.[1] The Bardi voiced the opposition to the foreign staple. They declared that they had "never consented" to the "charter of 1313," and declined to be bound by it, because Magna Carta gave all foreign merchants leave to trade freely in England on the sole condition of paying customs. Against them were arrayed all the great men of the city of London, Charlton himself, Prior and Prentice, Hackney and Nasard, Swanland and Piggsflesh. All these urged the maintenance of the ordinance of 1313, and argued that this could only be done by exacting the penalties imposed under it. The council accepted the English merchants' pleas and ordered the immediate enforcement of heavy penalties against all contraveners of the act. This measure threatened both those who wished the transference of the staple to Bruges and those who wished its removal to English ports. A commission was issued to Charlton, Adam of Brome and others, who were henceforth styled the king's justices deputed to try contraventions of the staple.[2] They showed great energy, and impartially fined and imprisoned both classes of offenders.

The friends of the Flemish staple were the easiest to hit. Even before the green chamber conference, Henry Northwood and other English merchants at Bruges had made a confederacy to restore the staple to Bruges, and to hinder merchants transferring themselves to Saint-Omer.[3] Accordingly, the council issued a prohibition of any attempt to set up a staple at Bruges. By August, Charlton himself imprisoned Henry Nasard, one of his chief supporters in the green chamber, for taking wool to Flanders.[4] The commissioners were equally severe on the Italian exporters.

1. This day, the quinzaine of Easter, was exactly the same as that of the colloquy of merchants of the previous year. The letter close summarising the deliberations is printed in full in *ib.*, ii, ii, 217-18.

2. For these commissions see, for instance, *C. P. R., 1317-21*, pp. 477, 489, 603.

3. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, pp. 186-7.

4. *Ib.*, pp. 253-4.

But it was little use condemning offenders of all types, when the government impartially opened the prison doors to all alike. The Bardi in particular had their offences condoned, and received constant dispensations for their open breaches of the law.[1] At last the Flemish exporters had their turn also, for in 1323 a truce was arranged with Flanders on the condition that freedom to export wool from England to Flanders was to be allowed. On 22 July, 1323, Charlton was despatched to Saint-Omer to inform the staplers there that their monopoly was suspended till Easter.[2] Then, in 1324, came open war between England and France, which necessarily put an end to the Saint-Omer staple altogether. The prolongation of the Flemish truce for another year made the position of Bruges increasingly favourable. It was now, in fact, if not in name, the foreign staple for English wool.

Charlton had ceased to be mayor of the staple before the final collapse of his policy. His successor, the obscure William of Merewell, was charged to make permanent the temporary arrangements with the Flemings. In August, 1324, he was commissioned to renew the negotiations for a staple at Bruges.[3] Next year Merewell was replaced as mayor of the merchants by Richard of Béthune, a very prominent London pepperer, whose name suggests an Artesian origin.[4] The negotiations were transferred to London, where delegates of the "three towns" of Flanders appeared and prolonged the truce for another year.[5] It was

1. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, pp. 250-1, gives a typical group of such licenses to export without reference to the staple. Compare *ib.*, pp. 303, 392; *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 518; *ib., 1321-4*, pp. 193, 300, 496; *ib., 1324-7*, pp. 6, 122. There are in *Exch. Accts., K. R.*, 120/14 and /15, two rolls, delivered by Charlton into the exchequer on 21 May, 1321, which contain copious details of the fines imposed by him and Adam of Brome on offenders against the ordinance of the staple. Such prominent Londoners as Swanland, Conduit and the Prentices were among the victims, but the foreigners generally had to pay the biggest fines.

2. *C. C. R., 1318-23*, p. 9.

3. *Ib., 1323-7*, pp. 307-8; *C. P. R., 1321-4*, p. 13; *Foedera*, ii, 566.

4. He is recorded as acting as mayor between 2 May and 27 Nov. at least. He is generally called "Betoigne" in the rolls, but so is the count of Flanders, Robert of Béthune. For his trade see *Calendar of Wills in Court of Husting*, i, 445, note.

5. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 378; *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 134.

virtually a condition of this further treaty that the staple should be established at Bruges, and on 2 May, 1325, mayor Richard was formerly ordered to transfer himself and the merchants thither and hold the staple there.[1] It was, however, stipulated that this should only last as long as the truce endured, and that it should not prejudice the rights of the merchants nor establish a precedent. It looks as if Béthune was already, as he was a little later, a partisan of the foreign staple, as was not unnatural in a man of foreign origin, who was more interested in the import of spices than in the export of wool. But a license to the Bardi, to disregard the new staple, showed there was no finality in this settlement.[2] And a new danger arose, when William, count of Holland, an ally of France, seized English ships, loaded with staple commodities, and took them into Flushing.[3] Thus the staple at Bruges was soon in as precarious a position as the staple at Saint-Omer had been. And if Bruges were impossible, what hope was there of setting up a staple in any less favoured foreign town? At last the final blow was given to the policy of 1313 by the younger Hugh le Despenser.

We are now at the very end of Edward II's reign. Queen Isabella had refused to return to England; had taken her son to the Netherlands and was negotiating the Hainault marriage as the preliminary of the invasion of England. France was again hostile. Not content with occupying most of Aquitaine in 1324, and still keeping its grip upon it, France also threatened a descent on the British coast. Desperate efforts were made by the Despensers and Baldock to meet the imminent dangers. It was now more necessary than ever to secure popular support. It was at this crisis that there was issued the exchequer ordinance of 1326, but administrative reform was a matter for the administrators only, and, so far as known, was not always welcome to the public. The real proof of Despenser's desire to win popular favour, the certain evidence that the younger Hugh

1. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 378.
2. *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 122.
3. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, pp. 508, 529.

was a reformer to the last, lie in the ordinance of the staple, the second of this reign, issued by king and council from Kenilworth on 1 May 1326, "for the common profit and relief of the people of all our realm and power."

By the ordinance of Kenilworth[1] the policy of 1313, already broken down in practice, was formally reversed. The foreign staple was abolished, and the staple of merchants of wools, wool-fells and hides, established in eight fixed places in England, three in Ireland, and three for Wales, while that of tin was to be restricted to one Devonshire and two Cornish markets.[2] At all these places, and nowhere else, aliens were compelled, under penalty of forfeiture, to purchase staple articles. When the payment of customs on the goods was certified by letters under the cocket seal, merchants were free to take them to whatsoever land they liked, provided that it was not at enmity with the king. Merchants of England, Ireland and Wales, were allowed to carry goods, bought at the staples, to sell where they would, but only after they had tarried for fifteen days at a staple in the hope of selling them. "Confederations" of British or Gascon merchants to obstruct the staple, or lessen the price of staple articles, were forbidden, and merchants, both foreign and native, were to be governed by the law merchant in all transactions made at staple places. The wool merchants were to have a mayor of the staple, and foreign traders were to be scrupulously protected.

To these regulations for the markets of the raw material, provisions for encouraging the manufacture of cloth in England were added. After Christmas, 1326, no persons

1. *C. P. R., 1324-27*, p. 269, but better in *ib., 1327-30*, pp. 98-99, which gives a full but not always very precise summary. The Irish ordinance, which was identical, can be read in Berry's *Early Statutes of Ireland*, pp. 314-21.

2. The staple towns established were:—England: Newcastle-on-Tyne, York, Lincoln, Norwich, London, Winchester, Exeter and Bristol. Ireland: Dublin, Drogheda and Cork. Wales: Shrewsbury, Carmarthen and Cardiff. For tin only. Cornwall: Lostwithiel and Truro. Devon: Ashburton. These places, though often ports, were primarily great commercial centres, and were not identical with the places where a collectorship of customs and a cocket seal were established. Thus Boston had a cocket seal in Feb. 1327; *C. P. R., 1327-30*, pp. 55-6.

in England, Ireland or Wales were to use cloth which was not made in those lands, save only the king, the nobles, knights, and their families, and persons, ecclesiastical or lay, who could spend £40 a year from their rents. Cloth of any length was allowed to be manufactured in England, Scotland and Wales, and the king, "in order to encourage people to work upon the making of cloth," in England, Ireland and Wales, promised "suitable franchises to fullers, weavers, dyers and other cloth-workers who live mainly by this craft."

The chief agent of this novel legislation was the younger Despenser, and he had his reward when the staple, assigned to his own town of Cardiff, was put under his control, "because he was the principal mover with the king and council that the staples should be held in fixed places in England, Ireland and Wales and not elsewhere." [1]

There can be no doubt that the change was almost universally popular in England. The foreign staple had been tried but had failed to establish itself. It never suited the interests of the Italian societies, who financed the crown and controlled the wool exports, and therefore never had a fair chance. It had remained so long because of the division of English interests. But with its complete abolition men saw a way to a partial reconciliation of the conflicting interests. Thus a judicious policy of moderate protection to each of the English industrial and commercial groups united traders for the first time on a common economic platform. The English staples were good for the wool-grower, and for the small merchant. They attracted foreign dealers to English commercial centres, and allowed enough competition to make prices brisk. They were especially favourable to the clothing trade. They were welcomed even by the majority of the London capitalists who had in 1319 fought for another type of English staple. No doubt the great merchants of London would have preferred to concentrate the southern staples at London and put off the north with a single staple of its own. But they had failed to carry this policy, and, probably, realized

1. *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 274; cf. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 564.

that the country would always oppose a programme of economic centralisation in the interests of their own big city. Accordingly, though they did not get quite all they wanted, they were now content to share staple privileges with seven other English towns, rather than accept the hated Flemish staple, or the still more unwelcome free trade that the alien capitalists had demanded in all English ports. It was to avoid these evils, that they had somewhat insincerely upheld the Saint-Omer staple, as the least objectionable alternative to English staple towns. And if welcome to the average Londoner, the act of the Despensers must have been peculiarly grateful to John Charlton, who was henceforth a partisan of the English staple, as defined in the ordinance. The London capitalists regarded the English staple, not only as advantageous to their commercial interest, but as the condition precedent to the encouragement of the English wool manufacture. Though the course of industry could not be changed in a day, it was significant that the establishment of the English staple should go hand in hand with the most systematic effort, that had been made as yet, to divert the export of raw material to foreign workshops, and give Englishmen a chance of working up their own wool into cloth. The Bardi and their like were not pleased, for they wished for absolute free trade; were indifferent to English interests and hostile to the encouragement of English manufactures. But they at least got rid of the Saint-Omer staple, which they very much disliked, and so were comparatively contented.

The change was equally necessary from the point of view of the diplomatic situation. The Saint-Omer staple was dead so long as there was hostility with France; the Bruges staple depended upon precarious truces. Yet with freedom to take wool to any foreign port, the way to negotiation with France was kept open, and there was no need to break faith with the "three towns" of Flanders, which had accepted the truce on the virtual condition of the staple being restored to Bruges. The situation was so tangled, that the only way to deal with it was to cut the knot. There is no need to see in this any special wisdom or foresight; but it was a

practical and intelligent way of dealing with the difficulty. Few statesmen, earlier or later, have looked much further forward than did Despenser in this matter.

The ordinance was issued in May, and in September Isabella and Mortimer landed on the Essex coast. Under the circumstances it is surprising how much effort was made in one short summer to execute its provisions. Elaborate publicity to the new law was procured by its proclamation through all sheriffs and in all staple towns.[1] It attracted so much attention that it was the first regulation of the staple that was noticed in any of the chroniclers.[2]

The first step towards the execution of the new ordinance was the appointment of a mayor of the staple. The method of choosing was singularly democratic for the period. Each of the staple towns of England and Wales was ordered to send "two of its more respectable, wealthy and law-worthy burgesses, trading in wool and other staple products," to a convocation, held in London on 12 June, to nominate this officer.[3] The choice of this assembly fell on John Charlton, who at once entered upon office. After eight years of conflict and compromise, Charlton was at last in a position to give effect to the policy which had, no doubt, always been the one nearest his heart. He lost no time in getting to work. By 30 June, orders were issued that no wool was to be exported, save when certified by Charlton, as mayor, that it had been purchased at some English staple.[4] His energy soon brought him once more into collision with the Bardi, who complained that he would not allow them to export wool, purchased by them before the ordinance, on the ground that it had not passed through a staple. On 30 July the crown gave the Bardi permission to deal as they would with wool, bought by them before the ordinance, on condition

1. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 571.

2. *Ann. Paulini*, p. 312, notices its proclamation in London on 12 May.

3. *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, Ap. 287. The delegates were to appear at the Blackfriars on 12 June, before Hamo of Chigwell, John Charlton, Reginald Conduit and Henry Darcy of London, and two Norwich citizens, deputed by the king to obtain fuller information. The names show that the chief London merchants were now in favour of the English staple.

4. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 585.

that they observed the ordinance for the future.[1] It may well have been difficulties of this sort that made it advisable that Charlton's position should be strengthened by his further appointment on 30 July by letters patent.[2] The mayor of the staple was henceforth a royal officer, not only the president of a mercantile society. In this capacity it was part of his business to prevent staple merchants smuggling into England the correspondence of Mortimer and other rebels.[3] To prevent such abuses, no merchants subject to the French king were to enter the realm, save Flemings and Bretons.[4]

The premature effort to encourage home industries was not quite a dead letter, since the clothiers of Flanders and Brabant were sufficiently alarmed to take immediate steps to stay the growth of cloth-making in England. Their method of effecting this end was a quaint one. They tried to buy up "the thistles called teazles," fullers' earth, madder, woad, "burs" and other things necessary for the making of cloth, available in England, in order to send them to the parts beyond sea. "And what is worst they have bought the herb and roots of the said thistles, and have caused them to be pulled up by the roots to be sent abroad."[5]

This is a curious anticipation of the economic legislation of Edward III as regards the development of the English cloth trade, just as the staple legislation of Edward II left Edward III nothing to do but to go on with it. We are not to believe that the effort to strangle the cloth trade had any great effect, because it is more than unlikely that any real development of the English cloth industry resulted

1. *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 593.

2. *Parl. Writs.*, ii, ii, Ap. 291; *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 301. The appointment was declared to be at the request and on the nomination of the merchants of the staple places. But Charlton was already acting on 30 June; *C. C. R., 1323-7*, p. 585.

3. *Ib.*, p. 640.

4. *Ib.*, pp. 634-5, 636, 643.

5. *Ib.*, p. 565. Compare *Letter Book E*, pp. 210-11. The motive of the Flemings was "to subvert the staple." The French word "bure," quaintly mis-translated "butter" in the Calendar of Close Rolls, is, as Dr. Sharpe points out, probably "bourre," not "beurre."

from it. Certainly the action of the foreign clothier did not, as was anticipated, lead to the extermination of teazles from our land!

The battle between the English and the foreign staple was not yet fought out. An early act of the reign of Edward III was the confirmation of the ordinance of 1326. But Béthune, the friend of the foreign staple, became mayor of London and representative of the city in the York parliament of 1328. His fight with Chigwell was, as before, a drawn battle.[1] In despair of reconciling the two factions, the bewildered government abolished staples altogether. But we must not carry on the story past our limits. Enough has been said to show that there was scarcely any detail of staple organisation under Edward III that was not already put into practice under Edward II. The ordinance of 1326 anticipates the statute of the staple of 1353; the ordinance of 1313 prepared the way for the Calais staple of the later middle ages. But this was in the main the result of the working of natural forces, economic, fiscal and political. It is seldom that the prescient legislator arises who takes definite steps towards realising a clearly formed ideal. And statesmen of this stamp were particularly rare in the middle ages. Certainly the ministers of Edward II were as blind to the future as are politicians in general. The next move of the game is the thing that looms largest before their eyes, and all that we can claim for Despenser is that he had a touch of that saving political insight which sees that the best trick to outwit an opponent is something valuable in itself. Thus unconsciously, or half-consciously, the men of Edward II's court worked out their destiny, and in doing so contributed their share in winning for these twenty years a little place of their own in English history.

1. Dr. Sharp's *London and the Kingdom*, i, 171—178, gives from the London archives a good account of this struggle, the study of which is the necessary complement to the history of the staple under Edward II. Unluckily, he confuses the London John Charlton with John Charlton, lord of Powys, the sometime king's chamberlain.

APPENDIX I.

THE HOUSEHOLD ORDINANCES OF EDWARD II.

The circumstances under which the Household Ordinances of 1318 and 1323 were drawn up have been sufficiently explained in the text. They are here printed because, though almost exclusively dealing with the domestic routine of the court, they are too important in the history of administration to remain only accessible in type in a bad seventeenth century English translation. This is to be found in the Chaucer Society's *Life Records of Chaucer*, II, 1–62, Edward II's Household Ordinances (1876). The late Dr. Furnival published these ordinances because of their interest to him as illustrating Chaucer's life at court as valet and esquire of the king. Unluckily he was content to set out the unsatisfactory English translation by Francis Tate in 1601, which he found in *MS. Bodleian, Ashmole*, No. 1147, pt. iii. He thought, however, that no original text was known, and described how he failed to find one either in the British Museum or Record Office. As his interest in the document was limited to the light it threw on Chaucer's career, he took no pains to elucidate it, and fell into error in what little he says about it. For instance, he dates the document in 1323, ignoring the internal evidence which shows that it includes two different ordinances, and that only the second and shorter ordinance belongs to that date, being issued at York in June of that year. The chief interest of the second ordinance is that it illustrates the failure of the earlier ordinance to do the work it set out to do, and the remedies it provided, mainly by reforming the system of drawing up the accounts. The more important document is, however, the earlier ordinance, issued, on St. Nicholas Day, 6 Dec. 1318, at the conclusion of the parliament of York that met in October. The names of

the committee and of assenting councillors are enough to show that it could not possibly be in 1323.[1]

Both the ordinance of 1318 and that of 1323 are to be found in the French original in two manuscripts in the British Museum. Both of these manuscripts, however, are of much later date, and neither can be regarded as affording the basis for a very satisfactory text. The earlier of the two is contained in *Add. MS.*, no. 32,097. This manuscript, formerly in the possession of the Lancashire family of Towneley, mainly consists of matter relating to the coronation ceremonies of kings of England and France, but also contains the *modus tenendi parliamentum*, a copy of the treaty of Bretigni-Calais, and ordinances for the regulation of the army in the Scottish expedition of 1385. It is beautifully written, and presents few palæographical difficulties. It is certainly not older than the reign of Henry IV, and may be later. There are a few Elizabethan additions, such as "Lordre de la Maundye, 1572," and occasional annotations and headings of that date. These seem the work of the antiquary William Lambard, who notes that he had the book "ex dono Ricardi Atkyns, Lincolniensis" in 1571. The ordinances are to be found between folios 46 d and 70. I have called this manuscript A.

It is not very likely that the text of the manuscript is a very faithful transcript of the originals of some eighty years earlier, and certainly it is in places corrupt and impossible to construe. Another British Museum manuscript, *MS. Cotton, Tiberius E VIII*, f. 54 d—74 d, gives us some, but not very certain help in elucidating doubtful points. This is a fine folio manuscript, written on paper, at very various dates and by very different hands, and containing very similar contents to those of the Towneley manuscript, with later additions, as, for example, the titles of queen Elizabeth. The older parts of it, perhaps, belong to about the latter half of the fifteenth century, and include our two household ordinances. It was, in some places, damaged by the Cotton fire, but the part where our ordinances are

1. See below pp. 270-271. It gives Badlesmere as steward, but he was executed in 1322; Northburgh as keeper, but he had resigned on his appointment to the bishopric of Lichfield in the same year, and Hotham as chancellor, though he gave up office in Jan., 1320.

found is almost entirely intact. Though later in date, it is easier to understand than the Towneley MS.; but one has a fear that its superior intelligibility is not so much due to higher accuracy and authority as to a rough and ready effort to normalize the grammar and spelling of the original on the lines of later French style. It is, however, distinctly useful in some places where the earlier text is corrupt, and contains more headings than the Towneley MS. This MS. I have called B.

In preparing these ordinances for the press I have based my text on MS. A, which has been kindly transcribed for me by Miss C. M. Callthrop. I have noted at the bottom of the page the more important variants found in B, and have sometimes, but not often, incorporated these variants into the text. Most additional matter in B I have also worked into the text. I have, for instance, put into the text the numerous headlines in B not found in A. I have not been meticulous about small points that seemed to me of little importance to the understanding of the meaning of the original. Thus I have mainly put down at the foot of the page variants that seem to make A more intelligible. The capitals and punctuation are my own, but I have avoided any attempts to normalize the text, and have not even tried to make it grammatical or intelligible. Accordingly I have not even added accents, but here and there I have supplied a fairly obvious word in square brackets, generally, but not always, on the authority of MS. B. I feel that it is more important to give scholars Anglo-French as it was actually written, than to make it easier or more correct. The folios of the Towneley MS. are recorded in the margins, and also the English summaries, found in A, in an Elizabethan hand, and apparently the work of Lambard.

The ordinances printed here belong to a common type, but very few others seem to have been preserved. The starting point of the series is the well-known *Constitutio Domus regis* of 1135, or thereabouts, printed in Hall's *Red Book of the Exchequer*, III, 807—813, and in Hearne's *Liber Niger Scaccarii*, I, 341—359. The only intermediate ordinance that I have come across is the ordinance of Edward I of 1279, which I hope to print in my forthcoming volume on the wardrobe. Much indirect light is thrown on the subject by the account of the plan, drawn up in 1305, for the reform, on English lines, of the Scottish state and

household, published by the late Miss Bateson from a C.C.C. MS., No. 37, in the *Juridical Review*, 1901–2, and *Scottish History Soc., Miscellany*, ii, 1–43, 1904. Some later household ordinances were printed in 1790 by the London Society of Antiquaries in a *Collection of Ordinances for the Government of the Royal Household from Edward III to William and Mary*. It is likely that more systematic search than I have been able to give would add considerably to the number of extant household ordinances. Among them may be mentioned the ordinance of Woodstock, referred to in the York ordinance of 1318.[1]

A. The Household Ordinance of York, 6 Dec. 1318.

Fol. 46d. Pour ceo qe les officers del lostiell nostre seignour le roi ount estez toutz iours en arere, et[2] noun certein de ceo qils deueront faire et prendre du roi, par reason de leur officez, par quoy due examinement dez ditz officers ne poiat estre fait, ne les officers chargez si come estre deuoient, a grand damage et dishonour du roi et en desarament[3] de soun hostiell; et nostre dit seignour le roi, eiant regard al estat de son dit hostell meyns bien garde, et a ses chosez en autre manere despenduez qi estre ne duissent: si comanda a monsieur Berthelmeu de Badelesmere, seneschall de soun hostiell, monsieur Hugh le Despenser, chamberleyn, sire Roger de Northborough, tresorer, et a sire Gilbert de Wyggetone, contreroullour de sa garderobe, qe eux ordinassent sur la remedie, lez queux par vertue du dit comaundement ount ordeigne les chosez souzescritz en amendement dez defautez desusditz: lez quelez ordinauncez furont leuez et assentuez deuaunt le roi et en presence larceuesque de Deuerwik, leuesque Dely, chaunceller Dengleterre, leuesque de
Steward. Northwich, et leuesque de Sarum, monsieur Henry de Scrope, et monsieur Henry Spigurnell, justicez, qi sensuit: cest assauoir qi le roi eit vn seneschall de son hostiell suffisant, qui, sil soit baneret, eit vn chiualer, trois esquiers et vn clerk pur les plees qi appartenent a la seneschaucie, mangeantz en la sale. Et prendra pur sa chambre chescun nuyt vn sexte de vin, xij chaundelx, ij tortis pur viu, et vn torche, et pluis quant il auera affaire, et litere pour tout lan, bouche de la vielle de toutz Seintz iusques al vielle de Pasque,

1. See below, p. 307. 2. en in MSS. 3. B. disaraiement.

pur la soison dyuer, de luscher de la sale, et vn liuere pour soun chamberleyn, cestassauoir vn dare de paine, vn galoun de seruoise, et vn messe de gros de la cusine, et diners et sopers quant il lez vudra auoir; et pur fees xx marcz par an a lez festez de Noell et de Pentecost par owelx porteons. Et sil soit chiualer simple, il prendra feez et robes si come autrez chiualers simplez de lostell, et auera deux esquiers et soun clerk mangeantz en la sale.

Le Tresorer.[1]

Treasorer of the Wardrobe.

Vn tresorer de la garderobe, qi eit vn chapellain, vn clerk et ij esquiers mangeantz en la sale. Et prendra pur sa chambre vn sexte de vin, xij chaundelx, ij tortis, vn tortis pur viu, et vn torche, et pluis quant il auera affaire, et litere pur tout lan, et busche pur la seison dyuer, cestassauoir entre lez viellez de toutz Seintz et le Pasque, de lussher de la sale, et diners et sopers quant il plerra; et vn liueree pur son chambirleyn, cestassauoir vn darre de payn, vn galon de seruoise, et vn messe grosse de la quissine, et robes en drap pur sey autre, ou xvj marcz par an a les festez de Noel et Pentecost | [2] par ouelx porcions. f. 47.

Le Chamberleyn.[3]

Chamberley

Vn chambirleyne qi, sil soit baneret, eit vn chiualer et trois esquiers, mangeant en sale. Et prendra pour sa chambre demi sexte de vin, xij chaundelx, ij tortis, et vn torche, et litere pour lan, et buche pour la[4] soison dyuer de lousshere de la chambre, et diners et sopers de votre seignourie le roi, et vn liueree pour son chambirleyn, cestassauoir vn dare de payn, vn galon de seruoise, et vn messe de grosse de la quissine; et fees et robez sicone[5] baneret del hostell, cestassauoir pour feez xx mars, et pur robez xvj mars par an, sil ne soit serue en drap. Et sil soit chiualer simple, il prendra feez et robez si come vn chiualer simple del hostell, et auera deux esquierz mangeantz en la sale.

Le Counterrollour.[6]

Controller.

Item vn countreroullour, qi doit countrerouller au tresourier de la

1. B. only. 2. A straight line in the text (|) marks the beginning of each fresh page of MS. A.
3. B. only. 4. Sa in MS. 5. B. sicome. 6. B. only.

garderobe toutz lez recceitez et issuez touchantz mesme le garderobe; et lez testimoignera en leschequer sur la compte du dit tresourier. Et serra a la recette dez vyns en gros. Et suruerra toutz les offices del hostiell, come de panetrie, botillerie, celerie, lardrie, espicerie, auenerie et autres officez, qi les vins, vitaillez, qil trouera en les ditz officez, soient bons et conuenablez pour les dispenses du dit hostell solonque lez achatez. Et sil troue qi null dez ditz vitaillez soient meyns sufficiantz, lez monstra a prochein accompte deuant le seneschal et le tresorer, et sue deuers eux tanque amendement soit fait par reason. Et doit entrer mesmez lez officez chescun lundi pur veer lez remenantz, issint qil veie qi lez ditz remenantz et les dispenses de la semeyne passe accordent oue lez receitez de la semeyn auantdit. Et serra a quissine a coupere de la chare, et au departier de pissoun. Quant il verra qi soit affaire, sert garne[1] oue le chief vssher, chiualer, et le clerk de la quissine de veer qe lacat de chare et de pissoun soit bon, et le messe coupez en due manere solonque lordinement de ceo fait a la counte, et le pissoun departi sicome estre doit. Et serra chescun iour, sil veit resonable enchesoun, a lez accountez oue le seneschall et le tresorer. Et mesme celluy countreroller de la garderobe eit vn clerk et vn esquier, mangeantz en la sale. Et prendra pour sa chambre demi sexte de vin, vj chaundelx, ij tortis et vn torche, et litere pour tout lan, et bushe pour la seison diuer del vssher del sale, et vn liueree pour soun chambirleyn, cestassauoir vn dare de payn, vn galoun de seruoise, et vn messe
f. 47d. gros de la quissine, et robez en drap, | ou viij marcz par an a lez festez de Noel et Pentecost par owelx portions. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne sa liueree pour son mangier, cestassauoir ij dare de pain, j piche de vin, ij messes en gross de la quisine, et vn messe de rost. Et serra a gagez de v deniers[2] le iour, tanque il soit auancez par le roi.

Le Cofferer.[3]

Cofferer. Item vn cofferer qi serra mytz pour le tresorer, et eit mangeant en la sale vn esquier. Et prendra pour sa chambre demi sexte de vin, vj chaundelx, ij tortys, vn torche, et pour la table de laccompte xij chaundelx, et pluis quaunt boisoigne, serra, et litere pour tout lan, et bousche pour la soison dyuer del vssher de la sale, et vn liueree pour soun chambirleyn, cestassauoir vn dare de payn, vn galoun de seruoise, vn messe de gros de la quissine. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour soun mangere au tiel liuere

1. B. soit garny. 2. B. xv deniers le iour. 3. B. only.

come countreroullour, cestassauoir ij dare del payn, vn piche de vin, ij messes de gros de la coisine, et vn messe de rost, et toutz autrez coustagez en court, du tresorer.

Deux Clerks de la table daccompte.[1]

Item deux clerks de la table de la countee, sufficiantz pour escriuer et faire toutz chosez touchantz la garderobe et laccompte dicel, desouz le coffrer, dount chescun prendra le iour pour gagez vij d. ob., ou iiij d. ob., solonque ceo qil serroit destate, a la discresioun le tresorer, ij robes par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d., et en dyners.[2] Et prendrent entre eux et le clerk le countrerouller, qi girount ensemble en la garderobe, pour lour coche ij piche de vin, vj chaundelx, et ij tortis, ou[3] litere par tout lan, et busche tout la soison dyuer del vssher de la sale. Et syl dynent en garderobe pur serteyne resoun, ou par conge le tresorer, dieux eient vn liuere a diner, et a manger en garderobe, chescun vn liuere de sergeant, cestassauoir j dare de payne, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, vn messe de gros de la coisine, et vn messe de rost. Et si nul soit seigne ou maladez, eit mesme le liuere. Clerkes of t Grenecloth

Le Clerk de la priue Seal.[4]

Item vn clerk suffisant gardein de priue seal, qi eit vn esquier mangeant en la sale. Et prendra pour chambre demi sexte de vin, vj chaundelx, ij tortis, et vn torche, et litere par tout lan, et busche pour la soison diuer del vssher de la sale, et vn liuere pour soun chambirleyne, cestassauoir vn dare de payne, vn galoun de la seruoyse, et vn messe gros de la coisine, et robez en drap, ou viij marcz par an, al fest | de Noell et Pentecost par ouelx portions. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne sa liueree, cestassauoir ij dare de payn, vn piche de vin, ij messes de gros de la cuissine, et vn messe de rost. Et sil soit a gagez tant qil soit auancez. Item iiij clercz pour escriuer au priue seal, qi prendrount toutz ensemble pour lour chambre ij piche de vin, vj chaundelx, ij tortis, et litere pour tout lan, et bousche pour la soison dyuer de la vssher de la sale. Et sils dynent ou maungent al loustell par certeyn reasoun, deux vn liuere a dyner et chescun vn liuere a manger, sicome lez clercz de la countee desuis nomez. Auxint si null soit seigne ou Clerk of th privie seal f. 48.

1. B. only. 2. B. en deniers. 3. B. et.
4. From this point the headings are in both A. and B., those in A. being in red ink.

maladez, eit mesme la liuere. Et chescun a gagez, a pluis ou a meyns, solonque ceo qil serroit destate, et al discrecion du seneschall et tresorer, tanque ils soient auancez par le roi; et ij robez par an ou deniers solonque lour gagez.

Le Clerk purueour de la graunde Garderobe.

lerke irveior of ıe great 'ardrobe.

Item vn clerk purueour pour la grande garderobe, qi doit giser en garde quaunt il est en court. Et auera mangeant en la sale vn esquier. Et prendra pour sa chambre vn piche de vin, iiij chaundelx, vn tortis, et liuere pour vn chambirleyn qi garde soun lite, cestassauoir vn dare de payn, vn galoun de seruoyse, vn messe de gross de la cuissine. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez en court, preigne ij dare de pain, j galoun de vin, ij messes de gros de la cuissine, vn messe de rost, et ij robez par an en drap, ou viij marcz en deniers. Et hors de court prendra soun fee, cestassauoir xx liures par an, tanque il eit par le roi c marcz de rent. Et quaunt lez auera, serue le roi a sez costagez demein hors de court. Et ferra ceo qi appartient a luy solonque ceo qi est contenu en le statute fait dedeinz soun office.

Le Clerk de lespycerye.

ierk of the ›ycerye.

Item vn clerk de la spicerie, chief vsser de la garderobe, qui resciuera du clerk purueour de la grande garderobe cere, napperie, linge, teille, canauas, espicerie, et toutz maneres dez autrez chosez qi apparteignent a son office, par endenture faisant expresse mencioun de price, de aunes, de pois, et de coustage. Et ferra peiser le cere qi le chaundeler ferra ouerer, et repoiser quaunt ele serra oueree. Et suruerra, et ferra escriuer par soun souz clerk, lez liuerez de la chaundelarie qi se ferront chescun iour en garderobe. Et suruerra lendemein le reposer dez torchez, tortis de viu et dez mortere. Abbreuera chescune iour lez parcelx dez toutz maners dez chosez, liuerees et dispendues en son office, come de la iourne deuaunt en pris, et en respondra a la countee del hostiell. Et
48d. suruerra lez | cariagez appartenauntz a la garderobe, auxibien dez coffers et autres chosez de soun office, come dez litz clercs de la garderobe qi doyuent cariez. Et alleuera en soun roll lez cariagez et portagez resonablement faitz pur iournez le roi. Et prendra pur sa chambre vn piche de vin, ij chaundelx, j tortis, et trois chaundell pour soun office, et litere pour tout lan et busche pour la soisone dyuer del vsshere de la sale. Et sil soit seigne ou maladies, preigne pour sa liuere vn dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de la cuissine, et vn messe de rost. Gagez iiij d. ob. tanque il soit auauncez par le roi,

et neint pluis par enchesone qil auera cariage pour soun lite en garderobe, et ij robez en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d.

Clerk purveiour with Clerk the Spyceri

Et pour ceo qi troue est qi boun et verroi examinement qi nostre seignour le roi ait de cea en arere graundz damagez et perde,[1] par enchesoun qi toutz lez chosez qi sount venuz deuers lostiell par la liueree du clerk et purueour de sa graunt garderobe, come cere, espicerie, et autrez appartenauntez soun officez, ount este malement despenduz et gastez par defaut qi certeins price et parcelx nount mye estez renduz iour sur la accompte de lostiell deuaunt le seneschal et le tresorer come dez autres officez, ordeigne est et assentu de par luy et les euesqes, seneschal, et tresorer, chambirleyne et autrez du counseil, qi le clerk purueour de la graunde garderobe deliuere dezhors enauant toutz chosez, et touchent loffice de lespicerie, au clerc de mesme loffice, come de cere, gros espicerie, linge, teile, et canauace, et toutz lez parcelx a luy ensy lyuerez ensemblement oue le price et lez coustagez; et mesme celluy clerk de lespicerie, ensi charge en certein, serra chescun iour a lez comptz del hostiell, si come lez clercs dez autres officers, a presenter et accompter deuaunt le seneschal et le tresorer toutz lez parcelx et le price de chacun chose, qi serra deliuere et dispenduz de soun office en lostiell a la iourne. Et qi lez pois de la graunde garderobe et de lespicerie soient accordantz, et tiel come lem troue Dengleterre. Et en mesme le manere doit le dit clerc et purueour de la graunt garderobe charger le taillour le roy, et armurer, pau[illon]illoner,[2] confectioner dez espicez, par endenturez dez toutz chosez qil iour deliuera pour lour officez hors de soun office par endenturez, faisantz mencione du price et de la quantite dez chosez ensy liuerez, et qi lez partiez de mesme cels endenturez demuranz deuers le dit clerc, et lez parcelx de toutz les autres liuerez et donnes le roy, qil auera fait hors de soun office, soient quatre foitz par an monstrez au tresorer de la garderobe, issint qil puisse pleinement estre certifiez de lestate de cel office, et charger duement lez dit clerc de lespicerie, taillour, armurer, pauilloner, confectioner dez espicez, sur lour accomptz qi se deuient | rendre dezhors en f. 49.
auaunt deuaunt le dit tresorer en garderobe, auxibien dez issuez dez telz parcelx, issint resceiuez du dit clerk, come dez coustagez misez par eux entour le fesure et leuereyne dicelx. Et qi la dit clerc pourueour demurge en court tant auant come soun office lem pourra suffrere, sil ne soit par especiall counge du roi.

Le Second Clerc de lespicerie.[3]

Et le dit clerc de lespicerie eit vn clerc en eyde de luy, de faire lez chosez qi appartinent a mesme loffice et descriuer lez parcelx del

1. B. perte 2. B. pauillour. The letters bracketed seem repeated. 3. B. only.

issue qi se ferra de toutz maners dez chosez de cel office solonque lauisement et lordinaunce de dit chiefe clerk. Et prendra vn liueree le iour, cestasauoir j darre de payn, j galon de seruoise, j messe grosse de la cuissine, et j robe de clerc par an, ou xx s. par an en deniers.

Le Sargeant soubz Vssher de la Garderobe.[1]

Vsher of the Vardrobe.

Item vn sergeant soutz vsshere de la garderobe qi herbegera le garderobe, et girra dedeinz leushe de la garderobe pour saument[2] garder toutz les chosez qi sount dedeinz. Et respondra, si peril aueigne en defaut de luy. Et querra lez liuereez dez officez pour toutz ceux de la garderobe et entendra a lour comandementz. Et prendra pour couche iij chaundelx. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j denier[3] de payn, demi piche de vyn, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la guissine, et vn messe de rost. Et iiij d. ob. pour gagez le iour, ij robez par an en drap, ou quarrant solds, et soun lit cariez en cariage garderobe.

Un Porter de la Garderobe.[4]

Portor of the Vardrobe.

Item vn portour de lez garderobe, qi portera coffrez et autres harneys de la garderobe az charettz, et lez chargera et deschargera. Et serra sur le car[ette][5] en chemyn. Et veillera lez nuytez, si le car[ette][5] soit dehors measoun en errant par pays. Et prendra en le roulle de lespicerie chescun iour pour gagez, ij d., et chescun de trauaille ij d., en mesme le roulle de lespicerie, outre sez ditz gagez certeins par enchesoun de veille et trauaille; et vn robe de vallet de mestre par an en drap, ou vn mars en deniers, et pour chausour iiij s. viiij d. a deux seasouns del an, sicome vallet de mestre, au Nowelle et a la Pentecost per ouelx porcions.

Un Esquier Frutier.[6]

squier ruterer. 49d.

Item vn esquier frutier qi resceiuera et leuera[7] confeccioun et autres | espiceries, figes, et reisons du clerk de lespicerie pour la bouche le roy. Et abbreuera chescun iour au dit clerk de ceo qi serra despendu la iourne deuaunt, auxi bien dez ditz espiceriez et fruyt, issint resceux du dit clerk, come de pomes, pers, ciris, et autrez fruytez qi le dit fruitier puruera, mesme le quelle fruit issint par luy purueu, ensemblement lez coustagez misez entour le cariage dicell serra suruou per la dit clerc, auaunt qi rien soit despenduz. Et sil en face taillez as vendours, il doit liuerer lez foillez au dit

1. B. only. 2. B. sagement. 3. B. darre; certainly the right reading. 4. B. only. 5. B. cherett. 6. B. only. 7. The reading of B.

clerc tantost sur la vieu auauntdit, par quelez taillez ils serrount payez en garde. Et le dit esquier frutier prendra chescun nuyt pour coche vn galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx, et pour soun office ij chaundelx; pour gagez vij d. ob. le iour; ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, ij deners[1] de payne, demi piche de vin, demi galloun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine, j messe rost. Et auera vn vadlet soutz luy, qi prendra manger, boyuer et chaucer, sicome vn aultre vallet de mestre del houstell.

Le Sergeaunt Chaundelere.

Item vn sergeant chaundelere, qi resceiuera la cere et lymyn par pois du clerk de lespicerie, et lez ferra ourir, solonque lassise qi est ordeigne dedeinz en lestatuit. Et la cere et limine, ensuit ouerez, repoisera en la presence du dit clerk. Et en ferra la liueree, et seruira lostiell, par la vieue du dit clerc, ou de soun souz clerc, qi escriuera lissue de mesme la cere. Et la dit sergeant fera queiller torche, tort de [2] et mortere qi serrount liuerez; et lez ferra repoiser lendemayn par vieue de dit clerc, ou de soun souz clerc, issint come puis sauoir lez despeirs de la iournee al compte. Et soit la liuere de la chaundellarie faite chescune iour en garderobe deuaunt manger, ou si tost apres qi lez ditz sergeantz et clercs ne soient mye destourbez qi ne puissent seruir le roi et lostell. Et prendra pour couche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx. Et sil soit maladez ou seigne, prendra pour liueree j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe grosse de la quissine, et vij d. ob. pour gagez, ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Serieant Chandeler.

Deux Vallettes soubz le Sergeant.[3]

Item deux vallettez de mester, qi deuient ouerer la cere, desouz le sergeant, et prendrount le iour qils ouerount pour liuere ij dare de payn, ij galloun de seruoise, ij messe de grose de la quissine; et chescune de eux prendra vn robe en drap par an, ou vn marcz en | deniers; et pour chauser iiij s. viij d. par an. Et sil soit maladez ou seigne, prendra pour liuere j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la quissine. 2 Groomes the Chandellry f. 50.

Le Confessour.[4]

Item vn confessour le roi, et soun compaignoun, prendrent pour tout le iour pour liuere iij dares de payn, ij piche de vin, iij galoun Confessour

1. A. darre is probably the right reading.
2. A blank space for one word in both A. and B.
3. B. only. 4. B. only.

de seruoise, iij messes de la quissine, dount lun serra chare par iour de chare, iij chaundelx, j tortis, litere pour lour lites par tout lan del vssher de la sale, et feuale pour lour viande par tout lan, et pour lour chambre par la seisoun dyuer,—cestassauoir de la veille de toutz Seintz tanque a la Pasque,—de lesquillerie, et liuere dez robez et dez litz de la graunde garderobe, et pour solez, botes, linge, teille, et autres menus necessariez pour lour corps, en deniers en garderobe solonque la discrecion du seneschal et tresorer; feins et aueinz, littere et ferrure, et autres necessariez pour iiij chiualx, et gagez pour iij garceons, chescune a j d. ob., et robez pour vn keu, qi fera sa viande et mangera deuers soun meistre. Et lez ditz iij garceons en drap, ou pur chescune x s. per an. Et pur chescun de eux iiij s. viij d. pour chauceur a deux soisouns del an, et ij napes et ij towaillez par an du clerc de lespicerie, a Nowell et a Pentecost.

Le Chief Chapellein.[1]

hapleyns. Item vn chief chapellein, qi eit vn esquier mangeant en la sale, et serra as gagez le roi tanque il soit auancez du roi; et v chapelleins, chescun a vij d. ob., et vj clercs, chescune a iiij d. obole le iour tanque ils soient auancez de roi. Et entre eux toutz prendront pour lour coche ij piche de vin, ij galoun de seruoise, vj chaundelx, j tortis, et littere pour lytes par tout lan, et fouail pur lour chambre en la seisoun dyuer de la vssher de la sale. Et si le chief chapellein soit seigne ou maladez, prengne pour liuere ij dare de pain, j piche de vin, ij messes de grosse de la quissine, et vn messe de rost. Et si nul dez autrez chapelleins et clercs soient seigne ou maladez, prengne pour liuere j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la quissine, et vn messe de rost. Et le chief chapellein prendra ij robez par an en drap, ou viij marcz en deniers; et chescune autre chapellein ij robez par an en drap, ou iij marcz et demye en deniers; et chescune clerc ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers.

Le Ausmoner.[1]

lmoner. 50d. Item vn ausmoner chapellein, qui eit vn esquier mangeant en la sale. Et prendra pour chambre j piche de vin, ij chaundelx, j torche, et littere par tout lan, et fouail pou[r] la seison dyuer del vssher de la sale. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, prengne pour liuere ij dare de pain, j piche de vin, ij messes de grosse de la quissine, et vn messe de rost; ij robez per an, ou viij marcz en deniers; et serra a gagez a vij d. ob. tanque il soit auance par le

1. B. only.

roi. Et chescune iour de soiourne xiiij dares de pain, xiiij galoun de seruoise, en roulle panetrie et butillerie, et xiiij messes de la cuissine pour office de lammosenerie; et chescune iour de trauaille le roi xiiij s., ou[1] deniers de la garderobe, qi serrount entre en le graunt roulle de lez despensez de loustiell a la fyne de la iournee.

Item vn clerc qi prendra garde al amoisne desoutz luy, qi mangera en sale et prendra le iour iij d. en roulle de marchauce pour la sustenaunce de soun hakene, tanque il soit auauncez par le roi. Et son garson viuera del amoisne, et auera vn robe par an en drap, ou xx s. en deniers. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liuere j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de la quissine. Clerk of th Almosener

Item vn vallett de mestere de mesme loffice, qi mangera en la sale entre lez autrez vallettz de mestere. Et prendra vn robe per an en drap, ou j marc en deniers; et pour chauceour iiij s. viii d. par an. Et sil seit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de la cuissine.

Le Phisicien.[2]

Item vn phisicien prendra pour liueree par tout le iour iij dare de pain, j galoun de vyn, ij galoun de seruoise, j messe de gros de la cuissine, ij messes de rost; pour chambre iij chaundelx, j tortis et littere par tout lan del vssher de la sale, et fouaille pour sa viande par tout lan et pour sa chambre pour la seison dyuer de lesquillerie, et ij robez par an en drap ou viij mars en deniers[3]; feins, aueins, littere, ferrure pour iij chiualx, et gagez pour iij garceouns, chescun a vij d. ob., tanqe il soit auaunce par le roi. Physition

Le Cirurgien.[4]

Item vn cirugien mangera chescun iour en la sale, sil ne soit occupiez par resonable enchesoun, tesmoigne deuaunt le seneschall et tresorer. Et adonqes eyt sa liueree, sicome vn chiualer de loustiell seigne | ou maladez, cestassauoir ij dares de payn, j piche de vin, ij messes de gros de la quissine, j messe de rost. Et prendra chescun iour pour sa chambre viij[5] piche de vin, iij chaundelx, vn tortiz, et littere pour tout lan, et fouaille pour seisoun dyuer del vssher de sale. Et prendra xij d. le iour pour gagez, tanqe il soit auauncez par le roi, ij robez par an en drap, ou viij mars en deniers. Et prendra pour chosez mediceuls xl s. par an. Surgion. f. 51.

1. B. en. 2. B. only. 3. B. A. diners or diuers. 4. B. only. 5. B. vn.

Le Clerc de marche.[1]

lerke of the arket.

Item vn clerc de marche, corouner de loustiell le roi, qi ferra examinacion lassise de pain, vin et seruoise, et lassise de toutz maners dez mesurez, poys et alnez dedeinz la viergez de la presence notre seignour le roi. Et ferra puny[2] les trespassours qi auereount efreint lassise, ou qi soient trouez oue faux mesurez, par mise ou par fyns, et ceo chescun trespassour solonque son trespas. Et qil ne charge citees ne burghs nautrez villez, et ceo pour vn nuyt et vn iour; tant soulement sil ne soit en defaut dez gentz de la ville, adonquez en demourge en celle ville outre ij iours az coustagez de ville. Et lez denirs qil leuera de fyns et amerciamentz de celle office loialment ferra, de iour en autre, mander au garderobe. Et qaunt le roi sen va le pays, voise deuaunt par lez iournez le roi pour faire soun office, et face bracer et fourner solonqe lassise countre la venue le roi et son houstiell. Et face crier en chescune ville marchaunde dedeinz la vierge lassise de pain, vin, seruoise et auene. Et la dit clerc sount[3] countre-rollour le seneschall az pledez de la sale, et purueour dez cariage[z]. Et auera vn clerc souz luy qi mangera en sale et puruerra lez cariagez de loustell, solonqe ceo qe commaunde luy serra par seneschall et tresorer. Et le dit clerc de marche, countrerollour, receyuera toutz lez deniers surdantz dez pledez de la sale deuaunt le seneschall et mareschall, et lez liuera, ensemblement ou lez estrestez, en garderobe; et illoquez accomptera chescune semayne dez ditz deniers. Et quaunt il sera en court, il prendra de liuere[4] pour sa chambre j piche de vin, ij chaundelx, j tortis, ij robez par an en drap, ou iij marcz demy en deniers; et sil soit seigne ou maladez, prengne pour liuere j dare de payn, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grosse de la couissine, et vn messe de rost.

eas in the lle.

e wardes hin age h their ıibition.

ıld.

Item qi toutz lez enfauntz qi chetent en la garde le roi preignent gagez et liuereez et toutz autrez necessares solonqe lour estate, et lauisement et discrecion de seneschall et tresourer. Et mesmez celez enfauntz soient mytz hors dez liuereez et dez gagez, si tost come ils eyent lour terrez, ou qi le roi eit done ou venduz. Et adonquez soient az | coustagez de ceux qi lez auerount de dount ou dachat.

l uiers for Mouthe Sewers, rvers.

Un Escuier surueour dez viandes pour le Roy.[5]

Item qi le roi eit vn esquier surueour et gardein dez viandez pour sa bouche, et assaeour de sa table; et vn esquier trenchant deuaunt le roi, et vn esquier pour luy seruire de sa coupe; de queux iij esquiers chescun prendra pour sa chambre pour nuyt demi piche

1. B. only. 2. B. punyer. 3. B. Et ledit clerc soit. 4. B. de liueree. 5. B. only.

de vin, ij chaundelx, j tortis, et litere pour tout lan, et bouche par la seison dyuer de vssher de la chambre. Et si null soit seignez ou maladez, il prendra liuere come sergeant, cestassauoir j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la coissine, vn messe de rost; et chescune az gagez de vij d. ob. le iour, ij robez en drap par an, ou xl s. en deniers.

Deux Escuiers Ushers de la Chambre le Roi.[1]

Vshers del Chambre.

Item le roi auera deux esquiers vsshers de la chambre, dount lun serra sergeaunt pourueour del busche et littere pour loffice[1] de la chambre, qi countra lez messes chescun iour en la chambre, et lez tesmoignera a lez accomptez faitz chescun iour de loustell en garderobe, par quel tesmoignance lez officers aueront allouance de lour officez sur laccompte. Et mesme celluy sergeant prendra pour soun coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx, et chescun iour prendra vij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; et ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers. Et si null soit[2] seigne ou maladez, prendra pour liueree j dare de payn, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de grosse de la cuissine et vn messe de rost. Et le sergeaunt purueour auera vn vallet de mestier en eide de luy pour purueance faire, ij d. le iour pour gagez en roulle de la cuisine.

Dez Valletz de la Chamber.[1]

Gromes or pages of th chambre.

Item viij valletz de la chambre a pee qi seruiront en la chambre en litz faire, tenir et porter torchez, et autrez diuers sez chosez solonqe lez comaundiuers et le chambirleyn le roi,[3] lez quelx mangerent en la chambre deuaunt le roy. Et si nulle de eux soit seignez ou maladez, eit pour la liueree j dare de payn, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de la cuissine; et j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pour chaucere iiij s. viiij d. a deux seisouns del an. Et si nulle de eux soit mandez hors du court es boisoignez le roi par soun comandement, preigne iiij d. le iour pour soun despensez.

Les Sargeantz darmez.

30 serieant at armes. f. 52.

Item le roi eit xxx sergeantz darmez, sufficeantment armee et mount|tez, cestassauoir chescun de vn chiuall darmez, vn hakene et somer; qi chiuachent armez chescune iour deuaunt le corps le roi en cheminant par pays, sils neyent autre comaundement le roy ou le seneschall. Et serrount lour gagez chescun iour

1. B. only. 2. In A. et si null soit is written twice. 3. B. et autres dyuers chosez solonqe lez commaundements et le chamberleyn le roy.

alloez en rolle de marche,[1] quaunt ils serrount en court issint, cestassauoir qi chescune de eux, qi chiualx darmez eit, xij d. le iour. Et si cel chiaul soit reuenuz en garder[obe],[2] ou moerge en le seruise le roy, li serront alloez en mesme le roulle viij d. le iour pour gagez, tanque il eit autre chiuall darmez; et a pluis tost qil auera restor de soun chiuall, issint rendue ou mort, luy soit assignez certein iour par la discressioun de seneschall ou de tresorer dauer soun chiuall darmez prest pur seruire le roi, sicome appent. Et sil neit prest a ceo iour, adonques soit de gagez nettement tanque il eit. Et sil ne veut ou le[3] doigne, soit auxint mytz hors de gagez tanque il se soit purueu dune autre chiualle sufficeant. Et adonquez soit mytz en gagez, sicome deuaunt. Dez queux xxx sergeantz lez quatre, quelx le roi voudra nomer, serrount toutz iours entendantz al vssher de la chambre en eide de le vsshere; qui coucheront dehors mesme lusshe, et si pres come ils pourrount. Et aueront pur coche j piche de vin, ij chaundelx, j tortis. Et les xxvj sergeantz girront en la sale lez, pur estre prest quaunt le roy auera affair de eux. Et aueront pour coche iij piche de vin, vj chaundelx, j tortiz. Et chescun de lez xxx seriantz aueront ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s., j messe de grose de la cuissine, et vn messe de rost.

Item le chiualer qi est de parte le dit countee mareschall, le clerc, et le sergeant mangeront en la sale saunz riens autre chose prendre de roi.

Le Chiualer chief Ussher del Sale.[4]

eif husher the halle.

Item vn chiualer, chief vssher de la sale, qi prendra garde de lusse de la sale soit bien gardez par lez sergeantz et valletz vssher, sicome apent. Et suruera qi la sale soit bien et honourablement seruy, et null manguisse forsque ceux qi y deyuent de droit, sauuez toutz foitz qi lez estraungez soient receux et honourez, solonque qil deuient estre. Et deit chescune iour entrer et suruer lez officez del hostiell qi les chosez, qi y serrount enuoiez par lez purueours, soient sufficeantz solonque lachate, et qi null nessoit soeffret en mesmez lez officez forsqe de deuient estre.[5] Et auera vn esquier mangeant en la sale. Et prendra pour sa chambre vn piche de vin, iiij chaundelx, j tortiz, et litere par tout lan, et busche pur la seison dyuer, et j liuere pour soun chambre, cestassauoir | j dare de payn, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grosse de la cuissine. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, prengne pour liueree ij dare de payn, j piche de vin, ij messe grosse de la quissine, j messe de rost; pour feez x marcz par an a la seint Michell et a la Pasque; et ij robez par an en drap, ou viij marcz en deniers a Noell et a la Pentecost par ouelx portions.

rangers to t in the lle.

52d.

1. A. and B. Marechaucie or marechal seem the most likely extensions.
2. B. en garde. 3. B. ne. 4. B. only. 5. B. Forsqe eaux quy doiuent estre.

Deux Sergeantz Usshers de la Sale.[1]

Item ij sergeantz vsshers de la sale, dount lun serra pourueour del busche et de littere pour loffice de la sale. Et ferra liuerees de littere et busshe a ceux de loustell qi deiuent auoir de droit. Et mesmez celluy ij sergeantz gardent lusshe de la sale, et countrount lez messes en la sale chescun iour, cestassauoir lun a lun mangier, lautre a lautre mangier. Et lez tesmoignerent a la compte. Et chescune de eux prendra pour coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx, et chescune iour vij d. ob. pour gagez, ij robes par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et sil soit seignez ou maladiez, prengne pour liueree j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruois, j messe grosse de la cuissine, j messe de rost. Serieants Vshers of Halle.

Item ij vallettz de mestre desoutz, qi garderont lusshe de la sale, et serrount en eyde du sergeaunt purueour de faire purueance de busshe et de littere, quant mestre serra. Dez queux lun prendra garde a busshe desouz le sergeaunt, lun a lun mangier et lautre a lautre mangier, enter lez autrez vallettz le mestre. Et hors de court entour lour office chescune eit ij d. le iour en la roulle de la quissine. Et si null de eux soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grosse de la quissine, j robe par an en drap, ou vn marc en deniers, et iiij s. iiij d. pur chauceur. Groomes yeomen the halle

Item j vallett suer, qui[2] soit desoutz le chiualer chief vssher de la sale. Et gardera lez baunkers, et parchers mettera, et apparaillera la sale. Et mangera en la sale entour lez vallettz de mestre saunz rien autre chose aprendre de roi. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne liueree come vallett de mestre.

Deux Chiualers Marchals de la Sale.[3]

Item deux chiualers marchals de la sale, dez queux lune herbergera et lautre serra entendant a la sale. Et pres le herberagage fait en soiorne lun et lautre soient entendantz a la sale.[4] Et assaient | lez gentz en la sale solonque ceo qi lour estate demaunde, issint qi lun soit alant par mye la sale et en lez officez al vn manger, et lautre a lautre. Dez queux chescune prendra pur sa chambre j piche de vin, iij chaundelx, ij tortis entour ceux deux. Et si null de eux soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liuere ij dare de payn, j piche de vin, ij messes grose de la quissine, j messe de rost; et pour feez x marcz, ij robez par an en drap, ou viij marcz par an en deniers; et littere et busshe sicome le chiualer vssher. Marshal the Hall f. 53.

1. B. only. 2. Qui supplied from B. only. 3. B. only.
4. This sentence is omitted in B. The next paragraph shews apres is the right reading for pres.

Deux Sergeantz Marshalx de Sale.[1]

ieant mar-
ls of the
le.

Item ij sergeantz mareschalx de la sale, dez queux lun herbergera, et lauter serra entendant a la sale. Et apres la herbergage fait en soierne, lun et lautre soient entendantz a la sale, et assedent lez gentz en la sale solonqe ceo qi lour estate demande, si come cest suisdit dez chiualers marshalls. Dez queux chescune prendra pour la chambre j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx; et, sil soit seigne ou maladez, pour liueree j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine, j messe de rost, vij d. ob. pour gagez le iour; ij robez par an, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers.

Le Serieant Surueour du dresour pour la Sale.[2]

veior of
Dressour.

Item vn sergeant surueour de dressour pour la sale, qi deit auiser dez luez de lour seruice, solonque ceo qi les gentz de graunde estate et autres serrount assiz en la sale. Et prendra pour coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx. Et sil seit seigne ou maladez, preigne liueree j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruois, j messe gros de la cuissine, j messe de rost; vij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; ij robez par an, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers.

uiers
ers of the
le.

Item trois esquires, asseours de messe en la sale, deiuent mettre le messe en la sale; et serrount par si bien auisement come il pourrount issint qi lez gentz destate et autrez soient seruiz solonque lour estate, et nulle part emporterount la viande forsqe la ou ly deiuent de droit. Dez quelx chescun eit pour coche j galoun de seruoise, ij chaundelx; vij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; ij robez par an, ou xl s. en deniers. Et seigne ou maladez, eit pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruois, j messe de gros de la quissine. et vn messe de rost.

3d.
ij Es-
ers of the
le.

Item xxiiij esquiers, saunz lez esquiers de la chambre et toutz lez officers de loustell qi serrount en la sale. Et ferount toutz autres chosez qi appendent a lour estatez par lez commandementz de seneschall et tresorer, ou de ceux qi teignent lour lieus. Dez queux chescune prendra vij d. mail[3] le iour pour gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xls. en deniers. Et si null soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galon de seruoise, j messe gros de la cuissine, et vn messe de rost.

Un chief Clerk de la Panetrie et Boutelerie.[4]

rk of the
trye.

Item j chief clerk de la panetrie et de la buttellerie, qi doit faire lez abbreuientz[5] de soun office. Et respondra chescun iour a la countee de loustell de parcelx liuerez et toutz autres chosez qi

1. B. only. 2. B. only. 3. B. vijd. ob. le iour. 4. B. only.
5. B. abreuyaments.

appartenent a soun office. Et serra al resceit de pain, vyn, [et] seruois. Et suruerra et examinera qil soient de pois, mesure, et value qi deiuent estre. Issint qi null defaut y soit, face monstrere a lez souereins pour faire en damendez[1] sil ne puis mesme amender. Et seruira chescune iour al vn mangier et mangera a lautre. Et prendra pour coche j piche de vin, ij chaundelx, j tortiz; et seigne ou maladez, j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la cuissine, j messe de rost; vij d. ob. pour gagez le iour; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers.

Item j southclerc vssher de mesme loffice, qi serra chescun iour al receit de pain en la panetrie, et la ferra counter. Et receyuera et escriura lez foilez dez taillez, et nouns dez vendours de mesme le payn. Et si le pain soit fourni de ble le roy, en ferra taile encountre le peisour le roi. Auxint face de la seruoyse en la butellerie. Et ferra liuereez de pain, vin et seruoise, cestassauoir de payn en la graunt panetrie, de vin et de seruoise en la graunde buttillerie. Et soient cestez liuereez faitz chescun iour enauant manger, sil ne soit par resonable enchesoun. Et seruira en la sale al vn manger, et mangera a lautre. Et seigne ou maladez, il prendra pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine; et prendra j robe par an en drap, ou xx s. en deniers. Et auera soun lite cariez en la cariage de panetrie.

Le Sergeant chief Panterer.[2]

Item vn sergeant chief panterer. Et resceiuera le pain en gros par le vieu de clerc ou de southclerc, et respondra de lez despensez au chief clerc chescun iour sur le breuement. Et prendra pour coche j galoun de seruoise, [et] iij chaundelx. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la cuissine, j messe de rost; | vij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Serieant d pantrye. f. 54.

Item j vallett de mestier desoutz, qi seruira en la sale al vn manger, et le dit sergeant a lautre mangier; et ij vallettz portiers de mesme loffice, dount lun portera le pain al vn mangier [et] lautre a lautre. Lez quels iij vallettez chescun eit vn robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pur la chauceur iiij s. viij d. par an. Et seigne ou maladez, eit pour liueree le iour j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grosse de la cuissine; et pur le vallett j lite pour lez deux vallettz, cariez en mesme loffice.

Le Sargeant Panterer pour la bouche le Roy.[3]

Item vn sergeaunt panterer pour la bouche le roi, qi receiuera Serieant panterer f the mouth

1. B. en amender. 2. B. only. 3. B. only.

le pain pour le roi et pour sa chambre chescun iour de grande panterie, et nulle part aillours. Et de ceo respondra au clerk de breuementz. Et prendra pour coche j galoun de seruoise [iij seruoise],[1] et pour soun office vj chaundelx. Et seignez ou maladez, eit pour liueree j dare de pain, demi galoun de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine, j messe de rost; vij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers.

Item j vallett de mestier desouz luy mesmez loffice deuers le chambre, qi prendra j robe par an en drap, ou vn mars en deniers, et pur chauceur iiij s. viij d. par tout lan. Et seigne ou maladez, eit pour liuerree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine, et j lite cariez, pur luy et le vallett de la cuphous, en le cariage de pantre.

paine. Item j vallett de mestier qi puruera le pain pur lostiell, et ferra taillez a vendours maintenaunt sur lachate, auant qi le pain soit emporte du dit vendour. Et le ferra veignir et liuerer en la panetrie az custagez le roi a soun perile demene. Et mangera en la sale entre lez autrez vallettz de mestier, sil ne soit destourbe par resonable enchesoun touchant soun office. Et adonqes soient alloez ij d. le iour pur gagez en rolle de la panetrie. Et sil soit seignez ou maladez, eit pour liueree j dare de payn, j galoun [de] seruoise, j messe de rost de la quissine; et robe et chauceur come desuis est dit de autrez vallettz de mestier.

Waferer. Item waferer, qi seruira le roi le sale et le chambre de wafers | id. solonqe ceo qi affiert. Et prendra pour soun office en le roulle de panetrie viij d. le iour, sugurr de la garderobe, et dez ouez de la pulletrie, et fouaille de lezquillerie, solonqe ceo qil auera affair pur la seruice le roi, sicome il voudra auoir, deuaunt seneschall et le tresorer si de soit arresonez.[2] Et prendra gagez vij d. ob. le iour; ij robez par an, ou xl s. en deniers; et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, de la cuissine j messe de rost.

eant of Pastrie. Item j sergeant pistour qi furnra [3] tout manere de pain pur lez expensez del hostiell le roi, auxibien pain rounde pur tout la communite, come payn de mayn pur la bouche le roy, solonqe ceo qil voudra responder a la compte. Quant il serra charge par le seneschall et tresorer de faire purueance de furment, deit faire lez achatez en due manere a greignour profit le roy, et a mendre greuance de peple, faisant paiement ou taille az vendours de price de mesme le blee issint purueu, tantost sur lachate, auaunt qi la dit furment soit mesurez hors de poer de vendour. Et liuera lez foillez et taillez, ensi faitz as vendours, au chief clerc de la panetrie

1. Omitted in B. 2. B. Si ne soit arresonez. 3. B. suruira.

dedeinz le sept iour apres lachate fait a pluis tort, par quelx taillez et foillez les vendours en serrount paiez en garderobe et le roi en serui pleinement; le quell sergeant prendra, pur fornage de payn de mayn pour la bouche le roi, chescune iour iij dare en certeyn; pour coche j galoun de seruois, et iij chaundelx, et pur soun office ij chaundelx; pour gagez vij d. ob. le iour; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, vn messe gros de la cuissine, j messe de rost. Et hors de court entour soun office, il prendra iiij d. ob. le iour pur sa bouche en la roulle de panetrie.

Item ij vallettz de mestier de pistrine, dount lune serra entendant a fourn, et lautre a molyn pour moler le frument. Et chescune deux prendra ij d. le iour pour gagez en roulle de la panetrie; j robe par an en drap, ou j mars de deniers; et pour chauceur iiij s. viij d. par an, et j lite cariez pur eux deux en le cariage de pistrine.

Item j sergeant naper, qi seruira en la chambire le roy et la sale de soun office. Et receiuera la naperie de clerk de lespicerie, et respondra ent a la compte toutz lez foitz qil en serra apposez. Et fera reportez le veillez nappez en garderobe au dit clerc. Quaunt ils ne purrount pluis longe|ment seruire illoques, serrount liuerez al aumoisne. Et prendra le dit sergeaunt iiij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers; pur soun office chescune iour ij chaundelx. Et sil soit seignez ou maladez, eit pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine, j messe de rost, et soun lit cariez en la cariage de soun office. Serieant of the Naperi f. 55.

Item j vallett doffice desouz luy en mesme loffice, qi prendra j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; pur chauceur iiij s. viij d. par an; et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la quissine.

Item j ewere pur la chambre, qi seruira en la dit chambre de par soun office, et prendra iiij d. ob. le iour pur gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers. Et prendra pour soun office ij chaundelx, qaunt mestier serra. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de payn, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cussine, j messe de rost. Ewerer of t Chambre.

Item j vallett de mestier de ewerie, qi seruira de office en la sale, et prendra j robe par an en drap, ou vn marcz en deniers; pour chauceur iiij s. viij d. par an. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de payn, j galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine.

Item j lauendre pour le chambre le roi; qi auera tout manere de linge taille pour corps le roy, et tout loffice de ewerie, auxibien Launder fo the Chamb

deuers la sale come deuers le chambre, pour lez couertures del office deuers le chambre. Et prendra chescune iour pour liueree j dare de payn, ij galoun de seruoise, ij messes de grose de la quissine, ij chaundelx; iiij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; j robe par an en drap, ou xxvj s. viij d. en deniers, et pour cendrez et pur busshe xxvj s. viij d. par an de la garderobe.

aunder of
ie Napery.

Item j lauendre de la naperie, qi lauera tout maner de linge taille qi partient a loffice de la dit naperie, et lez couerturez dez officez deuers la sale. Et prendra chescune iour pour liueree ij dare de payn, ij galouns de seruoise, ij messes de gros de la quissine, ij chaundelx; iiij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; j robe par an en drap, ou xxvj s. viij d. en deniers; et pour cendrez et busshe xxvj s. viij d. par an de la garderobe.

Le chief Botiller Sergeant.[1]

hief Butler
id Serieant
irveior of
Vynes.
55d.

Item j chief botiller sergeant, purueour de vins, qi prendra le iour, qaunt il serra en court, pour coche j piche de vin, iij chaundelx, et tortis; ij ro|bez par an en drap, ou xxvj s. viij d. en deniers; et pur soun fee xx marcz par an. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe grosse de la quissine, j messe de rost. Et ferra ceo qi appartient a luy solonque ceo qi est contenue en le statuit de soun officez desoubz.

Le Sergeant Botiller de Lostell.[2]

erieant
utler.

Item vn sergeant botiller de lostiell, qi receiuera et despendra tout la vin et seruoise qi serra despendu en lostiell. Et seruira le sale, et respoundra chescune iour abreuement au clerc de la butillerie dez parcelx issint despenduz. Et ferra lez achatez des hanaps de fust par la vicue de clerc, qi lez allouera en le roulle de la butillerie solonqe ceo qi serrount resonablement despenduz, cestassauoir le demange[3] pur semayne passe. Et auera en sa garde lez hanaps dargent, barrilx ferrez, tankars, et tout manere de vessell de la butillerie pur la seruice de la sale, et ent respondra en garderobe. Et prendra pour liueree demi piche de vin, iij chaundelx; vij d. ob. le iour pour gagez; deux robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et prendra pour soun office de la butillerie vj chaundelx, et pur le celerie pur trere le vin iiij chaundelx, quaunt mestier serra. Et seigne ou maladez, prendra pour liuere j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de cuissine, j messe de rost.

1. B. only. 2. B. only. 3. B. lez damages.

Le Sargeant Botiller pour le Roy.[1]

Item j sergeant botiller deuers le roi, qi receiura tout la vin, et le seruoise, qi serra despendu en le chambre le roi, de butiller de lostell; et seruira a la chambre et ent respondra chescune iour as breuementz a clerc de la butillerie. Et auera en sa garde lez pees et hanaps dargent pour seruice de la dit chambre, et en respondra en garderobe. Et prendra pour coche j galoun de seruois, iij chaundelx; vij d. ob. pur gagez; ij robes par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et prendra pur soun office, qaunt mester serra, viij chaundelx. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour soun liueree j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine, j messe de rost. Serieant Butlers.

Item j vallet de mestier de cuphous qi seruira la chambre solonqe lordinaunce de soun mestre sergeant auaunt dit; et prendra j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. par an; et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la quissine, et j lite pur luy et le vallett de la panetrie deuers le roi, cariez en [la charette de][2] la panetrie. The Cuppe house.

Item j vallett de mestier, treour de vin, qi terra[3] tout la vine qi serra despendu en lostell, et eydra seruize en la sale, | quant mestier serra, par comaundement de sez soueraignez. Et prendra vn robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et seigne ou maladez, pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine, et j lite cariez, pur luy et pur versour, en la charette de butillerie. Drawers of Wyne. f. 56.

Item j vallett versour de mestier de la butillerie, qi versera vin et seruoise qi serrount despenduz en lostell pur lez liuerez, et eidra a discharger lez charettez qi venerount ou vin et seruoise, et pur lez dispenses de lostell auauntdit. Et prendra j robe par an, ou j marc en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. par an. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la quissine.

Item j vallett de mestier, purueour de seruoise, qi ferra la purueaunce de seruoise. Et mesme celluy purueour ferra taillez a chescune homme de qi il auerra achate la seruoise mentenant sur lachate, deuaunt qi la seruoise isse la meisoun du vendour, et luy ferra veignir en la butillerie az costagez du roi. Et prendra chescune iour ij d. pur gagez en rolle de la butillerie; j robe par an en drap, ou vij marcz en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Purveior of the ale.

Item ij vallettz de picherous, qi seruiront la sale de vin et de seruoise solonque lauisement de lours soueraigns. Et lauerount Pycher hou

1. B. only. 2. Words in brackets supplied. 3. B. triour de vyn qi triera.

lez tankartz, hanaper, et tout manere de vesselle qils ount en garde, desoubz le butiller de lostell. Et prendrount pur loffice, quaunt mestier serra, ij chaundelx; dez queux chescune prendra j robe par an en drap ou vn marcz en deniers; et pur chauceur iiij s. viij d. Et ils deux auerount j lite cariez en le cariage del picherous, et, seigne ou maladez, j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine.

Porters of the Buttery.

Item ij vallettz de mestier, portours de la buttellerie, qi laueront lez barilx feriz,[1] et lez porteront, auxibien de vin come de seruoise, pur la seruoise de la chambre et de lostell, cestassauoir hors de celere tanque al butillerie et cuphous, si la dit celare ne soit de la court herbergez. Et si issi soit, et il busoigne qe le vin soit cariez de celere par charette, ou par botelx, pur defaut de herbergage de celere, qi nest pas herbergez si pres come il comeneit,[2] adonqes lez ditz portours porteront lez barilz ferez dez ditz charettz et botelx tanque en le butillerie a cuphous auauntdit. Et reporteront lez ditz barilx ferez, quaunt ils serrount voidez, quelle partie qi le | butiller de lostiell, qi lez ad en garde, lour chargera pur le seruice le roi. Et mangerount en sale, sil ne soit hors de court en bosoignez le roi par commaundementz de lour soueraignez. Adonqes prendra chescune deux ij d. le iour en la rolle de butillerie pur gagez, et chescune prendra j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et ils deux auerount j lite, cariez en la cariage de la buttillerie; et, seigne ou maladez, j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la cuissine.

56d.

Le chief Clerk de la Cuisine.[3]

Clarke of the Kytchyn.

Item vn chief clerc de la cuissine, qi doit faire lez abreuientz[4] de soun office. Et respondra lez parcelx liuerez et toutz autrez chosez qi appartienent a soun office chescune iour a la compte en garderobe deuaunt seneschall et tresorer. Et serra a[5] coper de la chare et au departir de pissoun. Et suruera lez achatez et le price de chare et de pissoun, et de toutz autrez chosez appartenauntz a soun office ouesque leide le countrerollour, lussher de la sale chiualer, ou mareschall chiualer, et del asseour de la table le roi.[6] Presentra lez defautez qil verra en soun office a sez soueraigns a toutz lez foitz qil verra qi soit affaire pur le roi. Sil mesme ne portera et seruira a lune mangier chescune iour en sale et mangera a lautre. Et prendra le iour pour soun coche j piche de vin, ij chaundelx, j tortis; vij d. ob. pour gagez, tanque il soit auaunce par le roi; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare

1. B. le barils ferres. 2. B. conueneit. 3. B. only. 4. B. les abreuements. 5. B. only. 6. The full stop is given here in B.

de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine, j messe de rost.

Item j southclerk de mesme loffice, qi doit chescun iour faire lez liuereez de chare et de pissoun et de la pulletrie. Et dez mesmez cez liuereez respoundra chescune iour au chief clerc del office as breuementz, et escriuera lez parcelx del office. Et mangera chescune iour en sale a lune mangier, et seruira a lautre. Et prendra j robe par an en drap del sute dez clercs, ou xx s. en deniers. Et sil soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine, j messe de rost. 2 Vnder Clerkes

Deux Achatours pour les dispenses de Lostell.[1]

Item deux achatours, qi ferunt lez achatez de chare et pissoun pur lez despensez de lostell. Et ferount venir le price chescune iour au clerc de la cuissine, ou lez bens,[2] issint qi lussher de la sale, chiualer, et lasseour de table le roi, a le dit clerc pourrount ver frechement qi lez ditz biens soient sufficiantz a despender et de bone value, solonque le price, pur le roi. Et ferount lour achate en due manere a greindre profit du roi et a mendre greuance de peple, fesantz paiement | ou taillez a chescune homme de qi ils aueront f. 57. achatez lez biens al oeps le roi, tantost sur la chate, auaunt qi mesmez lez biens issint purueux issint hors de poer de vendours. Et liueront lez foillez de mesme lez taillez au chief clerc de la cuissine deinz lez viij iours apres lachate fait a pluis tarde, par mie[3] qi en lez taillez lez vendours en seront paiez en garderobe, et le roi serui pleinment dez biens auauntditz. Dount chescune dez ditz chatours prendra pour coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx; vij d. ob. pour gagez; ij robez par an, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liuere j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruois, j messe grose de la cuissine, j messe de rost; et hors de court pur purueantz faire iiij d. ob. pur sa bouche all la rolle de la cuissine. 2 Chators.

Deux Sargeants Keus pour la bouche le Roy[4]

Item deux sergeantz kuse pur la bouche le roi, dount quaunt lun trauaille ou le roi cheuaugera deuaunt pur soun graunt mangier apparailler, et lautre demura derer pur soun dyner. Et chescun de eux prendra pur soun coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx; vij d. ob. pur gagez; ij robez par an, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. 2 Serieants Cookes for the mouthe.

1. B. only. 2. B. biens. 3. B. parmye. A. might be read pur uue.
4. B. only.

Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liuere j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la cuissine, j messe de rost.

groomes. Item v vallettz de mestier de la cuissine le roi, desoubz les sergeantz auauntditz, dount lun serra vssher, et querra, par lez commaundementz de sez mestrez, au graunde lardere et a lestable, tout la chare et la pissoun qi serra despendu en la chambre le roi, pain, vin et seruois de la pantrie et butillerie, et espicez de la spicerie pur la dit cuissine par lez commaundementz et lordenauncez de sez mestrez. Et vn autre vallet serra ewer, qi receiuera le vesselle de la dit cuissine par endenture de lesquillere,[2] et la gardera auxibien en trauaill come en soiourne. Et quira la grosse chare, et apparaillera le primer cours, auxibien de pissoun come de chare. Et vn autre vallet sera potager, qi fera lez potagez pur la chambre le roi, et toutz lez sewes qi serrount pur sa table. Et deux autres vallettz ferrount lez rostez et lez autres cours pur la dit chambre solonque lordnaunce lours mestres. Et chescune de eux vallettz prendra j robe par an en drap, ou j marc en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. par an. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruois, j messe grose de la quissine. Dez queux v vallettz eient vn garson pour lour lite porter et eider en la quissine.

Deux Seriantz Keuz de la mesnee.[3]

ookes for
ie meyny.
57d. Item deux sergeantz keus pour la mesne, lez queux ferrount apparailler la viaunde pur la mesne de la sale solonqe ceo qi commande | lour serra par seneschall et tresorer ou lour lieux tenauntz. Et lun seruira et lun mangera a lauter a lauter. Dount chescune prendra pur coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx; vij d. ob. pur gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et seigne ou maladez, pur liueree j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la cuissine, j messe de rost.

groomes of
ie kitchyn. Item v vallettz de mestier pur la cuissine la mesnee desoubz lez ditz sergeantz. Et [un de eux[4]] fera toutz maners de potagez qi serrount serui en la sale. Et vn auter vallet sera quisour du grose chescun iour qi sera serui en la sale, auxibien de chare come de pissoun. Et iij autrez vallettz ferrount lez rostez et lez autres cours pur la dit sale solonqe lordinaunce de lour mestrez. Et chescun de eux v vallettz prendra j robe par an en drap, ou vn mars en deniers; pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et seigne ou maladez,

1. 2 in MS. 2. B. esquillier. 3. B. only.
4. Words in brackets supplied from B.

preigne pur [liueree][1] j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de la cuissine. Et ij eient j garson pur lour lite porter et eider en la cuissine.

Item deux vallettz doffice, qi sount appellez akers, qi receiuerent la vesselle de la cuissine de la mesnee par endenture del esquiller, et la mettrount et le garderount, auxibien en trauaille come en soiourne. Et chescun de ceux deux prendra vn robe par an, ou vn mars en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et seigne ou maladez, pour liueree j dare de pain, vn galoun de seruoise, j messe grose de la quissine; et entre eux deux j garson. 2 groomes Akers.

Le Sargeant du Larder[2]

Item j sergeant lardere, qi receiuera la chare et la pissoun, qi lez achatours ferrount venir en lardere, ou qi viendra de present, et de la venisoun, qi y viendra dez venours le roi, ou qi ceo soit. Et liuera lez auauntditz chare et pissoun pur lez despensez del hostell le roi par parcell, et par lauisement de countreroller, lussher de la sale, chiualer, ou mareschall chiualer de la sale, clerc de la cuissine, lasseour de la table le roi, et les meistrez kus. Et gardera la viande au dressour, et rendra au dit clerc chescun iour as breuementz certeins parcelx de auauntditz chare et pissoun despenduz en la manere auauntdit. Et si par cas aueigne qil soit maunde hors de court par seneschall et tresorer de faire nul manere de purueance, adonques lez face il en la manere qi suis est dit dez achatours. Et prendra pur coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx, iiij d. ob. le iour pur gagez. Et auera soun lite cariez en la cariage de soun office. Et prendra ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. en deniers. Et prendra pur soun office, quaunt mestier serra, iij chaundelx. Et seigne ou | maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, demi f. 58. piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, vn messe grose de la cuissine et vn messe de rost. Serieant o the Larde

Item vn vallet de mester, vssher de larder, desouth le lardiner, qi portera lez cliefs de larder, qaunt le lardiner est hors de court. Et adonquez receiuera, liuera et respondra de toutz chosez appartenauntz al office de lardere en mesme la manere come sus est dit de lardiner. Et qaunt le lardiner est en court, il ferra mesme soun office. Et lussher gardera la graunt quissine de la mesne qi null veigne forsqe deiuent de droit faire le. Et respondra chescun iour as breuementz au clerc de la cuissine dez parcelx de la chare et de pissoun, et de toutz chosez appartenauntz a soun office qil auera receu en la cuissine auauntdit, auxibien de gros hors de la ville Vsher of th Larder.

1. Words in brackets supplied from B.
2. B. only.

dez achatours de lardere, come de la pulletrie hors de la herbergagerie. Et qaunt le suthclerc de la cuissine est seigne hors de court, il fera lez liuereez de la quissine, et quirra pain et seruoise de la panetrie et butillerie et espicez de lespicerie pur la dit cuissine, par lez commaundementz et ordinauncez de lez meistrez keus. Et prendra j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. par an. Et auera soun lite cariez en la cariage de lardere. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de ceruoise, j messe gros de la quissine.

orters in e slaughter ouse or itchery.

Item ij vallettz de mestier, portours de lordere,[1] qi receiuerount la chare en la bucherie del achatour par certein accompt a certein nombre. Et mesme la chare sauement garderont tant qil veigne en la court, et illoeqes la liueront par mesme lacompte et nombre au lardiner ou al vssher de larder; et mesme la manere de pissoun. Et porteront la chare et la pissoun dez chariettz al vssher de la quissine, tanque al estable et tanque au lardere, et hors du lardere tanque al quissine, et hors de le cuissine, ou leide dez ewers de la quissine, tanque al dressour. Et lez remenauntz de chare et pissoun, remiz au dit dressour apres qi len auera mange, porterount arere au lardere. Et si lun dez achatours de le quissine soit mande hors du court par seneschal ou tresorer de faire purueance dez bestez viuez, ou de pissoun, il auera ou luy lun dez ij portours susditz, par auisement du clerc de la quissine, pur luy estre en eide de faire venir en court sa mesme[2] purueance, quaunt il auera fait. Et le dit pourtour prendra chescune iour, tant come il est hors de court entre la boisoigne susdit, ij d. pur gagez en rolle de la cuissine. Et chescune de mesmez ceux deux portours j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et entre ceux deux aueront j lite cariez | en la care de lardere.

58d.

Le Sargeant Pulter.[3]

rieant ulter.

Item vn sergeant pulter, qi ferra lez achatez et la purueance de toutz maners dez chosez appartenauntz a soun office. Et prendra chescun auisement del asseour de la table le roi, du clerc de la quissine, et de mestrez queux, ceo qil ferra venir en court pur lez despensez de la chambre et de lostell. Et solonqe ceux despensez respoundra chescun iour au dit clerk az breuementz, et en ferra nulle manere de liueree forsque par lauisement de clerc auauntdit. Et prendra le iour [vij d. ob.][4] en deniers. Et auera soun lite carie en la cariage de soun office. Et seigne

1. B. lardere. 2. A. reads sa after mein sa purueance. 3. B. only.
4. Words in brackets supplied from B. A blank space in A.

ou maladez, eit liuere j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruois, j messe gros de la quissine, j messe de rost.

Item j vallett [de] [1] mestier de mesme loffice, qi ferra le certein price de pullaille. Et quaunt il va en pays entre purueance de la pullaille, auera oue luy lez turmentours, qi bosoignent destre en la dit office, ou partie de eux, lez nouns dez queux tournentours serrount entres en garderobe, a carier le purueance qil auera issint purveu. Et paiera sur longle pur le pullaille sur soun perille par la reasoun de certein qi en est certein assise. Et respondra deuaunt le seneschall et tresorer si nulle pleint y veigne dez outragez qi ou lez ditz tournentours aueront fait en pays, ou de defaut de paiement. Et respondra a soun mestre sergeant pulter dez deniers qil auera receu de luy, ou de la garderobe. Et quaunt il est hors de court entre la bosoigne auauntdit, il prendra ijd. le iour pur gagez en la rolle de cuissine; j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et seigne ou maladez, pur liuere j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, vn messe gros de la quissine. Grome.

Item j sergeant garbagere de la quissine saunz gagez, qi receiuera la pulleil hors de la pullerie, et lez eschaudera et tout manere de la volatille par certein nombre. Et lez liuera par parcelx a lez quisinez pur lez despensez de chambre de roi et de lostell. Et dez liuereez et de mesme cels parcelx respondra chescune iour as breuementz au clerk de la quissine. Et prendra j robe par an, ou xx s. en deniers. Et prendra pur soun office, quaunt mestier serra, ij chaundelx. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liueree j dare de pain, vn galoun de seruoise, j messe grosse de la quissine, j messe de rost; et pur soun feez, qi est appellez le petit ewe, entre le Pasque et le Pentecost, j mars par an. Garbagers foule.

Item vn vallett de mesme loffice, saunz robez et saunz gagez, qi seruira en loffice desouz soun mestre, et prendra rien de roi forsque mangier et boiure en la sale; et, seigne ou maladez, pur liuere j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de gros de la quissine.

Le Sargeant Esquyller. [2]

Item vn sergeant esquiller, qi achatera et puruera bouche, carboun et toutz maners de vesselle darrein, fere et de fust, qi parteignent a la cuissine, et potage et plusours autres chosez appartenauntz a soun office. Et lez despendra en due manere solonqe ceo qi affiert. Et ent respoundra chescune iour as breuementz au clerc de la cuissine. Et prendra le iour pur coche j galoun de seruois, iij chaundelx, et, quaunt mestier serra, pur soun f. 59. Serieant o the Sculle

1. Word in brackets from B. 2. B. only.

office ij chaundelx; iiij d. ob. le iour pur gagez, ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers. Et auera soun lite cariez en le cariage de soun office. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liueree j dare de payn, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine, j mess de rost.

Groomes. Item ij vallettz de mestier de esquillerie, qi trauailleront et feront quaunt qi lour sergeant lour comande par resoun es chosez touchauntz lez officez. Et lun seruira en la sale al vn mangier, et lautre a lautre. Et chescune de eux prendra j robe par an en drap, ou vn mars en deniers, pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et aueront entre eux deux j lite cariez en la cariage del office. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pour liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine.

n other rieant uller. Item j sergeant esquiller qi receiuera la vesselle dargent en garde[robe] par nombre et par pois, cestassauoir chargeours esquellez, et lez gardera et en respoundra en la dit garde[robe] al fyn del an de nombre et de pois. Et prendra ij chaundelx pur soun office; iiij d. ob. le iour pur gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine, j messe do rost.[1]

Le Sargeant Sauser.[2]

rieant of e Sawsery. Item j sergeaunt sauser, qi achatera et puruera floure pur toutz maners de sauses et autres chosez qi bosoigneront pur loffice de la sawcerie et lostell le roi; et lez despendera en due manere solonqe ceo qi affert, et fournera come appent de soun office. Et respondra as breuementz al clerc de la cuissine. Et receiuera lez saucers dargent en garderobe, et lez gardera, et ent respoundra au le dit garderobe al fyne del an del nombre et de pois. Et prendra pour liuere j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx, vij d. ob. le iour pur gagez, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la quissine, j messe de rost, et pur soun office, quaunt mestier serra, iij chaundelx.

Groomes. Item ij vallettz de mestier de la sauserie qi ferrount quauntque le sergeant lour comandera par reasoun ez chosez touchantz loffice.

59d. Et lun seruira a lun mangier, et lautre a lautre. Et chescune deux prendra vn robe par an en drap, ou j marc en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Et aueront entre eux deux j lite, cariez en la cariage del office. Et si nulle deux soit seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liueree j dare de pain, j galoun de seruois, j messe gros de la cuissine.

1. This paragraph is omitted in B. 2. B. only.

Le Sargeant Porter de le chamber le Roy.[1]

Item vn sergeant porter, qi gardera la porte par la ou le roi gist, issint qe nulle y entre fors ceux qi le deuent faire de droit; ne qil suffre qi nulle ne port hors de la court pain, vin, ne seruois, viande, littere, ne busche, ne nul autres chosez, fors ceux qi deiuent faire; ne rien ne soit emportez saunz certeins liuereez et autres chosez qi deiuent estre porte de droit. Et si nulle ne face, qil ne[2] face arester, et celluy ensement qi la chose emporte; et qil le mottera[3] en la proschein accompt deuaunt seneschall et tresorer. Et qil neit desoutz luy en soun office fors ceux qi portent lez robez le roi. Et ne mangera pas en sale; mais prendra sa liueree, cestassauoir chescun iour j dare de pain, j galoun de seruois, j mess gros de la quissine, j mess de rost. Et seigne ou maladez, eit j piche de vin, si come autres sergeantz de lacompte. Et prendra pur coche j galoun de seruoise, iij chaundelx; et pur soun office iij chaundelx, quaunt mestier serra; vij d. ob. le iour pur gagez; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Serieant Porter.

Item ij vallettz doffice desouth luy, qi li serrount en eide de iour et de noet, et quaunt ils poent, de faire toutz chosez appartenauntz au dit office.[4] Et ne mangerount poynt en sale, mais chescune de eux prendra le iour pour liuere j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j mess de gros de la quissine, j robe par an en drap ou j mars en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. par an. 2 Groomes

Le chief Clerk de la Marechaucie.[5]

Item vn chief clerc de marechaucie, qi receiuera lez taillez dez purueancez, faitz par la clerc chief purueour del aueinere et par lez vallettz, purueours de mesme loffice, ensemblement ou purueancez contenuz ez mesmez taillez. Et ferra lez abreuementz de feine, aueins, littere, et toutz autrez chosez qi apparteignent al office de marchaucie solonque la price et lez achatez dez ditz purueancez. Et receiuera auxi lez taillez dez harneys [et] charettez. Et acountra chescun semain ouesqe lez purueours dez toutz maners doffice de harneys; et receiuera de eux lez parcelx issint qil puis acounter chescun semayne vn fois deuaunt seneschall et tresorer de tout maner de purueance de harneys. Et ferra allower chescun iour en rolle de soun office lez gagez dez clercs, sergeantz dez armez doffice, esquiers de lostell, qi serrount as gagez. Et prendra pur coche j piche de vin, deux chaundelx, j tortis, ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers. Et seigne ou maladez, j dare de pain, f. 60. demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de Chief Clar of the Marshalsi

1. B. only. 2 B. qil luy face arrester. 3. B. mette. 4. The punctuation adopted is suggested by B. 5. B. only.

la cuissine, j messe de rost. Et auera deux chiualx a liueree de fein et de auein, et j garcon as gagez j d. ob. le iour.

Le chief Clerc purueour del aueyne.[1]

rveior of Avenrye. Item vn clerk chief purueour de aueine, qi ferra lez purueancez de fein et de aueins, littere, herneis, et autres chosez qi couent pur loffice de marchaucie. Et suruera lez purueans fait par lez vallettz purueours souz lui; et receiuera de eux lez taillz dez purueans qi il aueront faitz. Et ferra enterrer[2] en roulle deuers lui lez nouns dez vendours, issint qil puis certefier la garderobe si pleint aueigne qi[3] fraude omissioun soit fait dez taillez ou dez purueans. Et suruera lez purueanz dez harneys qi appartient al office de marchaucie. Et eidra de faire liueree de fein et de auiens quaunt il est en court. Et prendra parcelx au chief clerc de tout lez liuerez qil ferra. Et quaunt il serra hors de court entre[4] lez purueancez par tesmoignance du dit chief clerc de la marchaucie, il prendra iiij d. ob. le iour pur sa bouche en rolle de la marchaucie.[5] Et prendra liueree pur vn chiuall, et gagez pur vn garceoun j d. ob. le iour; ij robez par an, ou xl s. en deniers. Et soun lite carie serra en cariage de soun office. Et seigne ou maladez, prendra j dare de payne, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruois, j messe gros de la quissine, j messe de rost.

ieant rbenger. Item vn sergeant, herberiour de palfreis le roi, qi gardra et ferra garder lez palfreiez, destrers, cousers et autres chiualx de le stable le roi. Et chiuauchera en le compaigne le roi, et portera la houshez de chiualx qi roy serra montez. Et mesura au roi le chiuall qe il montera; et luy receiuera a soun descendre. Et ferra purueance de tout manere de harneys qi apparteignent a soun office, et ceo par la veue de chief clerc de la marchaucie ou de clerc chief purueour del aueinerie. Et accountra chescune semayne vn foitz oue le dit clerc de marchaucie de toutz chosez qil auera purueu, issint qi la dit chief clerc purra en acounter deuaunt le seneschal et tresorer chescun semayne. Et mangera en sale. Quaunt il serra hors du court entre lez bosoignez le roy par tesmoignaunce du dit chief clerc de la marchaucie, il prendra iiij d. ob. le iour pour gagez en rolle du marchaucie; et liuere pur deux chiualx, et liueree pur j garceon; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers; et pur coche j galoun de seruois, iij chaundelx. Et seigne ou maladez, j dare de pain, demi piche de vin, demi galoun de seruoise, j messe gros de la cuissine, j messe de rost.

oome rbenger. Item vn vallett herberiour desoutz luy, qi herbergera destrez,[6]

1. B. only. 2. B. entrer. 3. B. si pleinte y aueyne qe. 4. B. entour. 5. The words il prendra—marchaucie omitted in B. 6. B. destrers.

palfr|eyez, cousours, et autres chiualx de le stable le roi; ferra f. 60d.
mettre et redresser lez stablez, et mesner a lestable littere, fein et aueine pur mesmez lez chiualz. Et trouera cresset chescun noet ardant en le stable, et prendra chescune iour pur la dit cresset ij d.; pur gagez ij d. le iour; j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. a ij soisons del an.

Item j sergeant herberiour de somers et de chiualx charettez. Et ferra redresser et ferra lez charettz qi serrount debrescez. Et puruera et achatera toutz maners de harneis qi couient pur lez somers et lez charettez par la vieue de chief clerc de marchaucie, ou chief clerc purueour del aueinere. Et doit liuerer lez taillez de toutz lez chosez qil ferra puruere, achate faire, redresser, au chief clerc de marchaucie; et accountera oue luy chescune semayn vn foitz de quaunt il auera purueux et achatez, issi qi la dit clerc puisse acounter chescun semayne en deuaunt le seneschall et tresorer. Et le dit herberiour face venir deuaunt la dit chief clerc lez charettz et harneis et[1] pluis longement ne purrount seruire, issint qe, par tesmoignance et surueue du dit clerc, puissent estre liuerez la ou le seneschal et tresorer ordeinerent. Et mangera en sale. [Et quaunt il serra entour soun office par quoy il ne poet manger en sale][2] par tesmoignaunce du dit chief clerc et[3] prendra pur sa bouche iiij d. ob. le iour en rolle de marchaucie, liueree pur j chiuall, et gagez pur soun gars j d. mail[4] le iour; ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers; et soun lite cariez en le cariage de soun office. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, et messe de gros de la cuissine, et vn messe rost.

Item j vallett herberiour desouz luy, qi herbergera lez ditz chiualx, 2 Groomes
someres et charettz, et suruera qi lez ditz chiualx soient seruez couenablement; et eidra de faire toutz lez chosez del celle office solonque le comaundement et lordinaunce du dit sergeant. Et prendra pur gagez ij d. le iour; j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. en deniers a deux seisons par an.

Le Sargeant Mareschall pur lez chiuaulx.[5]

Item vn sergeant mareschall, qi prendra garde qi lez chiualx Serieant
soient bien gardez, ferra marchaus et medicines, et receiuera deners mareshal
la garderobe[6] pur chosez medicinalx de soun office, solonque ceo the Stable
qil auera affaire, et mestrier serra. Et rendra accomptez au chief clerc de la marchaucie del issue dez ditz deners, et prendra le mette de fee de ferrure, issint qil troue la mette dez coustagez de la dit

1. B. qi. 2. Words in brackets omitted in B. 3. This word seems superfluous. 4. B. ob., clearly the better reading. 5. B. only. 6. B. et receuera denyers de la garderobe.

ferure. Et mangera en sale. Et quaunt il serra entour soun office par quoy il ne purra manger en sale par la tesmoignaunce du dit chief clerc de la marchaucie, prendra iiij d. | ob. le iour pur sa bouche en roulle de marchaucie, et liueree du fein et dauein chescun iour pur ij chiualx; gagez pur vn garcon j d. ob. le iour; ij robez par an en drap, ou xlvj s. viij d. en deniers; et, seigne ou maladez, j dare de pain, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de la cuissine, j messe de rost.

Item ij vallettz, purueours del auein, qi ferrount lez purueanz de feins, aueins, littere, et autres chosez qi sount necessariez pur lez despenses de chiualx a greignour profit le roi et a mendre greuance du poeple, et ceo per auisement de lour soueraigns. Et ferrount taillez as vendours auaunt qi lez chosez passent hors de lour possessione, et lez foillez dez taillez lyueront au chief clerc purueour del auein, qi lez examinera et suruera lez achatez. Et puis soient lez ditz foils, ensemblement ou toutz vitailx et purueancez, liuerez au chief clerc de la marchaucie, qi lez ferra despender et allower en roulle de soun office. Et ferront la liueree de fein pur lez chiualx herbergez hors du court. Et liueront lez parcelx dez liuereez de iour en autre au dit clerc de marchaucie sur lez abreuementz. Et prendra chescun de eux gagez le iour ij d., j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers; et iiij s. viij d. pour chauceure.

Item j valete porter de garner, qi portera lez sakez pleins au garner, quaunt lez purueauncez vendrount; et mesura lez aueins en le garner a lentre et lissue; et gardera lez sakez et lez mesurez a soun peril demesne. Et de ceo respondra au chief clerc de la marchaucie. Et gettera le fein par bracees a la liueree dez chiualx dedeins lostell. Et irra deuaunt a receyuer[1] lostell de liuere de mareschall herberiour. Et ferra herberiour[2] le gerner[3] chief de la marchaucie, le chief purueour, et lez autres de loffice. Et prendra ij d. le iour pur gagez; j robe par an en drape, ou j mars en deniers; iiij s. viij d. a deux soisouns del an. Et lez mesurez del officez daueins serrount accordantz a lestandard Dengleterre, issint qi lez aueins soient receux et liuerez par vn mesure de garner.

Item j vallett caruanere, qi sache machaucie[4] et ferrure, et gardera lez chiualx maladez et retreis[5] dez somers et charettz, tanque ils soient garniz et purrount trauailler solonque le chief clerc de marchaucie et dez sergeant marshall et ferrour. Et prendra ij d. pur gagez le iour; vn robe par an en drap, ou x s. en deniers; iiij s. viij d. pur chauceure a ij soisons del an.

1. Or reteiner. B. reads retener, or receuer. 2. B. herberger.
3. B. ganer. 4. B. marchaucie. 5. B. retrens.

Item soient xx charrettz pur lez officez, chescun a v chiualx, qi serrount a liuere de fein et daueins et littere, et serrount frettez dez ferrours auaunt nomez. Et pur lez ditz charettz soient xx charetters, et chescune de eux eit vn auaunt cheuachour. Lez queux charetters et auauntditz chiuachours chaceront lez cha | rettz, et receiueront charettz et toutz maners harneys, qi mestier serra pur lour officez, del sergeant herberiours del somers et charettz. Et chescun dez ditz charetters prendra pur sez gagez iij d. le iour; j robe par an en drap, ou xx s. en deniers; et pur soun auant cheuachour pur gagez j d. ob. le iour; vn robe par an en drap, ou demi marc en deniers; pur chauceure de soun auauntdit cheuachour iiij s. viij d. a ij seisouns. 20 Cartes eche of 5 horses. f. 61d.

Item xxxiiij somers, dez queux xvj pur la chambre le roi, et disoit[1] pur diuerse officez de lostell; a la garde de queux soient assignez xxxiiij someters, qi garderount lez ditz somers; et receyueront liuere de fein et daueins, et littere del office del aueinere. Et serrount fereitz de ferours auaunt nomez, et receiueront del sergeant herberiour soles, freins, cheuesters, et autres harneis qi mestier serra pur lez ditz somers.[2] Chescun de eux prendra pur gagez ij d. le iour, j robe par an en drap ou x s. en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. a ij seisons del an. 34 Somers

Item [j][3] en lestable le roy soientz tanqe de vallettz come il y auera del chiualx. Et [ceux chiualx][3] ceux vallettz garderount destres, palfreys, coursours, et autres chiualx le roi par lordinaunce de chief herberiour et gardein de palfreis. Et chescun deux prendra pur gagez ij d. le iour, j robe par an en drap, ou x s. en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. a ij seisons del an. Groomes the stable

Item en mesme le stable soit j hakeneyman qi gardera le hakene de house, et querra chescun iour a suruer la liuere dez aueins pur lez chiaulx de lestable, et carira lez housez dez chiualx qi trauaillerent en la companye le roi pur le dit hakeney. Et prendra pur gagez j d. le iour, j robe par an en drap ou demi marc en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Hakneym

Un Sargeant Mareschall pur lez graunts chiueoux.[4]

Item j sergeant sufficeant, mareschall gardein dez graunt chiualx, soiournantz hors du court, qi ferra achater et puruer fein et auein, littere et toutz autrez chosez qi serrount necessariez pur lez ditz chiualx, issint qi lez ditz purueancez et achatez soient faitz a greignour profit le roi, et a mendre greuaunce de peple; et qil Great ho

1. B. misunderstands text and omits "disoit" (dixhuit).
2. B. Et serront ferrez dez ferres auante nomez, et receueront del sargeaunt herbergour soles, freyns, cheuestres et autres harnoys qe mestier serra pur les ditz somers.
3. B. omits words in brackets. 4. B. only.

face gree par paiement ou par conuenable taille de toutz chosez issint purueux. Et ceo face par tesmoignaunce et surueu de vicontes de pays, ou il serrount soiournantz, issint qi la dit visconte par sa lettre purra tesmoigner et certefier le garderobe le roi de ceux purueanz, achatez et paiement fait par le dit sergeant gardein, issint qi fraude, malice, nautre greuance soient faitz a gentz de pays par la dit sergeant gardein, ne par autre qi soit en cele soiourne. Et prendra liuere de fein | et auein pur deux chiualx; j gars a gagez de j d. ob. le iour; ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers par an; j vallett de mestier, qi soit ferrour, pur seruir lez ditz cheualx de ferrour, et prendra ij d. pur gagez le iour, j robe par an en drap, ou x s. en deniers, et pur chauceur iiij s. viij d. a ij soisons del an. Et la dit sergeant auera tantz de vallettz pur garder lez ditz chiualx come il auera nombre dez chiualx en sa garde, et nient pluis. Et chescune dez ditz vallettz prendra ij d. le iour pur gagez, j robe par an en drap, ou x s. en deniers.

Un Sargeant Mareschall pur lez joenes chiualx.[1]

Item vn sergeant, qi soit sufficeant marescall gardein dez joenes chiualx, qi soient traiez hors de haras le roi, dez autres chiualx auxint, qi serrount liuerez a luy garder ascun foitz par comaundementz le roi; qi gardera lez ditz joenez chiualx bien et couenablement, tant qils soient de poer a trauailler, et qi le roi auera ordeigne sa voluntee. Et mesme celi gardein puruera et achatera fein, auein, littere, et autres chosez qi sount necessariez pur lez ditz chiualx, issint qi lez ditz purueancez et achatez soient faitz a greignour profit de roy et a mendre greuaunce de poeple; et qil face gree par paiement ou par taillez couenablez as vendours de toutz chosez issint purueux et achatez; et cest face par tesmoignaunce de viconte de pays ou ils serrount soiournantz, issint qi le viconte purra par sa lettre tesmoigner et certefier la garderobe le roi de tieux purueaunz, achatez et paiementz faitz par la dit sergeant, issint qe fraude, malice, nautre greuaunce soient faitz az gentz de pays par le dit sergeant gardein, ne par autre qi soit en tiel soiourne. Et prendra liueree de fein et auein pur chiualx, j garcon a gagez j d. ob. le iour, et ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers. Et auera tantz dez vallettz come il auera de chiualx, et nient pluis; et chescun de eux vallettz ij d. le iour pur gagez, j robe par an en drap ou x s. en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d.

Item Thomas de Borhount, qi tient de roy en chief j charue en Petit Weldone en counte de Norhtamptone[2] del heritage Margarete,

1. B. only.
2. B. North. Little Weldon is in Northamptonshire, so that the gloss to MS. A. is in error.

la file et heire Johanne Louelle, femme au dit Thomas, par certein seruice destre venour le roy dez dymers. Et auera en sa garde xxiiij chiens dymorez et vj leuerers dez chiens le roi. Et prendra pur sa puture de chescune chien j ob. le iour.[1] Et ij vallettz berners dount chescun prendra ij d. ob.[2] le iour pur gagez, et vn robe par an en drap, ou j marc en deniers, et chauceure; j veutrer a ij d. le iour a gagez, j robe par an en drap ou j marc en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. en deniers. Lez queux chiens le dit Thomas doit sustener a sez coustagez demene xl iours | en quaresme, xv f. 62d. chiens deymers et lun berner, et le remenaunt de lan. Et le dit Thomas prendra en court vij d. ob. le iour pur gagez, et hors de court en bosoignez le roi xij d. pur gagez et despenses, ij robez par an en drap, ou xl s. en deniers. Et seigne ou maladez, preigne pur liuereez j dare de payn, j galoun de seruoise, j messe de grose de la cuissine, j messe de rost.

Item j sterhont, qi auera en sa garde xij chiens corantz pur loutre, et ij leuerers dez chiens le roi; et ij gars pur la garde dez ditz chiens. Et prendra pur sez gages demene ij d. le iour; et sil ne manguisse[3] en sale oue lez vallettz de mestrier, pur chescune gars j d. ob. le iour, et pur chescune chein j d. ob.; et pur luy mesmez j robe par an en drap, ou j mars en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d.

Item j firetour qi auera ij firettz, et[4] j garcon en leide de luy pur prendra coyns[5] quaunt il serra chargez par seneschall ou tresorer. Et prendra pur sez gagez demene ij d. le iour, et pur soun garcon j d. ob., et pur la porture dez firrettz j d., et vn robe par an en drap, ou j marc en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. Fyrreter.

Item j perdrigour, qauera en sa garde ij cheins cochours pur perdriz, deux faucouns. Et prendra pur la puteur de chescun dez ditz cheins ob. et pur ij faucouns ob.; pur sez gagez demene ij d., et pur vn garceon j d. ob. le iour, vn robe par an en drap, ou j marc en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d. par an. Partriger.

Item j oisellour qi prendra ij d. pur gagez le iour, sil ne manguisse en sale entre valettz de mestrier, j robe par an, ou vn marc en deniers, et pur chauceur iiij s. viij d. par an. Fowler.

Item vn peschour qi prendra ij d. pur gagez le iour, sil ne manguisse en sale entre vallettz de mestrier, j robe par an, ou j marc en deniers, et pur chauceur iiij s. viij d. par an. Fisher.

Item ij trompers soient, et ij autres ministralx soient, al fois pluis, al foitz meins, qi ferrount lour minstraucie deuaunt le roi a toutz lez foitz qi luy plerra. Et mangerount en chambre ou en la Trompeter with musiciens.

1. B. jd. ob. le iour. 2. B. jd. ob. le iour. 3. B. mange. 4. B. only. 5. couyens.

sale solonqe qils serrount comaundez. Et serrount a gagez et a robez, chescun solonqe soun estate al discrecoun seneschall et tresorer.

53. essengers. Item xij messagers qi mangeront en sale, et ne aillont nulle part hors del hostell, sils nessoient en messagez, et eient conge de seneschall et de tresorer; et sils le facent, soient oustrez hors de lostell. Et quaunt ils serrount enuoiez en messagez, serrount lour iournez limitez en certein. Et prendrount pur gagez iij d. le iour; et pur lez temps sils ne remaignent au iour assignez, et ne se purrount escuser par resonable enchesoun, eient la pein deuaunt. Et chescune de eux prendra par an j robe dune seute, ou j mars en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d.

Yeoman Garde. Item xxiiij archers a pee, garde corps le roi, qirrount deuaunt le roi en cheminant par pays, dount chescune prendra pur gagez iij d. le iour, j robe par an en drap dune seute [a par eux],[1] ou x s. en deniers, et pur chauceure iiij s. viij d.

chappeler. Item j chapellere, qi ferra lez chapeux pur lez [chapeux et][1] esquier le lostell. Et mangera en sale a par lui[2] de sa propre nape; et portera hors de la sale le relief de la viande dount il serra seruiz saunz autres chosez du roy.

ief Butler Item ordeignez est et expressement comandez qi la chief botiller nostre seignour le roy face desore en auaunt si bien si couenablement le purueance et lez achatez de vins pur la sustenaunce de soun hostell, qil et lez bouns gentz, qi sount pres de luy, puissent estre si honourablement serui de celle office come affiert, qi soun hostell soit couenablement serui de mesme cel office pur lonour le seignour meintenir; issint qi ceux del ostell ne nulle autre puissent auer encheson desclaunder le dit hostell al deshonour le seignour par le defaut de dit botiller, ceo qi lez purueancez et lez achatez soient fait a mender damage et destourbance dez marchantz, qi la dit botiller sauera amender ou purra, ensi toutz foitz qi nostre seignour le roi eit sez ancienz pris, et toutz autres auauntage qi de droit doit auer par la reasoun de sa seignourie; et apres ceo qi le botiller auera sez vins en celle maner achatez et fait gree as marchauntz, face tantost mesmez cez vins de pris achate carier et herberger par ou il serra assignez de par le seneschall et tresorer de lostell, et illeosqes face deliuerer lez ditz vins par bone endenture a sergeaunt botiller de lostell en lostell ou lez eschancelons de tonez souz les eux dez marchauntz vendours, fesante mencion dez pecez du vins et du price et de nouns dez marchauntz dez queux ils serrount achatez ensemblement ou toutz autrez costagez; et mesme qil auera fait entre[3] le cariage de eux, ou en auter resonable maner aprez

1. Words in brackets omitted in B. 2. B. apres lui. 3. B. ouster.

le primer achate iusqes a cel heure qils soient ensi liuerez en lostell. Et soit mesme lendenture fait en trois partiez, | dount lune partie f. 63d. demurrat deuers le dit botiller purueour, lautre partie deuers le botiller sergeant en lostell, e la tierce partie deuers le clerc de la botellerie, par la quelle endenture le dit clerc accountra oue le chief botiller purueour de pris et de costagez, et ou le butiller de lostell del issue dez ditz vins. Et puis, quaunt lez ditz vins serrount couchez et reposez, soient vieux et assogez[1] par le countreroller vsshēr, ou mareschall cheualer de la sale, et clerc de la botillerie, si soient bouns et couenablez come estre deuient, solonqe le price contenuz en la dit endenture. Et sils soient trouez et acceptez pur bouns et couenablez, adonqes soient toutz lez foreins costagez, compris en la dit endenture, proportionez par ou lez parcelx, solonqe le nombre de toneux, dez queux costagez soient alloez en la rolle de la butillerie, solonqe la quantite de vin qi serra liuere et despenduz a la iournee. Et si lez ditz vins nessoient trouez si couenablez come estre dussent, solonque le price qils soient achatez, tantost soit la defaut monstrez a seneschall et tresorer, qils metteront tiel amendement qi le roi nessoit perdant en lostell male seruiz.[2] Et si par auenture lez ditz vins, ou partie de eux, nessoient despenduz auaunt qi le roy se depart de lieu ou ils serrount herbergez, adonqes soient rebaillez au chief purueour pur carier ou garder, solonqe ceo qil en auera eu comaundement de seneschall et tresorer. Et lez despensez qil mentra[3] de nouelle entour lez ditz vins, issint rouuz,[4] li serrount de nouel allowez, si tost come ils serrount autres foitz resceiu al oeps le roy. Auxint lautre purueour soit chargez qil face venir en lostell pur la buche le roi, si auaunt come il poet, toutz lez vinz qi achatera au le roi dez anciens price. Et si ceo ne puis faire bonement au profit du roi pur la lonte de lieu, adonqes lez face mettre a vent[5] issint qil respoigne au roi sur soun accompte de pluis haut price qi la vente dez vins qil auera purueu dachate.

[6]Item ordeigne est par nostre seignour le roi et soun counseill, pur lesement de soun peple, qi la mesne de soun hostell, qi ne purra estre herbergez dedeinz lostell en la ville ou le roy, serra herbergez par lez herberiours deinz le verge, solonqe soun estate, cestassauoir chiualer ou iiij chiualx, clerc, sergeant, esquier, chescun solonqe lez agagez qil prendra de roy, cestassauoir a iiij d. ob. j chiuall, a vij d. ob. ij chiualx, a xij d. iij chiualx, a xv d. iiij chiualx, auxibien en soiourne come en trauelle, issint qi le pays entour le roy ne soit encherri par tiel surkarke saunz reasoun. Et qi lez officers dostell Herberging, or Lodgyng.

1. B. veus et assaies. 2. B. qe le roy ne soit perdant et lostell male seruye. 3. B. mettra. 4. or romiz. B. aynsi remuez.
5. B. toutz les vyns qil achetera au roy pur la lonte de lieu, adonqes lez face mettre a vente. 6. This paragraph is repeated on p. 310.

soient herbergez a pluis apres la court[1] qils purrount estre prestez a ffaire lour office toutz lez foitz qi bosoigne serra; toutz lez autrez de la dit mesnee a pluis pres qi la pays purra bonement suffrer. Et soit la liuere fait a chescun en tiel manere qi le f. 64. | seignour del hostel eit pur luy, sa meigne et sez biens sufficeant esement de meisouns.[2] Et defendu est qi null de la meisne le roy, apres qil soit herbergez, preigne deinz soun hostell vitailx pur luy, ou sez chiualx, encountre la volunte de seignour de lostell, tant come il lez puisse trouer a vender par aillours. Et si ce ne puisse, adonqes lez preigne dedeinz soun hostell en la pluis curtesie et pluis plesante manere qil purra;[3] issint qil paie lez deniers al value dez darrez.[4] Et qi chescun de la dit mesnee puisse, saunz empechement dautre, achat[5] lez vitailx qi luy couent par la ou ils serrount a vendre, auxibien en autre liueree come la sue propre. Et defendu est qi null dostell le roi, nautre, destourbe lez bons gentz deinz lour liueree a doner ou vendre lour biens par la ou plerra, ou carier en marche pur faire en lour profit a lour volunte, issint soit franche dordener et faire de sez biens demene ceo qi luy plerra; qar la voluntee le roy nest mye de abaundener autres biens a distresse de sa mesne par colour de lour herbergage. Et pur ceo qi nostre seignour le roy doit estre serui partout [ou][6] il vendra,[7] come appent a sa seigneurie, ordene et comaundez est qi null soit si hardie a destourber sez ministrez a ffaire sa purueance et sez achatez pur sez deniers la ou ils lez purrount melour faire au profit et honour de luy, et ceo auxi bien de toutz lez liuereez assignez az autres come aillours saunz null destourbancez. Et voet le roy qe lofficers lui facent en si couenable manere come appent pur soun honour sauir.[8]

The Accompt. Item ordeigne est qi le seneschall et le tresorer eient en garderobe chescun iour la counte de lostell[9] soiorne. Et sils passent la tierce iour dacounte, qils aquitent lez costagez de lostell en tel iour. Et si le roy trauaille, et home ne poet acounter pur le trauaille, qi a proschein soiourne soit la counte si dez arreragez. Et si ensi ne soit fait, qils acquitent la moite de lez despensez dune iournee.

Item ordeigne est qi toutz lez sergeantz doffice qi sount de la countee, auxi bien ceux deuers la chambre come ceux deuers la sale, veignent chescun iour a la compte fait en garderobe de lostell, a respondre dez parcelx de lour office, et sils ne purrount excuser par boun et resonable enchesoun. Issint qi lez liuerez de pain,

1. B. a plus pres de la court.
2. B. sufficeant esement dedeinz ses meysons.
3. B. en la plus curtoise et plus pleysante manere qil purra. Compare p. 310.
4. B. danrez. 5. B. achater. 6. Word in brackets supplied from B.
7. viendra. 8. B. sauuer. 9. The last two words repeated in A.

de vin et dez autres mestiers, qi apparteignent a la counte, soit chescun iour, quaunt homme purra, oiez et amendez, solonqe ceo qi reasoun serra, par la discrecion du seneschall et tresorer. Et toutz lez officez facent ceo qi appartient a lour office, si come pluis pleinement, sount a la primer foitz garnu[1] en bele maners par le seneschall et tresorer, qil samende; et si autre foiz soit troue | ou[2] f. 64d. mesme la defaute, et soit a gagez, perde dez gagez dun moys; et al tierce foitz perde sez gagez; et soit adeprimez garoun[3] en bele manere, et a la seconde foitz perde sa chauceure, et a la tierce foitz perde sa robe, et a la quart foitz perde lostell le roy saunz reuenu.[4]

Le rechief[5] ordeignez est qi lostell ne soit ostendit[6] a null chiualer mez cestuy neit esquier,[7] si soun estate nel demande; et qil ne demurge outre iij iours, sil ne soit par commaundement du roy. For suche as be not of the household.

Derrechief ordinez est qi lez ordinementz, qi furent faitz a Wodestoke de lostiel le roi, se teignent en le manere qils furont ordinez: cestassauoir qi mareschalx ne vssher de la sale suffrent qi null homme qi soit de la mesnee le roi, qi ne doit manger en la sale, solonqe lordeinement qi est deuisez, ne manguisse, ne rien ne preigne hors de lostell, fors ceux as robez le roi. Et de ceux null preigne gagez pur manger ou la liuerez, sauuie[8] toutz foitz quaunt lez estraungez serrount receiuez et honourez solonqe ceo qi deiuent estre. Et sil aueigne qi null del hostell, qi ne deiue manger en sale, y manguisse, saunz conge de ceux qil le purrount doner, eit la peyne desuis ordeinez, et lussher qi ne[9] soeffre entrer auxint. Enterteignement of strangers.

Dautre part ordeigne est qi null demurge en nul dez office, come de panterie, butillerie, cuissine, esquillerie, salserie, et naperie et herbegerie, larderie, pullerie, marchaucie, aueinerie, chaundelerie,[10] ne en nul autre office de lostell, fors ceux qi ount certein office, et prenant lez robez de roi et de la royne. Et null tiel soit trouez, qil soit mayntenaunt pris et myz en prisone, iusque qil soit deliuere par le seneschall et tresorer en pleint[11] acounte. Et celi qi eit eu loffice a garde,[12] et lui eit ensuit soeffert, eit la pein auauntdit. Et si lussher soit trouez en mesme coupe,[13] de mesme la coupe eit la peine auauntdit. None but officers to abyde in any place of office

Derrechief ordeigne est qi lez garsouns qi sount doffice, et qi prenent robez, et qi deiuent manger en sale, si come de panterie, butillerie, cuissine, et dez autres officez et de lostell, et garsouns, Gallez, archers, messagers, ou autres, qi nul nemport laumoisei[14] Boys and chyldren.

1. B. garniz. 2. B. en. 3. B. garny. 4. B. reuenir. 5. B. Item derechief. 6. B. estendit. 7. B. mes sil neit escuyer. 8. B. saue. 9. B. le. 10. The spellings adopted for these offices have been based on a comparison of A. and B. 11. B. pleyn. 12. B. eit loffice en garde. 13. B. en la mesme coulpe, de mesme la coulpe eit le payne. 14. B. qe null nen porte laumoisne.

The Alms.

le roi. Et si null le face, qi le principal aumonier le monstre al countee deuaunt seneschall et tresorer, si come il est auauntdit; et qils ne deiuent lour volunteez[1] de la pein auauntdit.

No horses for gromes yeomen or pages.

Derrechief ordeigne est qi null vallett de mestrier eit desormez chiualx en la court, sil ne preigne certein gagez pur lui et pur soun chiualx de roy. Et si nul soit trouez qi eit chiualx, qi le chiualx soit priz de luy et liuerez al aumosne; et qi laumosner lui done pur Dieu. Et cest ordeinement soit gardez a tant de foitz come le chiualx purra estre trouez ou lui.

f. 65.

Eating in the Halle.

Derrechief ordeinez est qi null sergeant, vallet, ne autre del hostell, manguisse en autre lieu qi en sale, sil ne soit seignez par conge le seneschall et tresorer, ou dautres qi teignont lour lieu, ou qil soit maladez, par quoy il deiue auer sa liuere hors de lostell. Et comaunde est ensement qi null estraunge ne manguisse[2] en null de officez ne lieux soit reccettez par ceux del office ne par autres del hostell. Et si nul ne face qi soit del hostell, eit peine auaunt dit; et le paneter, botiller, et le keu, ou lez autres qi le seruent, eyent mesme le peyne qi est auaunt au comaundement ordeignez.

Groomes with pages.

Derrechief ordeignez [est][3] qi null vallett eit page, fors ceux de la cuissine, et qi ceux deux et deux j page, et nient pluis. Et si nul autrement le face eit mesme la peine, et mesme cestuy qi le fait et celluy qi le soeffre a qi la garde appent.

No gyving away without leave.

Derrechief ordeignez est qi null vallett de mestrier de la cuissine, ne dautre office de lostell, rien ne doinent[4] ne facent lour curtesiez saunz cunge de ceux qi [ount][5] la poair. Et qi null le face eit la pein auauntdit et cestuy auxi [a][5] qi la garde appent.

Carying of meate.

Derrechief ordeigne est qi null esquier nautre ne ceo entremetent de porter cea ne la en lostell pain, vin, ne viande, puis qil est myz a la table, fors par droit seruice horz priz a qi le seruice appent par reasoun de lour officez. Et si nul ne face et soit do[6] lostell eit la peine tiel come est susdit.

Liverye.

Derrechief ordeignez [est][7] qi null chiualer de lostell preigne liuerez, sil ne soit doffice forsque de lostell soulement.

Dogs.

Item ordeignez est qi le seneschall le roi et la royne examinent chescune semayn a meins vn foitz come dez chiens de roi et de la royne deiuent prendre liuere, [et][7] sur ceo facent comaundement a clerc de la panterie [qi][7] respoigne a la compte.

Sick persons to have Livery.

Item ordeignez est qi a lez esquiers maladez, qi soit az gagez, [et][7] a lez vallettz de mestrier maladez, soit donez liuereez solonqe lour estate par lordinaunce du seneschall et du tresorer.

1. B. et quil ne dient leurs voluntez.
2. B. mange.
3. Word in brackets supplied from B.
4. B. donent.
5. Word in brackets supplied from B.
6. B. de.
7. Word in brackets from B.

Ordeignez est qi lez gentz seignours, qi ount lour chambre de liueree deinz | le close ou le gist, pregnent vin et chaundell et liueree pur lour chamberlayn solonqe lordinaunce du seneschall et tresorer. Lyveries to Chambers f. 65 d.

Le seneschall madame la royne et soun tresorer soient toutz foitz a la compte pur faire examiner lez messes, et lez gentz de mestrier qi sount deuers madame et sa mesnee, et de faire amendre lez outragez; et toutz lez sergeantz soient a la compte pur respoigner de lour faitz. The Quene.

Item ordeignez est qi le roy soit serui de iiij bouns cours saunz pluis pur lui et pur lez autrez seignours qi mangent a la sale, et a madame auxint; et qi eillours en soun hostell toutz bouns gentz soient seruiz de iij cours, et lez garsons de deux. Foure courses of meate.

Ordeignez est qi toutz lez palfreours et toutz lez sometters de lostell le roy, queux ils soient, preigne ij d. le iour. Lez nompuissantz de lostell le roy, qi ne purrount mez trauailler, come de vallettz de mestrier, charetters, sometters, messagers, et toutz autres, soient enuoiez a diuers hospiteux et abbeys qi teignent du roy, qi ne sount mye chargez, et qi eient leinez[1] lour viure solonqe lour estate. Palfreyours.

Nulle liuere soit fait, quite ne crue, en nul part de lostell deuers le roy ne la royne, sinoun a lez graunt panterie, butillerie, cuissine, larderie de la grant hostell deuers la mesnee leez[2] liuereez de lostell deiuent estre ceux. Livery.

Est ordeignez qi toutz lez presentz, qi a nostre seignour le roi en auaunt serrount enuoiez, qi entierment saunz delay et auisement soient liuerees as sergeauntz dez officez de soun hostell, solonqe ceo qi lez presentz sount diuers; issint qi hors de lour garde eient ceux lour fee, qi auoir le deiuent, apres qil aueront dereigne deuaunt seneschall et tresorer et lez sergeant de la compte queu chose il deiuent auoir de fee de tieu manere de present. Et qi nul si face countre cest ordeinement, et tieu manere de fee preigne tout foiz le fez deregne, auxi come est auauntdit, si ne soit hors de la garde dez sergeantz dez officez de lostell. Qi qil soit, qi tieu chose fait, qil aquite tantost la value de tout la present qi au roi a cele heure serra demande. Et qi la tresorer de garderobe, tantost come il seuera[3] de tieux chosez soient prisez autrement qi hors la garde dez sergeantz de officez, soit chiualer, clerc, sergeant, ou vallett, qi preigne fee ou gagez ou robez de roi, qil tantost tant de value qi tout la present amontera, qi a cele hure serra au roi presentz, saunz autre reigement ou triement attender, face | mettre sur celi qi tieu chose auera prise. Et cel value recure ou de fee ou de gagez ou de robez solonqe ceo qil verra qi milx[4] et pluis tost et purra approcher a celle value alouer. Guiftes or presents. f. 66.

1. B. leynz. 2. B. lez. 3. B. sauera. 4. B. myeux.

Harbenging or lodgyng of the officers, etc.

Ordeignez est par notre seignour le roi et soun counsell, pur lesement de soun peple, qi la mesnee de soun hostell, qi ne purra estre herbege deinz soun hostiell et la vile ou le roi serra herbege, soient herbergez par lez herberiours deinz la verge, chescun solonqe soun estate, cestassauoir chiualer ou iiij chiualx, clerc, esquier, sergeant, chescun solonqe lez gagez qil prendra du roi, cestassauoir a iiij d. ob. vn chiuall, a vij d. ob. ij chiualx, a xij d. iij chiualx, a xv d. iiij chiualx, auxibien en soiourn come en trauelle, issint qi le pays entour le roy [ne] soit encherry par tiel sourcark saunz reisoun. Et lez officers del hostell soient herbergez a pluis pres la court, come ils purrount estre prestez a ffaire lour officez toutz foitz qi boisoigne serra. Et toutz lez autres de la dit mesnee a pluis pres qi la pays purra bonement soeffrer. Et soit [a][1] liueree fait a chescun en tieu manere qi le seignour de lostell eit pur luy et pur sa mesnee et sez biens sufficeantz esement de mesouns.[2] Et defendu est qi null de mesnee le roi, apres qil soit herbege, preigne deinz soun hostell vitailx, pur luy et pur sez chiualx, encountre la voluntee de seignour de lostell, tant come il puisse le trouer a vendre par aillours. Et si ce ne puisse, adonqes lez preigne deinz soun hostel en la pluis courtousie et pluis plesante manere[3] qil purra; issint qil paie lez deniers al value de darrez.[4] Et qi chescun de la dit mesnee puis, saunz empechement dautre achate, achater lez vitailx, qi lui couent, par la ou ils serrount a vendre, auxibien autri come en sa sue propre. Et est defenduz qi null de lostell le roi, ne autre, destourbe lez bouns gentz deinz lour liueree a doner ou vendre lour biens par la ou il purra, ou carier a marche pur faire en lour profit a lour voluntee, issint qi chescun soit franche de ordiner et faire de sez biens demeigne ceo qi luy plerra; gar la voluntee le roi neste mye de aboundoner autribiens a la distresse de sa mesnee par colour de lour herbegage. Et pur ceo qi nostre seignour le roy doit estre serui par tout ou [il][5] viendra, come apent a sa seignourie, ordeigne et comaunde est qi null soit si hardi a destourber lez ministres a ffaire sa purueance, et sez achatez, pur sez deniers, la ou il lez purrount meltz[6] faire a honour et profit de luy, et ceo auxibien deinz toutz liuerez assignez as autrez, come aillours, saunz nul autre destourbance. Et voet le roi qi mesmez lez officers lez facent en si couenable manere, come apent a soun honour sauoier.[7] Et ordeigne et comaunde est par nostre seignour le roi qi nul auantalour soit en lostell de notre dit seignour le roy en la fourme souscrit. Et ceux qi serrount auaunt | alours, par queux il voillent respoundre a lour nouns, soient deliuerez as

f. 66d.

1. Word in brackets omitted in B. 2. B. en sa meison.
3. B. en la pluis curtoise et pluis pleisant manere. 4. B. danrees.
5. Word in brackets supplied from B. 6. B. myeutx. 7. B. sauver.

mareschalx. Et si nul auter soit troue mayntenaunt, soit pris en prisone, et noun pas deliuerez saunz especial comaundement le roy. Et qi nul soit auauntalour qi eit fors vire la court.[1]

Pur la garderobe et pur toutz lez clercs dicele, vn herbeiour nomez.
Et pur la priuee seale et toutz lez clercs, - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur ceux qi trenchent deuaunt le roy, - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le butiller de la bouche le roi et celi qi siert del hanaper, - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur lez ij meistrez paneter et lez vallettz de mestier desouz eux, - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur lez chapeleins et lez clercs de la chapelle, vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur chiualers dez officers, chescun soun herbeiour, - - - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur le countrerollour, - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le coeffre, - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur toutz lez chiualers qi gisent ensemble, - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur toutz lez enfantz de garde, - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur lez vsshers de la chambre, - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le fruter, et naper, ewarer, et lour vallettz de mestrier, - - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur lez esquiers qi sount entendantz deuers le roi, - - - - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur autres esquiers qi sount entendantz, - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le chief butiller et soun compaignoun et lour vallettz, - - - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur le clerc de la panetrie, butterie et ceux desouz lui, - - - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur le clerc de la cuissine et lachatours, - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le chaundeler et sez vallettz de mestrier, vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le aueinere et toutz ceux desouz lui, - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le meistre esquiller et j compaignoun, - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le aumosner et toutz ceux desouz lui, - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le sauserie et toutz ceux desouz lui de loffice, - - - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

1. B. quy eit forsqe vire la court.

Pur le pullerie, le herberger et lours vallettz, vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur deux ficisiens, - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le confessour de roy, - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le sirigien le roy, - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur toutz lez ministraux, - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur toutz lez vallettz de la chambre, - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur toutz les mareschaulx de la sale, lez vsshers, et lour vallettz, - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le portour et lez vallettz, - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur lez fauconers, - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur lez ij vaytez et wafrer, - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur lez venours, veutrez, et lez chiens toutz[1] et leuerers, - - - - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

67. Pur lez palfreis et coursours, - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur lez somtiers et charettz - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur Adam Bowyer, John Haberiour, Robert Gynour, Huge Dungeye,[2] - - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Pur le clerc seneschall et coroner - - - vn herbeiour nomez.
Pur le pistour et lour vallettz, - - - vn herbeiour nomez.

Bribours { William Plane / Amice[3] Maure } lauendrers { Cristiane Scot pur la garderobe. / dame Gonnore pur la chambre. }

la femme Simon le Gawer pur la naperie. }
Annote la Walisshe pur la commune de lostell. }

ıight mar-
ıl to arrest
lowers of
ᵉ Court,
ıt bee not
ɔwable.

Et fait a remembrer qi nostre seignour le roi ad comaunde a sez mareschaux qil serchount de semeyne en autre si nul estraunge soit troue, suynt[4] la court, qi soit hors de auowerie, qi maintenaunt soit priz et puniz, solonqe ceo qi est ordeignez auaunt sez hures. Et nostre seignour voet qi la place de la marche de soun hostell ne soit charge dez autrez ministrez qi ne deyuent estre de droit: cestassauoir dune coronner et soun clerc de par le roy, et vn chiualer et vn clerc, vn sergeant, vn vallett de mestrier, pur garder la prisoun par le count mareschall. Et lez auauntditz ministres ne pensent pur faire lez comaundementz le roy et lez execuciouns dez billez de la dite place. Nostre seignour le roi voet qi lez viscountez et baillifs iureez de pays, ou le roi vendra, soient chargez en eide de sez marchalls de seruir lez billez de la place, et faire lez

e countrie
ayde the
rshals.

1. B. et toutz lez chiens, et lyuerers. 2. B. Dungere.
3. Both A. and B. read Amite or Annte. 4. suyent.

comandementz le roy, solonqe ceo qils furont chargez, par la ou notre seignour le roy vendra.

Pur ceo qi hidous pleintez et criez sount venuz a la cour de iour en autre, et dez grauntz affraiez et malueisteez, faitz en pays par tout ou le roi sen est ale, par gentz suyant la court, saunz estre avowe, et par ascun[1] femes de fole vie, come dez omicidez, roberiez, brusours[2] de mesouns, et torcenoisez[3] faitz par eux, le iour de seint Nicholas, lan du reigne nostre seignour le roy Edward xij^me^, en citee Deuerwyk, pur la commune profit de pays et pur la court voider de tout manere de tielx gentz, [et][4] comande est de par le roy qi toutz lez suytours couenablement voidassent la court, forspris ceux qi sount en rolle de corouner en la mareschalcie entrez, et receux par boun maynprise. Et si null auter soit troue, dedeinz la court ou dehors, null part dedeinz la verge, suyant le court, apres ceo qi le roi soit remoue hors de la dit citee, qil soit priz et mene a la prisoun et nom pas deliuere saunz le seneschall. Et qi null homme suwist la court, saunz ceo qil ne eust seignour ou maistre, | qi auower lui poet. Et qi null de la mesnee le roy, de quele condicioun qil soit, tenust sa femme a la court, ne nulle part dehors suyant la court, chiualer ou clerc, sergeant, esquier, charetter ou somere, garceouns ou page, ne null suide, fore tels femmez qi sount en chief ou le roi, ou ceux qi sount entitellez en le rolle de corouner en la mareschaucie as certeins officez saue. Et si null autre y sount troue, aprez la crie faire de ceux ordinancez, qi ceux, qi le tenissent, vodassant[5] hostell le roy, sil ne puissent quere grace du roy. Et qi null de la court ne menast ouesque luy nulle femme de fole vie. Et si nulle tiel soit troue, qi celluy, par qi ele se auouwast, fuist priz, et lun et lautre mytz en boun prisoun, et noun pas deliueree saunz [le][7] seneschall. Et ensement ordeigne est, et certein payne sur touz ceux qi soient trouez contre ceux ordenement. En droit dez hommez qi serrount trouez apres la crye fait, primez fortiurent hostell,[8] et autre foitz soient priz et mytz en bouns ferrez, et la demoerent par xl iours, [et][9] soient lour corps a la volunte le roi. En droit dez femmez de folie vie suyantz la court, qi primerment forsiuerent la court, et autres foitz sils soient trouez, soient merche ou front dunse sechange;[10] et la tierce foitz soient mytz en prisone par xl iours, come auaunt est dit. Et de toutz pointz auauntditz soit la crie fate en hostell nostre seignour le roy, al comencement pur iij iours, issi qi ceux toutz qi suyent

Followers of the court without masters, etc

f. 67d.

Single women.

1. B. ascuns. 2. B. brisours. 3. B. extorcions.
4. Et in both A. and B., but unnecessary for the sense.
5. B. voidassent. 6. B. aver. 7. Word in brackets supplied from B.
8. B. fortiurement lostell. 9. Word in brackets supplied from B.
10. B. marche ou front dun serge chaut.

roclamation

le hostell puissent couenablement est gaiens, et puit chescun dymenge en lan aprez.[1]

Ensement pur ceo qi ascuns pleintz sount monstrez al seneschall auaunt dit de la grant charge dez gentz, qi suyent la place de la marche, ou le roi sen vaa, autres et pluis qi ne solent ou deyuent

larket with unte.

estre de droit, sur quoy le dit counsell ad ordeigne qi launcien custume, qi fuist vsee en temps le roy qi mort est, et en le temps lez countes mareschaulx, qi furent, ensoient desormez pleynement tenuz et vsee;—cestassauoir par le countee soient en la dit place vn chiualer, lieutenaunt le dit countee, et vn clerc auxi, qi serra desouz luy, vn autre pur escriuer sez rollez. Et auxi vn sergeant par la dit countee a ffaire lez attachmentz, et herberger, qi auera vn homme a pee desouz luy a ffaire execucione de billes. Et auxint par le dit countee vn vallet prisoner.[2]

B. The Household Ordinance of York, June, 1323.

ccompte.

Lordenaunce de lestate de la garderobe et del acounte de lostell, fait et assentuz, en la presence nostre seignour le roy, par lez honourablez peres William de Melton, ercheuesque Deuerwik, Wauter de Stapiltone, euesque Dexeter, tresorer, Wauter de

68.

Norwici, Roger de Bellers, et autres barouns | del eschequer, et autres de counsell le roy, a Euerwyk en le moys de Juyn, lan de reigne le roy Edward, fitz le roy Edward, xvj^me^.

ccomptes verally of ndry icers.

Pur ceo qi lez acountez de garderobe se delaient trop par diuers enchesouns, ordeigne est qi nul denier ne soit paie, nassigne, desore a purueance faire pur lostell le roy, ou pur autres chosez dount la gardein de la garderobe doit accounter, si ceo ne soit par sa mayn, ou par sez lettrez a ceo faire, ordine est qil eit toutz iours deniers suffisiamment en garderobe.

Item de la conte de despensez de lostell soit ay[3] chescune iour en soiorne, ou chescun autre iour, si le seneschall et tresorer ne soient occupiez oue autres grossez bosoignez. Et voet le statuit de lostell qil, sil passent iij iours saunz acounter en soiourne, qi lez ditz seneschall et tresorer paient lez dispensez dune iourne de lour bourse, et semblable penaunce facent eux a mendrez officers, sil ne soient prestez chescun iour daccountrer.

Item le graunt butiller face veuwe de tout soun office en garderobe lendemayn de la seint Hillar, et vn autre veuwe en le seint John, ou final acounte a la seint Martyn, sur la payne desouth escript.

1. B. aynsi qe ceux, et toutz qui suyent lostel, puissent estre garniz, saunz enchesoun dymenge en lan apres.
2. B. Pur le prison. 3. B. ey.

Item qi le clerc purueour de la graunde garderobe face vn vewe a la seint Andre de soun office, et vn autre veue a la Trinite, et final acounte a seint Michel suyant, sur payn desouz dit.

Item qi toutz lez autres ministres foreins, qi deuyent acountir en garderobe, facent especial vewe dacounte, chescun quartier ou demye an, solonqe la discrecione de gardein de la garderobe; issint qi lez acountez de la garderobe de tele quartier puissent finalment estre ordinez en la quarter suyant, et qi par tant lez acountez de la garderobe puissant finalment estre renduz a lescheqer apres lan lendemayn de la chaundelure en temps de peas, et issint auaunt de an en an, saunz pluis delay ou excusacioun.

Item toutz lez ministrez qi deiuent acounter en garderobe, quaunt ils soient garniz par le gardin de la garderobe solonqe lez ditz sermez,[1] ne voignent mye de veuwe faire ou dacounter ou quauntqe a lour acount apent, soient adonqes oustez de seruice le roy pur toutz iours et greuement punitz, et lez nouns de tiels et lour targe liuerez as tresorer |, et barons del eschequer a prendre lour biens et f. 68d. chateux et corps, et suyer vers eux pur le roi, come deuers ceux qi duement [nont][2] acompte solonqe la ley et la custume del eschequer.

Item qi lez clercz del officez acountent de lour somez par mois ou par quarter, solonqe la discrecion du dit gardein de garderobe, sur la peyne auauntdit.

Item qi celluy, qi acounte en garderobe et demoert en arreragez, soit liueree a la mareschaucie, et illeoqes deteni[3] iesqes atant qil eit fait gree de sez arreragez.

Item pur ceo qi lacounte de la passe est molt diffius, et demande graunt delay qil soit bien araie pur lez purueancez dez vitailx et paiementz dez gagez pur la temps de guerre, et molt dautres resoun chargeantz, ordine est qi le coffrer, qi ad fait lez issuez et lez paymentz, preigne eide a lui, si mester soit, et soit tout attendant de arraier tel acounte; et comande soit par le roy de ceo faire peniblementz et hastement, et qi vn autre soit myz en soun lieu coffrer al commaundement[4] del an xvij pur le meane temps, qi pluis chastier lez acomptz del appasse, qar par auenture il ne poet faire lun et lautre, si ceo ne fuist par trope grant delay. Et oiez primez par luy lez acomptz del hostell en mesme lostell, apres la seint Michel, sil semble au tresorer de la garderobe, demoerge a Loundrez pur oier lez foreins accomptz, issi qil puis certefier lescheqer de ceux qi ne veignount pur faire lez venir al count deuaunt luy. Et celluy coffrer qi serra issi ordine de nouell pur le meane temps, teigne le cours auaunt ordine pur lez dispensez de la garderobe.

1. B. termes. 2. Word in brackets supplied by B.
3. B. detenue. 4. The reading of both A. and B.

Item quaunt al hostell mesme soit ordeigne mesne couenable, et lez nouns liuerez en certein au dit gardein et le clerc de le marchaucie.

Item qi lez ministrez de lostell soient couenablez et suffissantz, et raskell soit remue de chescune office.

Item qi lez paymentz pur lez chosez purueux pur lostell pur lez iourneez communez, sauuez lez grossez purueancez et la pullerie, soient faitz en garderobe en la presence dez clercz dez officez, qar donqes purra le tresorer de garderobe melour veer et examiner lez achatez au profit de notre seignour le roy.

|Item quaunt a graunde purueance faire en feirs de grossez dez beastez countre parlement ou graunde fest, soient lez beastez vieux, quaunt ils serrount venuz en court, par seneschall et tresorer del hostell, sils puissent entendre, ou par le countroullour, le chief vssher de la sale, chiualer, et le clerc de la cuissine, et as queux appent proprement a veer tieux achatez. Et sils veient lez achatez couenablez, adonqes, quaunt ils verrount qi soit affaire, purrount faire tuer iij beastez de tel achate entre autres :—cestassauoir vn dez pluis haut price, j dautre de mesne price, et la tierce de la pluis bas price. Et doit le countrollour ou soun clerc estre au coper de tels beastez, et mettre en escripte combien dez meez rendra la melour beaste, comebien la meene, et comebien le pluis feble, et lez tesmoigne en garderobe a la count. Et si par auenture il y eit beastez qi ne vaillent mye le price a qei ils sount achatez, ils lez purront rentrer sur lachatour,[1] issint qi, sil eit folyment achate, la damage chete sur luy.

Item en droit de purueance de haryng et de grosse pissoun, soit ordine qi ele ce face en seisoun due, et la quantite de la purueance et le price soit tantost certefie en garderobe, et la haryng et le pissoun vieu par le countrollour, chief vssher de la sale, le clerc de la cuissine, sicome desuis est dit de purueaunce dez charez.[2] Et fait assauoir qi dascun manere de pissoun contient la centeyne vj^{xx}, et dascun manere ix^{xx}.

Item quant a grosse purueance de vin contre parlementz en[3] solempnez festez, soit la purueance surueue, si come desuis est dit;—cestassauoir chescun clerc ou lez vinz serrount herbergez, comebien dez toneux soit en chescune celer, et qi null tonell soit plaine[4] et taste par le countrollour, chief vssher de la sale, clerc de la butillerie, issint qi si nul tonel soit troue purre eu autrement corumpu,[5] issint qil ne soit seyne pur corps de homme a boiuer, soit le fenuz[6] de tonell ouste et le vin expande,[7] et le damage

1. B. reentrer sur le achatour. 2. B. bestez. 3. B. ou. 4. B. pleyn. 5. B. purry on autrement corrumpy. 6. B. fod. 7. expendee.

gette sur le butiller, qi tieu vin achate. Et le nombre dez toneux et la price soit tesmoigne par la countrollour en garderobe, et apres ceo parlement ou fest, au partir le roi de ceo lieu, autrefoitz veu par le countrollour, et lez toneux demurrantz enoillez; et donqes soit examine si la loance de vin fait en lostell sacorde ou recete et remenaunt dez vinz auauntditz.

Clerks and others of t marshauci

Item en loffice de la marchaucie deuyent estre ij clercz et ij vallettz de mestrier, dount lun est nome clerc de la marchaucie, et lautre clerc de laueinere. Et clerc de laueinere et lun dez vallettz de mester vont par pays a ffaire purueance de fein et dauein, et de lenueer al hostell. Et le clerc de la marchaucie et lautres vallettz de mester deiuent demorrer a lostell et | receiure la dit purueance, et en faire la liueree pur lez cheuaux le roy. Et celi clerc de la marchaucie doit getter et enbreuer de iour en autre clercz, vallettz, sergeantz, qi sount as gagez en soun rolle, quaunt il vakent, et quaunt il veignent, et de ceo faire lez billez de sa mayn demeigne, de demye an en demye an, a liuerer en garderobe pur lour acountz a lez paymentz. Et sil ne face, soit chastie par discrecione de seneschall et gardein de garderobe.

f. 69d.

Baker.

Item fait a remembrer de pistour et sez gentz, qi sount a dispensez le roi, qi ne rendent pluis de payn qi vn pistour estrange.

Offeryngs the Kyng.

Fait a remembrer qi le roy doit offrer chescun iour vn graunt denier, qi peisera vij d.; quel denier le tresorer de la garderobe mandra au roi [a][1] quater festez de lan;—cestassauoir a la fest de toutz Seintz, de Nowell, et Pasque, et de la Pentecost. Et cels iiij festez doit le tresorer et le coffrer porter c s., portez en deux basins dargent, dount ils deiuent profrer a chescun j d., qi voet offrer en la dit chapelle, qi en chose ils sount auxint communement as seruicez dez mortz, qi sount faitz par especialte deuaunt le roi en sa chapelle ou en auter esglise.

Item le roi doit offrere en certein le iour de la Thesaigne vn florein a par soi, en remembrance de iij rois; quele offrande lui serra baille per la tresorer.

Saint Thor of Canter byry.

Item le roi doit chescun fest de seint Thomas de Canterbury offrer a la fertre de seint Thomas de Canterbury, ou enuoier illoquez a offrer, pur luy en la dit fest iij floreins en floreine en noun de cheuage.

Offeryngs heale the kyng's ev

Item le roi doit offrer de certein le iour de graunde venderdy a crouce v s., queux il est acustumez reciure dieurs lui a le mene[2] le chapeleyn, a faire ent anulx a doner pur medicine as diuers gentz, et a rementre autre v s.; si le spine Dieu y soit, il doit offrer a le spine iij s.

Item a la crouce a la rasureccioun le iour de Pasque v s.

1. Supplied from B. 2. B. mayn.

Item le roy est acustume a offrer a doner par especiale deuocione vn floreine de Florence, le iour de seint John le Euangeliste en Nowell; et v floreins de Florence le iour de la Purificacione de Nostre Dame.

Item quant le roy doit offrer deniers a reliqs, ou a autrez en esglisez, il doit offrer vij s. de custumez.

monee. '0 | Item dauncien custume lalmoner le roi receiura en la garderobe a chescune dez auauntz quater festez xxv s. pur la pouder de cc poudres en lonour dez ditz festez.

Finis de hospicio regis.[1]

1. B. only.

APPENDIX II.

LISTS OF OFFICIALS UNDER EDWARD II.

A.—OFFICERS OF THE CHANCERY.

Materials exist in the chancery rolls, and still more completely in the hanaper accounts, for compiling very full lists of chancery officials of this reign. A complete catalogue would be well worth making, but for the present I have limited myself to the chancellors and their deputies, and to the keepers of the chancery rolls, the next important chancery officers outside the head of the department. This latter involved, however, a list of the keepers of the *domus conversorum*, who were getting to be identical with the keepers of the rolls. Moreover, the list of temporary keepers of the seal includes some, though not all, of the most notable chancery clerks. Some personages of importance, as for instance Adam of Brome, are, however, excluded from notice.

(1) Chancellors and Keepers of the Great Seal.

Except at the very beginning of the reign, the appointments of chancellors and of temporary keepers of the great seal, are recorded in memoranda annexed to the close rolls, from which accordingly the following list is compiled. The temporary keeperships of the seal, when the normal keeper, the chancellor, was either engaged on other affairs or non-existent, are not perhaps of the greatest importance. It has, however, been thought worth while to give them, because they shew very clearly the large extent to which the actual chancellor's work was at various times delegated to chancery clerks. This was notably the case with Walter Reynolds, who was seldom actually "keeping" the seal of which, as chancellor, he was the official custodian.

Reynolds is generally regarded as remaining chancellor until the late summer of 1314. However, his relations to the chancery became in the latter part of this time of such

an ambiguous character as to demand special notice. For the first part of his term of office, though he seldom did the work, Reynolds was always described as chancellor. After the early part of 1312, however, his normal designation became that of "keeper of the great seal."[1] Occasionally he was still styled chancellor, but very much by way of exception. One time he was even spoken of as "keeper of the great seal by reason of his office of chancellor."[2] Often he is equated, as keeper, with Sandall, then *locum tenens* of the treasurer, and even expressly called lieutenant of the chancery.[3] Also, his designation as keeper seems limited to the periods when he actually held the seal. When on 6 October 1312, the seal, after being for some time kept by chancery clerks, was restored to him, it is perhaps significant that he is only restored to the "custody of the seal."[4]

On 1 October 1313, Reynolds was appointed archbishop of Canterbury by papal provision; he was enthroned on 17 February 1314. At first this increased dignity made no difference, and up to 30 March 1314, he was still "keeper of our great seal."[5] However, on 31 March, three chancery clerks received the seal from him, and directions were issued that the seal was not to go with the king against the Scots but to remain under Airmyn's charge in the Tower.[6] Accordingly, from 3 April the privy seal warrants for the chancery were sent to the "keepers of our great seal."[7] A privy seal of 20 April, is, however, addressed to Reynolds as archbishop, informing him that the keepers of the seal are to make writs "with the counsel and advice of the

1. The instances are too numerous to specify. An early one is 17 April, 1312; *C. P. R., 1307—1313*, p. 581.

2. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 592. This was on 3 June, 1313. Compare *ib.*, p. 581, where he is "keeper of the great seal" on 17—22 April.

3. For instance on 29 March, 1313; *ib.*, p. 562; on 27 Feb. he is "lieutenant" *ib.*, ii, 203, and on 7 April chancellor; *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 560.

4. *Foedera*, ii, 181. The king writes to him, "E le gardez bien et sauvement, fesant coe q'apent a mesme la garde."

5. Thus in *Chancery Warrants*, file 87, the writs addressed to him, from 20 Feb. to 30 March, 1314, call him "Walter, archbishop of Canterbury, keeper of our great seal."

6. *C. C. R., 1313-18*, p. 96. The three keepers were to "faithfully execute what pertained to the office of the great seal," that is, I imagine, seal writs. The order was probably revoked, as writs were sealed in the north, notably at York and Berwick, both before and after Bannockburn.

7. See *Chancery Warrants*, files 87 and 88 *passim*.

archbishop."[1] After this a usual form of address in chancery warrants became "to the archbishop *and* to the keepers of the great seal."[2] The inference, then, is that, after 3 April, Reynolds ceased to be official keeper, and I find nothing in the chancery warrants to suggest that he ever resumed this office. Nevertheless, even when the privy seals distinguish him from the keepers, he continued to receive mandates to make writs, receive petitions, and do other things that concerned the chancery.[3] Moreover, occasionally the chancery itself still called him chancellor, for instance, so late as 13 July, and possibly even later.[4] He still retained a vague directive or advisory authority over the working clerks who used the seal. This authority continued the longer, since the scheme, devised in April for the deposit of the seal in the Tower, while the king went on the Scottish campaign, was not carried out. When Reynolds left the south with the king for the Bannockburn campaign early in June, Osgodby and his fellows took the seal north with them. Essentially Osgodby and his colleagues were independent keepers from 4 April onwards. Ordinary categories cannot, however, apply as Reynolds was still sometimes consulted on chancery matters. This state of things continued until Sandall was made chancellor on 26 September, as part of the policy of forcing on the vanquished king the literal acceptance of the ordinances.

These details are formal enough, and we can only guess at their inner meaning. It is clear that the chancellor's title was not generally withheld because the men of this period still accepted the view of St. Thomas of Canterbury that an archbishop could not continue to act as the king's chief minister. The title is infrequent even when Reynolds was still simple bishop of Worcester. I should rather suggest that it was impolitic to parade the name, because Reynolds had never been accepted as chancellor by the

1. *Chancery Warrants*, file 87. "Auoms mandez as gardeins de nostre grant seal quil par le consail et lauisement de vous facent faire briefs de nostre dite seal."

2. *Ib.*, "al honurable pere en Dieu W. erceuesqe de Canterbiry . . . . et as gardeins de nostre grant seal," 9 May and 1 June.

3. *Ib.*, file 88, nos. 3015, 3021, 3033 and 3037, gives examples under the dates 1, 3, 6, and 9 June.

4. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 157, for 13 July. The later reference in *ib.*, p. 183, dated 25 Sept., means, I suspect, Sandall, who officially became chancellor on 26 Sept. The contrast of style in the privy seal documents, emanating from the household, and in those from the chancery is interesting. I imagine that Northburgh, the keeper of the privy seal, was more under baronial influence than Reynolds.

baronage in parliament according to the ordinances. It is perhaps significant that the seal was seldom in his active charge during the crisis of the ordinances. Again it was easier for Edward to drop the name than to deprive his friend of the thing. Perhaps also contemporary French usage suggested the simpler title of keeper. The obvious explanation that Reynolds was not called chancellor because he hardly ever did chancellor's work is too simple. And records shew that he took an active part in the council and in the vouching for administrative acts. Nevertheless when the need arose for placating the barons, in order to get them to fight the Scots, Edward withheld from his ally even the name of keeper. After Bannockburn Reynolds ceased to be allowed even an advisory relation to the chancery. It mattered the less as permanent chancery clerks did all the work.

Reynolds' style as keeper suggests a new permanent type of keepership, similar in essence to the office of the chancellor, but less formal. Of such an office later history affords many examples. A more continuous feature of Edward II's reign is the oft-recurring but temporary deposit of the seal in the hands of a group of chancery clerks. The use of the seal was entrusted generally to one clerk, normally to the keeper of the rolls of chancery, while it was to be "kept" for safe custody under the seals of two or three of his colleagues, who were therefore in a fashion "controllers" to the acting keeper, since without their cognisance he could not obtain possession of the seal. As both these classes of officers are called keepers in the writs, I have mentioned them all in my list. All types of keepers are printed in italics, to distinguish them from the chancellors, who are set forth in Roman type. I have printed first, and in capitals, the person who has most right to be regarded as the actual keeper of the seal. The clerks, under whose seals the great seal was safeguarded, are in smaller type. When these "keepers" acted under a chancellor, their names are indented; when independent, they are aligned with the chancellors.

Of a different type of "keepers" are those with whom the seal was simply deposited for custody. The normal place of custody for this purpose was the wardrobe, and the treasurer of the wardrobe, or the steward of the household, was the usual keeper. Thus during Edward II's flight from the earls, before the fall of Gaveston, the seal was

"kept" by Mauley the steward. The disturbances of 1321 to 1322, like those of 1311 to 1314, led to abnormal and revolutionary methods of keeping the seal. In those days the ill-health of the chancellor gave a good excuse for keeping a baronial partisan aloof from the seal. As a result we have such anomalous custodians as queen Isabella, at the time before and after the siege of Leeds in 1321, and king Edward in person, during his campaign against the marcher barons in the Severn valley, in the winter of 1321–2. On none of these occasions was the seal used. As in the earlier crisis the only real keepers of the seal, that is keepers who sealed with it, were chancery clerks. Two of these, Osgodby, from 1310 to 1314, and William Airmyn from 1314 to 1323, are the "working chancellors" of the period. Henry Cliff, Robert Bardelby, and Richard Airmyn, once or twice replace the inevitable William Airmyn. In particular during bishop Salmon's chancellorship, the seal was constantly in William Airmyn's hands, largely through the ill-health of the aged chancellor. Baldock, alone of the chancellors of the reign, habitually discharged in person the characteristic function of his office. He only temporarily resigned its custody when he crossed the border to negotiate in 1324 the long truce with the Scots. After his flight from London the rebels, who used the name of the duke of Aquitaine, once more made revolutionary experiments in seal keeping, which continued until a regular chancellor was chosen immediately after the accession of Edward III.

Mr. Ralph of Baldock, bishop of London,	Appointed, 21 April, 1307, Surrendered seal, 2 August, 1307,	Madox, i, 74. *Fines*, i, 559.
John of Langton, bishop of Chichester,	Acting, 18 August, 1307, Surrendered seal, 11 May, 1310,	*Chanc. War.* 58/2. *Cl.* 258.
William of Melton, keeper of the wardrobe, *Robert of Bardelby*, *Mr. John Francis*,	Received seal,[1] 12 May, 1310,	*Cl.* 258.

1. This was apparently a temporary deposit of the seal in the wardrobe; it was within a few days delivered by Melton to Osgodby as chief keeper, under the seals of the two chancery clerks Bardelby and Francis.

Adam of Osgodby, Robert of Bardelby, Mr. John Francis,	Acting as keepers, May, 1310, to 7 July, 1310, *Ann. Paul.*, 269, *Foedera*, ii, 110.
Walter Reynolds, bishop of Worcester, archbishop of Canterbury, 1314,	First sealed writs, 7 July, 1310, *ib.*, ii, 110. Generally styled keeper after 1312. Styled chancellor, 13 July, 1314, *Cl.* 157. Not in charge after 31 March, 1314, *Cl.* 96.
Adam of Osgodby, Robert of Bardelby, William of Airmyn,	Keepers from 27 August to 28 September, 1311, *Cl.* 435. *Cl.* 438.
Adam of Osgodby, Robert of Bardelby, William of Airmyn,	Keepers from 9 December, 1311, *Cl.* 443.
The same,	Keepers from 19 December, 1311, *Cl.* 447.
The same,	to 6 October, 1312, *Cl.* 553. Custody of seal restored to Walter, bishop of Worcester, 6 October, 1312,[1] *Cl.* 553.
Adam of Osgodby, Robert of Bardelby, William of Airmyn,	Received seal for safe keeping, 17 April 1313; surrendered seal, 22 April, 1313, *Cl.* 581.
The same,	Keepers from 13 June to 16 July, 1313, *Cl.* 583, 67.
The same,	Keepers from 31 March to 4 April, 1314, *Cl.* 96.
Adam of Osgodby. Robert of Bardelby, William of Airmyn,	Independent keepers from 5 April, 1314, up to 26 September, 1314, *P.* 128. *Cl.* 197.
John of Sandall, king's clerk, bishop of Winchester, 1316,	Appointed, 26 September, 1314; *Cl.* 197-8. Resigned seal, 9 June, 1318, *Cl.* 619.
William of Airmyn, Adam of Osgodby, Robert of Bardelby,	Keepers from 2 June, 1315, *Cl.* 233.
Adam of Osgodby, Robert of Bardelby, Robert of Askeby,	Keepers from 14 to 25 November, 1315, *Cl.* 314.

1. While Osgodby kept the seal it was, on numerous occasions, deposited for safety in the wardrobe, in the custody of Edmund Mauley, the steward; *C. C. R., 1307-13*, pp. 448, 459, and 552. It was not used in such times.

William of Airmyn, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Hugh of Burgh,* *(till 16 Sept.),* *Robert of Askeby,* *(after 16 Sept.),*	Keepers from 26 August to after 16 September, 1316,	*Cl.* 430.
William of Airmyn, *Robert of Bardelby,*	Keepers from 11 to 18 May, 1317,	*Cl.* 469.
William of Airmyn, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Robert of Askeby,*	Keepers from 20 October until after 20 November, 1317,	*Cl.* 576. *Cl.* 577.
Mr. Henry of Cliff, *William of Airmyn,* *Robert of Bardelby,* *Robert of Askeby,*	Keepers from 6 February to 19 February, 1318,	*Cl.* 592-3.
Mr. Henry of Cliff, *William of Airmyn,* *Robert of Askeby,*	Keepers from 29 March, 1318,	*Cl.* 603.
William of Airmyn, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Mr. Henry of Cliff,*	Independent keepers from 10 to 11 June, 1318,	*Cl.* 619.
John of Hotham, bishop of Ely,	Received the seal, 11 June, 1318, Surrendered seal, 23 January, 1320,	*Ib.* *Cl.* 219.
William of Airmyn, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Mr. Henry of Cliff,* *Robert of Askeby,*	Keepers from 13 June to 2 July, 1318,	*Cl.* 619.
The same, without Askeby,	From 4 July to 16 July, 1318,	*Cl.* 620.
The same,	From 1 August to 4 August, 1318,	*Ib.*
William of Airmyn, *Geoffrey of Welford,* *William of Herlaston,*	Keepers from 11 October, 1318,	*Cl.* 103.
Robert of Bardelby, *Mr. Henry of Cliff,* *Geoffrey of Welford,* *William of Cliff,*	Keepers from 2 December, 1319,	*Cl.* 216.
William of Airmyn, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Mr. Henry of Cliff,*	Received seal, 23 January, 1320, Surrendered seal, 26 January, 1320,	*Cl.* 219. *Ib.*

JOHN SALMON, bishop of Norwich,	Received the seal, 26 January, 1320, "Whom the king had nominated his chancellor in full parliament"; resigned through ill-health, 5 June, 1323,	*Cl.* 219. *Cl.* 714.
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN, *Robert of Bardelby,* *William of Cliff,*	Received small "seal of absence," while king was abroad, 9 June, 1320, Surrendered the same on the king's return, 22 July, 1320,	*Cl.* 238. *Cl.* 317.
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN, *Mr. Henry of Cliff,* *William of Cliff,*	Keepers from 6 August to 27 September, 1320,	*Cl.* 323.
ROGER OF NORTHBURGH, keeper of wardrobe (for custody), *Mr. Henry of Cliff,* *William of Herlaston,*	Keepers from 16 to 24 April, 1321,	*Cl.* 366.
The same with William of Airmyn substituted for Cliff,	Keepers from 24 April to 6 May, 1321,	*Ib.*
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Mr. Henry of Cliff,*	Keepers from 20 May to 24 July, 1321, during the illness of the chancellor,	*Cl.* 367, 477.
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN. (*for use*), *QUEEN ISABELLA,* *and afterwards* *ROGER OF NORTHBURGH,* (*for custody*),	Keepers from 24 July to 24 August, 1321,	*Cl.* 477-8.
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Mr. Henry of Cliff,*	Keepers from 24 August to 23 October, 1321,	*Cl.* 478.
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN, *QUEEN ISABELLA,* (*for custody*),	Keepers from 23 October to 3 November, 1321,	*Ib.*
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN, *Robert of Bardelby,* *Mr. Henry of Cliff,*	Keepers from 4 November to 14 November, 1321,	*Ib.*

The seal in the king's custody when not in use,	From 5 November, 1321, to 24 January, 1322,	*Cl.* 478.
William of Airmyn, *Mr. Henry of Cliff,*	From 14 November to 14 December, 1321,	*Ib.*
William of Airmyn, *William of Cliff,* *William of Herlaston,*	From 15 December, 1321, to 3 March, 1322,	*Ib.*
The seal in the king's custody and not used,	From 15 December, 1321, to 24 January, and after 3 March, 1322,	*Ib.*
William of Airmyn, *Mr. Henry of Cliff,* *William of Cliff,*	Keepers from 24 September to 17 November, 1322,	*Cl.* 676-7.
William of Airmyn, *Mr. Henry of Cliff,* *William of Cliff,* *William of Herlaston,*	Keepers from 10 January to 2 May, 1323,	*Cl.* 689.
William of Airmyn, *Mr. Henry of Cliff,* *William of Herlaston,*	Keepers from 5 June to 20 August, 1323,	*Cl.* 714, and 134-5.
Mr. Robert of Baldock, archdeacon of Middlesex,	Received seal as chancellor, 20 August, 1323, Remained in office till Edward of Aquitaine was made keeper of realm, 28 October, 1326,	*Cl.* 134-5.
Richard of Airmyn, *Henry of Cliff,* *William of Herlaston,*	Keepers from 16 November to 12 December, 1324,	*Cl.* 328.
Robert of Wyvill, queen's clerk,	Keeper of privy seal used in lieu of great seal, since the keeper of the realm had no other seal, 26 October, 1326 to 20 November, 1326,	*Cl.* 655.
William le Blount, knight (for custody),	Keeper of Edward II's seal, 20 November to 26 November, 1326,	*Ib.*

William of Airmyn, bishop of Norwich, *Mr. Henry of Cliff*, (after 17 Dec. for sealing), *Queen Isabella*, *Edward duke of Aquitaine*, keeper of realm (for custody),	Keepers of great seal of Edward II, used in name of keeper of realm,	*Cl.* 655.
	30 November, 1326, to ? 20 January, or at latest to 28 January, 1327,	*Ib.*
	When Edward III made John Hotham, bishop of Ely chancellor,	*Cl.* 98.

(2) The Keepers of the Chancery Rolls and the House of Converts.

The keeper of the rolls of chancery was always a leading chancery clerk. He often "kept the household of the chancery," and normally acted as a keeper of the great seal in a temporary vacancy or during the chancellor's absence from duty. This was notably the case in Edward II's reign.

The custom now arose of also appointing the keeper of the rolls of chancery as keeper of the *domus conversorum*, the house for the reception of the Jewish converts and their chaplains in Chancery Lane, on the site of the modern Public Record Office. The last keeper of the house of converts under Edward I had been the royal chaplain and almoner, Henry of Bluntesdon.[1] Early in the new reign an Adam Osgodby, already keeper of the rolls, became warden of the converts also. The two offices were, however, still distinct, as the appointment of Robert Holden, who was not even a chancery clerk, to the keepership of the house of converts shews. Robert was, at the time of his nomination, controller of the wardrobe, and the entrusting of this office to a *garderobarius*, is characteristic of the deliberate confusion of chancery and wardrobe under Robert Baldock. The two offices were formally united under Richard II, and, after 1381, the old house of converts became mainly the office of the rolls of chancery.[2] The keepers of the rolls became known later as masters of the rolls, and by modern legislation their authority has been extended from

1. *C. P. R., 1281-92*, p. 513. He was appointed on 10 April, 1298.
2. *Ib., 1381-5*, pp. 41, 269.

the chancery rolls to the custody of all the records of the crown.

Even under Edward II the combination of the two offices had the advantage of securing adequate London quarters for the chancery records, which were less liable to loss when not exposed to the hazards of being carried about by a peripatetic court. The house of converts also afforded accommodation upon occasion to the "household of the chancery." Osgodby used the *domus conversorum* so freely for these purposes, that the chaplains and converts complained in 1315 that he had made them all houseless, and had harboured the chancery clerks there, and even leased some of the tenements to strangers. Naturally the chancellor decided against the converts, and in favour of his own subordinate.[1]

The large extent to which the great seal was in the keeping of such men as Osgodby and William Airmyn, makes the position of the keeper of the rolls of some practical importance for Edward II's reign. Here, as elsewhere, the office increases in importance, and the official head recedes somewhat into the background. The keeper of the chancery rolls is now keeper of the seal almost as often as the chancellor.

(*a*)—KEEPERS OF THE ROLLS OF CHANCERY.

ADAM OF OSGODBY, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1 October, 1295;	*Cl. 1288-96*, 454.
	Acting, 17 April, 1316;	*Cl.* 333.
	Died, before 1 September, 1316,	*Fine R.*, ii, 299.
WILLIAM OF AIRMYN, king's clerk,	Acting, 26 August, 1316;	*Cl.* 430.
	Surrendered, 26 May, 1324,	*Cl.* 186.
RICHARD OF AIRMYN, king's clerk,	Appointed, 26 May, 1324;	*Cl.* 186.
	Surrendered, 4 July, 1325,	*Cl.* 386.
MR. HENRY OF CLIFF, king's clerk,	Appointed, 4 July, 1325;	*Cl.* 386.
	Acting, 16 December, 1326,	*Cl.* 656.

(*b*)—KEEPERS OF THE DOMUS CONVERSORUM.

ADAM OF OSGODBY, king's clerk, keeper of the chancery rolls,	Appointed, 7 November, 1307, during pleasure,	*P.* 15.
	Died before 1 September, 1316,	*Fine R.*, ii, 299.

1. *C. C. R., 1313-17*, pp. 228-9. There is an interesting history of the "Rolls chapel" by Sir H. Maxwell-Lyte, in Deputy Keeper's *Fifty-seventh Report*, appendix, pp. 19—47, and notices of the House of Converts by Mr. W. J. Hardy are in *Middlesex and Hertfordshire Notes and Queries*.

William of Airmyn, king's clerk, keeper of the chancery rolls,	Appointed, 20 August, 1316, for life,	*P.* 534.
Robert of Holden, king's clerk, controller of the wardrobe,	Appointed, 4 October, 1325; Acting, to Easter, 1326,	*P.* 176. *I.R.* 220.

B.—OFFICERS OF THE EXCHEQUER.

Modern writers tend to stress the distinction between the exchequer of receipt and the exchequer of account. The distinction is a real one, but the fourteenth century professed to emphasise the unity rather than the division of the great financial office, so that it was regarded as a presumptuous act for the ambitious baron Bellers to strive to split into two divisions an office which from the beginning had always been indivisible.[1] Similarly there has been a tendency to distinguish unduly between the judicial, financial, and executive sides of the exchequer, and to classify its staff according as its work is thought to fall mainly into one of these three categories.[2] Thus the "barons," being judges in more modern times, are regarded as exercising primarily judicial functions; the "upper exchequer" is regarded as mainly engaged in accounting, and drawing up rolls, while officers of the "receipt" are absorbed in paying out and receiving money and in making tallies. But the barons were financial even more than judicial officers, and the "lower exchequer" now had in the issue and receipt rolls, rolls and accounts of its own, as elaborate as those of the "exchequer of account." Even in so highly organised an office as the exchequer there was in the fourteenth century no clear differentiation of functions, but every officer was employed in judicial, executive, or financial work, according to the needs of the moment. This becomes still more evident when we take into account the extra official work, the extraordinary judicial and executive commissions, which

1. Robert of Reading, p. 232, "scaccarium domini regis apud Westmonasterium prima sua institutione semper indivisum."

2. For instance, by Mr. H. Hall, Preface to *Red Book of Exchequer*, iii, cccxxxi-iii, who even makes this separation in 1290, when there was less differentiation than in our period.

were assigned to all prominent officers of the exchequer, as to every other minister of state in those days.

The lists of exchequer officers now given might easily have been enlarged. For instance the issue rolls alone would enable us to give an absolutely exhaustive list of all the officers of the receipt. But I have thought it enough to limit myself to those ministers who shared the chief responsibilities, though some prominent persons in my list began their work as minor exchequer clerks. I may add further that the officers of the exchequer seem to have lived a corporate life, like that of the clerks of the chancery, or, in later times, the clerks of the privy seal. The details of this collegiate existence are much less closely illustrated by the records than is the case with the two chief administrative offices. Yet there is evidence, notably in the case of the barons, that "residence at the exchequer," involved much more than attendance during office hours, and included living there in common with their colleagues of the same rank. This residence must have been very loosely interpreted in the case of the increasing number of lay dignitaries, who had manors and estates as well as houses of their own. Perhaps it was already becoming obsolete.

(1) Treasurers.

Enough has been said in the text as to the duties and responsibilities of the treasurer of the exchequer. It need only now be added that in this list the keepers of the treasury and the lieutenants of the treasurer are alike printed in italics, the name in question being indented when the officer is acting on behalf of another treasurer, and aligned when he is not subordinate. Sometimes, as in 1322 and 1325, the division of the exchequer into two branches necessitated a principal and a lieutenant acting at the same time. Such an acting treasurer was generally a baron, and continued to discharge his duties as a baron, as, for instance, Norwich, Everdon and Bellers.

Walter of Langton, bishop of Lichfield,	28 September, 1295—22 August, 1307,	*P.* 1.
Walter Reynolds, king's clerk, afterwards bishop of Worcester,	22 August, 1307—6 July, 1310,	*P.* 1, 234. *Ann. Paul.* 269.

John of Sandall, king's clerk,	6 May, 1308—6 July, 1310,	
John of Sandall, king's clerk,	6 July, 1310—23 October, 1311.	*P.* 234, 396.
Walter of Norwich, baron of exchequer,	23 October, 1311—23 January, 1312,	*P.* 396, 501.
Walter of Langton, bishop of Lichfield,	? 23 January, 1312—? 17 May, 1312 (see note[1]).	
Walter of Norwich,	Ordered to continue to act, 17 May, 1312—4 October, 1312,	*P.* 459.
John of Sandall, king's clerk,	4 October, 1312—26 September, 1314, "by king on information of Pembroke,"	*P.* 501, 178.
Walter of Norwich,	26 September, 1314—27 May, 1317, "by king and council,"	*P.* 178, 657.
John of Hotham, bishop of Ely,	27 May, 1317—10 June, 1318,	*P.* 657, 155.
Mr. John Walwayn, king's clerk,	10 June, 1318—16 November, 1318,	*P.* 155, 227. *I.R.* 186.
John of Sandall, bishop of Winchester,	16 November, 1318—2 November, 1319,	*P.* 227. *R.R.* 230.
Walter of Norwich,	6 November, 1319—18 February, 1320,	*P.* 417. *I.R.* 187.
Walter of Stapeldon, bishop of Exeter,	18 February, 1320—25 August, 1321,	*P.* 417, 14.
Walter of Norwich,	25 August, 1321—9 May, 1322,	*P.* 14, 112.
Walter of Stapeldon, again,	10 May, 1322—3 July, 1325,	*P.* 112, 128. *R.R.* 240.

1. Langton was "prevented from entering on the execution of his office" by the ordainers; *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 459. He was appointed by patent at York on 23 Jan., 1312, "until the next parliament"; *ib.*, p. 413. But, the patent being ignored in the south, another was issued from York on 14 March to the same effect; *ib.*, p. 440. Then on 12 April, from Newcastle-on-Tyne, the king commanded the barons "sicut alias" to obey Langton as treasurer; "et hoc sicut indignationem regis vitare voluerint nullatenus omittant"; Madox, ii, 38. Langton, too, had been afraid to act, and on 13 April the king sternly ordered him to do his duty; *Foedera*, ii, 164. Excommunicated by Winchelsea and threatened by the barons, Langton was, on 1 May, allowed to go to Avignon to appeal (*ib.*, p. 167), and Norwich was continued on 17 May. Thus the second treasurership of the great treasurer of Edward I's declining years proved a purely nominal one. I imagine Norwich, the baronial nominee, acted continuously as keeper of the treasury from Oct. 1311 to May 1312.

Walter of Norwich,	3 November, 1322—	*Cl.* 613.
William of Everdon, baron, lieutenant of Norwich,	6 July, 1324—20 August, 1324,	*R.R.* 251.
William of Melton, archbishop of York,	3 July, 1325—6 November, 1326, "by king,"	*P.* 128. Malmesbury, 283.
Roger Bellers, baron of exchequer,	9 August, 1325,	*P.* 159.
Walter of Norwich,	? 30 September—13 November, 1326, (part of time),	*I.R.* 219.
John of Stratford, bishop of Winchester,	Began to act, 14 November, 1326,	*I.R.* 220.

(2) Barons.

Under Henry II "baron of the exchequer" was a descriptive title of the greater ministers of state—the *maiores*—who had seats in the exchequer. It included not only the treasurer, the chamberlains and other definitely financial officers, but all the dignitaries of state, from the chancellor downwards, in their relations to the exchequer. In the fourteenth century, however, "baron of the exchequer" was the name of a definite class of exchequer officers, who were so far contrasted with the ancient *maiores de scaccario,* that, as the case of Walter of Norwich shews, a baron on becoming treasurer ceased to be a baron, though a baron might hold temporary office as *locum tenens thesaurarii.*

The process by which the meaning of the term baron became entirely changed has not yet been worked out in detail, but the most essential stages of it took place during the reign of Henry III. Late in the reign of John,[1] and again in the early years of Henry III,[2] the phrase "baron

1. See, for instance, *Rot. Lit. Claus., 1204-24,* p. 132, where John, in 1212, tells the bishop of Norwich that he has sent "nuncios vestros . . . ad fideles nostros G. filium Petri, justiciarium nostrum, S. comitem Wintonie, W. Briwerre, magistrum R. de Marisco, tunc ad scaccarium nostrum residentes, et ad *ceteros barones de scaccario nostro.*" Here we have the justiciar, Geoffrey FitzPeter, Richard Marsh, the powerful clerk of the chamber, who soon became chancellor, and two other magnates called barons of the exchequer, while they were attending the exchequer session, in quite the twelfth century fashion.

2. Madox, i, 675, from *Pipe Roll,* 5 Hen. III, mentions "H. de Burgo, justiciarium, W. Briewerre, *et alios barones de scaccario.*" Brewer and other magnates are called in 10 Richard I, "barones ad scaccarium," (*ib.*, ii, 228), a formula which precisely expresses the situation. Again in 9 Hen. III, a long list of magnates and officials are called barons of the exchequer; Madox, ii, 27.

of the exchequer" was still used in the same sense as in the days of the *Dialogus*. So late as 1230 the treasurer is still one of the barons.[1] The later sense of baron only begins when barons of the exchequer were first appointed *ad hoc*, and the first recorded instance of this is in 1234, immediately after the fall of Peter des Roches, when William of Beauchamp, Alexander of Swerford and Richard of Montfichet were formally assigned as fellows of the other barons to be resident at the exchequer.[2] Yet even after this the term baron remains so vague that Swerford is officially described in 1235, not as baron, but as a resident at the exchequer in the king's service.[3] No other baron of the exchequer's appointment is recorded until 16 June 1253, when that of Peter of Rivaux, then nearing the end of his long career, is enrolled on the close roll.[4] But from that time references to official barons in close and liberate rolls become not uncommon, and on 1 Nov. 1263, Roger de la Ley, remembrancer of the exchequer, was appointed baron "because the king at present has not a baron in the same exchequer,"[5] apparently as the result of civil disturbances. Clearly, however, by this date it was abnormal that there should be no official baron in residence, and we may safely infer that "baron" had now definitely ceased to be a descriptive term and had become an official title. Under Edward I the office became regularised, and henceforth there generally seem to have been at least three barons of the exchequer acting at once.[6] Towards the end of the reign the custom arose of appointing barons by

1. Madox, ii, 28.

2. *Close Rolls, 1231-4*, pp. 569-70. Compare *ib.*, pp. 467-8. Swerford was already an exchequer clerk of great experience, and had compiled the *Red Book* four years previously, being already "residens ad scaccarium"; *Red Book of Exch.*, i, 4.

3. *Close Rolls, 1234-37*, p. 80, "qui residet ad scaccarium regis in servitio domini regis."

4. Dugdale, *Orig. Jurid., Chron. Ser.*, p. 15; Madox, ii, 55.

5. *Ib.*, p. 21; Madox, ii, 55.

6. For instance, in 1278, when a stipend of twenty marks each is ordered to be paid to three barons, Roger Northwood, John Cobham, and Philip of Wiloughby; *C. P. R., 1272-81*, p. 295; compare *ib.*, p. 311. Again in the parliament of 1305, these barons appeared among the members of the council summoned to attend parliament, naming William Carlton, John de Lisle and Roger Hegham; Maitland, *Memoranda de Parliamento*, pp. cvii-viii.

letters patent, so that henceforth their succession is easy to trace.[1]

Under Edward II twenty-five persons acted as barons of the exchequer, each of whom received his appointment by patent. The number serving at once was still not quite determined, being never less than three, and once at least as high as six. This latter number occurs in 1318–19,[2] and was regarded by the reformers of the York parliament of October 1318, as excessive. Accordingly orders were issued to the new treasurer, bishop Sandall, on 2 January 1319, to deliberate, "if you see that the office be overfilled, which of the said barons can be most easily dispensed with."[3] The result was that the number was cut down by 1323 to four,[4] a number already regarded at the beginning of the reign as a normal one. This is suggested by the fact that while five barons were appointed in 1307, yet two were old and infirm, one of whom died almost immediately, while another virtually retired in a few months. Anyhow only one appointment was made in place of these two vacancies, so that the office was considered sufficiently equipped with four barons in 1308. As the result of the reforming ordinance of 1323, the normal number of barons was raised to five.[5]

The position of baron was traditionally one of great dignity and importance. When the official barons came in, it was thought worth while, in 1255, to extend to them all the liberties and privileges which had belonged to barons of the exchequer in the original sense.[6] The salary assigned to Swerford, the first official baron, in 1234, was 40 marks a year,[7] and in 1278 this salary was assigned to

1. The first appointment of a baron by patent was that of Mr. Elias of Winchester to the Dublin exchequer on 1 Sept., 1295; *C. P. R., 1292–1301*, p. 145. The earliest English examples are those of Mr. Richard of Abingdon, appointed on 23 Sept., and John de Lisle, appointed on 17 Oct., 1299; *ib.*, p. 438—442. The other instances under Edward I are Roger Hegham, appointed 1 April, 1300, *ib.*, p. 503, and Humphrey of Walden, appointed 19 Oct., 1306; *ib.*, *1301-7*, p. 467.

2. In 12 Edw. II (1318-19) six barons were acting, namely, Walter of Norwich, John Abel, Robert Wodehouse, John Ockham, John Foxley, and John Everdon, but wages for four only are recorded in the Issue Roll for Michaelmas term; *I. R.*, 186.

3. Madox, ii, 61. Two barons, Wodehouse and Ockham, were declared to be "suffisaunz et necessaires," and were "to remain in peace in their posts." For the other barons see previous note.

4. *Red Book of Exch.*, iii, 903. 5. *Ib.*, 903.

6. Madox, ii, 13, from *Memoranda Roll, 39 Hen. III.*

7. *C. P. R., 1232-47*, p. 75.

three barons.[1] Thus long before Edward II's reign, the stipend of 40 marks, which each still received, had already become their accustomed fee.[2]

The lay and clerical barons under Edward II were almost equally balanced. Fourteen of the twenty-five were clerks when appointed, but as Norwich soon renounced his clergy, the permanent proportion is thirteen clerks to twelve laymen, at least eight of the latter being knights. Of the clerks, at least three were professional exchequer clerks, namely Norwich, who reached still higher dignities, but who, like the more obscure William of Everdon and William of Fulbourn, was treasurer's remembrancer before he became a baron. Three other king's clerks, Warley, Ockham and Wodehouse, were wardrobe clerks, who had held high office in that department. Of close affinity to these is Humphrey of Walden, a knight, who had been chief steward of chamber manors, between his two tenures as baron. Other barons like Threckingham, Staunton, and Friskney, this latter a layman, had been regular justices of one or both of the two benches; while others had had judicial experience in eyres and similar temporary commissions, including Bakewell, Lisle and Gloucester. Bakewell's position as a veteran alderman of London raised to be baron is worth special emphasis.[3]

Three of the lay barons, Scotter, Friskney and Passelewe, had been advocates in large practice in the common law courts, or, in contemporary language, "narratores," "counters" or "sergeants assigned to the king's pleas." This class, Mr. Turner tells us, was already limited to laymen under Edward II,[4] so that the development of the lay element among the barons resulted from the increase in

1. *C. P. R., 1272-81*, pp. 295, 311. Is it possible that "year" on p. 295 should there be read "term"? Otherwise the entries are contradictory.

2. Madox, ii, 326; *Issue Rolls, passim.*

3. The identity of the baron with the alderman seems almost established by the will of Cecilia of Baukwell, dated 29 Dec., 1323, and calendared in *Cal. of Wills in Court of Husting*, i, 342. She speaks of her husband as Sir John of Bauquell, and their son and heir's name is Thomas. Thomas' own will is in *ib.*, i, 390. Thomas, son and heir of John Baukwell, is already acting in that capacity on 10 March, 1308, soon after the baron's death; *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 53. See also later, p. 341.

4. *Year Books*, iv, xv—xxi. The passage in the *Mirror of Justices*, p. 47, on which Mr. Turner partly relies, does not, however, fully bear out this statement. There is nothing in the exclusion from the office of "contour" of "homme de religion," and those "dedenz seinz ordre de subdeacone en amont, ne clerk benefice de cure des almes," to prevent a clerk either in minor orders, or simply admitted to the first tonsure, who had no cure of souls, from being a pleader.

the number of barons trained in the practice of the common law, where their clerical brethren were seldom advocates though often judges. The departmental exchequer and wardrobe officials had a more purely financial training. All barons were, however, put on so many commissions to hear and determine, to hold assizes and eyres, that every one could not but acquire plenty of judicial experience, even outside revenue cases. The election of Scotter, who apparently was a distinguished advocate, straight from the bar to the first place among the barons, is the most striking instance of the promotion of a pure lawyer to a high exchequer post during the reign. The clerical barons do not seem in some cases to have profited much by their clergy. The highest church promotion obtained by them in the reign was the deanery of St. Paul's which went to John of Everdon. Perhaps the exchequer clerks were now so remote from the court that they had not the chances of advancement by royal favour enjoyed by wardrobe and even chancery clerks. However, the clerical element persisted longer among the barons of the exchequer than on the two benches of common law justices. It was not until the anti-clerical days of 1371 that parliament included the office of baron of the exchequer among those to which they prayed the crown to appoint no "men of holy church."[1] Even later than this, knowledge of the common law was not regarded as indispensable for the office of baron, if he were otherwise well-informed in the laws, course and ways of the exchequer.[2] Let us not then think of fourteenth century barons as lawyers and judges so much as superior treasury clerks with many opportunities for varied administrative and judicial experience.

The corporate life of the exchequer as an office is negatively illustrated by the licences given to more than one baron of long service to "retire from court and dwell in his own house as often and as long as he thinks fit, and to return to the exchequer when he pleases." Such permission was granted by Edward I to the barons John Cobham in 1300, and Peter of Leicester in 1301.[3] Similar permission was given to the veteran, William Carlton, in 1308 by Edward II.[4] As Carlton continued to act, when so

1. *Rot. Parl.*, ii, 304.
2. *Ib.*, iii, 119. Commons' petition of 1381. The list included also the remembrancers and other chief men of the exchequer.
3. *C. P. R., 1292-1301*, pp. 485-6 and 615.
4. *Ib., 1307-13*, p. 139.

minded, the favour must be regarded as exemption from compulsory "living in college," rather than involving complete retirement. I have lighted upon no later orders to the same effect, and it is permissible to wonder whether the silence of the records suggests a relaxation of the corporate life of the exchequer at a time when the "household of the chancery" was becoming so strong, and the humbler household of the privy seal was already having its beginnings.

Each baron had his allotted place in the exchequer, and in many cases a new baron was put into the position vacated by the outgoing officer. All barons had the same salary and status, but there is already evidence that the office of chief baron was now established, and that, soon after the end of the reign, there was also a secondary baron to hold the next place to the head of the society.[1] Thus already under Edward I, William Carlton, the most senior baron, is described as "capitalis baro,"[2] and it is clear that he continued to hold this rank during our reign, though both he and his successors are very occasionally so described in the records. Nevertheless the ordainers of 1311, mention the chief baron of the exchequer as one of the high functionaries who are always to be nominated by the baronage in parliament. This may have tended towards emphasising the distinction already existing between the chief baron and his junior colleagues. Already Carlton had been succeeded by Thomas Cambridge in 1308, and Cambridge by Roger Scotter in 1310. It is significant that the chief post was no longer a question of seniority, that Cambridge had only served a few months and Scotter, an advocate in large practice, had never had any relation to the exchequer at all. In all these cases, however, though the appointment was to the office of Carlton's successor as chief baron, the patent makes no distinction of paramouncy between that post and the other baronships. However, within a few months of the ordinances, Walter Norwich, already a baron since August 1311, was, on 3 March 1312, appointed by patent as baron

1. Robert Wodehouse, already a baron in part of this reign, was on 16 April, 1329, appointed "second baron of the exchequer"; *C. P. R., 1327-30*, p. 383. But so early as 1308 Thomas Cambridge was appointed "to sit next" the chief baron; *Ib., 1307-13*, p. 141.

2. Dugdale, *Chron. Ser.*, 32, from *Liberate Roll, 31 Edw. 1*, m. 2.

in place of Scotter,[1] and on 8 March was specifically described as chief baron.[2] We need not hesitate, therefore, to construct, as I have done, a separate list of chief barons for the reign, though until Norwich's second period of service, beginning in 1317, it is a long one. Nor need we be afraid to assume that Norwich's first appointment was one of the important changes brought about in 1312 by the ordinances. A stipend of £50 was soon assigned to him as deputy treasurer,[3] so that the chief baron for the first time has a higher salary than his colleagues.

In 1314 Norwich became treasurer and gave up his position as chief baron. Hervey of Staunton may be regarded as in high favour with the ordainers, since in the time of drastic change after Bannockburn, he succeeded to Norwich's post. Two years later the reaction had gathered force, and Staunton was made chancellor of the exchequer, a place of not greater emolument and hardly equal dignity. Ingelard of Warley, expelled from court by the ordinances, stepped into the vacant post, but after eighteen months was reduced to a junior barony in favour of Norwich. In the patent of Norwich's reappointment the office of chief baron is described as one of "moderate labour," and as a natural relief to a useful and faithful veteran after the excessive cares of the treasurership.[4] His special duty was to "supervise the business of the exchequer with the treasurer and attend the king's councils."[5] So little was the chief baron considered at this time to be a judge! Norwich's whole record is a striking example of the continuity of administrative office under Edward II.

It is less easy to trace the succession of the junior barons of the exchequer to each other. We know that Hegham, Foxley and Bellers, represent one baronial post, held by them in succession, and we can guess that Redeswell was Bellers' successor. We can probably assume that Cambridge was succeeded by Gloucester, and know that Gloucester had, as his successors, Norwich and Abel. As Cambridge was second in dignity to the chief, these barons may also be regarded as holding the second post, one after the other. Other probable successions can be suggested

1. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 433.
2. *Ib.*, p. 437.
3. Madox, from *Liberate Roll, 6 Edw. II.* (22 July, 1322).
4. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 655.
5. *Ib.*, p. 657.

by the list, but they are uncertain and not very profitable to work out. The fluctuation of the number of barons baffles any policy of fixed succession, but we may believe that Fulbourn is the fifth, or new baron, of 1323, though his patent is a fortnight earlier in date than the final issue of the ordinance which authorised his existence.

I should add that I have in the lists identified the Walden, made baron in 1324, with the Walden who acted from 1306-7, and the Lisle, made baron in 1313, with his namesake, baron between 1295 and 1299. I am, however, by no means certain of either of these identifications.

(*a*)—Chief Barons.

William of Carlton, king's clerk,	Acting justice of Jews, 1290, *R. B. Exch.*, iii, cccxxxi. Appointed chief baron, 26 July, 1303, *Lib. 31 Edw. I, m. 3*, in *Chron. Ser.* 32. Reappointed baron, 16 September, 1307, *P.* 7. Partial retirement allowed, 24 October, 1308, *P.* 139.
Thomas of Cambridge, king's clerk,	Appointed baron, 16 September, 1307, *P.* 7. Appointed chief in Carlton's absence and second in his presence, 24 Oct., 1308, *P.* 141. Replaced by Scotter, 17 July, 1310, *P.* 265. Sent to Gascony with Benstead, 2 August, 1315, *G. R.*, no. 30, m. 20.
Roger of Scotter, narrator in the common bench, layman,	Appointed to succeed Cambridge, 17 July, 1310, *P.* 265. Died before 24 January, 1311, *Inq.* v, no. 349.
Walter of Norwich, king's clerk, but knight before 2 February, 1315, (*Cl.* p. 209),	Appointed baron, 29 August, 1311, *P.* 385. Appointed chief baron, to succeed Scotter, 3 March, 1312, *P.* 433, 437. Appointed treasurer, 26 September, 1314, *P.* 178. Succeeded by Staunton, 28 September, 1314, *P.* 179.
Hervey of Staunton, king's clerk, justice of common bench, 20 September, 1314,	Appointed to succeed Norwich, 28 September, 1314, *P.* 179. Appointed chancellor of exchequer, 22 June, 1316, *P.* 479. Succeeded by Warley, 29 December, 1316, *P.* 606.

INGELARD OF WARLEY, king's clerk, formerly keeper of wardrobe,	Appointed to succeed Staunton, 29 December, 1316,	*P.* 606.
	Succeeded as chief baron by Norwich, 30 May, 1317,	*P.* 655.
WALTER OF NORWICH, knight, formerly treasurer,	Again appointed chief baron, 30 May, 1317,	*P.* 655.
	Acted for rest of reign.	
	Reappointed chief baron, 2 February, 1327,	*P.* 2.

(*b*)—BARONS.

(In order of appointment under Edward II.)

WILLIAM OF CARLTON, king's clerk,	First appointed, 5 February, 1291,	*Mem. Roll,* 18 and 19 Ed. I., m. 10 d.[1]
	Appointed, 16 September, 1307, (See list of chief barons.)	*P.* 7.
ROGER OF HEGHAM,[2] knight,	First appointed, 1 April, 1300,	*P.* 503.
	Appointed, 16 September, 1307,	*P.* 7.
	Dead, and succeeded by Foxley, 28 February, 1309,	*P.* 100.
THOMAS OF CAMBRIDGE, king's clerk,	Appointed, 16 September, 1307,	*P.* 7.
	Conditionally appointed to succeed Carlton, 24 October, 1308, (See list of chief barons.)	*P.* 141.
JOHN OF BAKEWELL,[3] knight, alderman of London, 1286-98, seneschal of Ponthieu, 1299-1305,	Appointed, 10 November, 1307,	*P.* 16.
	Killed, 25 February, 1308,	*Ann. Lond.* 153, *Ann. Paul.* 261.
Mr. JOHN OF EVERDON, king's clerk,	Appointed, 28 November, 1307,	*P.* 22.
	Admitted dean of St. Paul's, 25 September, 1323,	*Ann. Paul.* 306.

1. I owe this reference to Miss Mabel H. Mills.
2. "An advocate of distinction"; G. J. Turner, *Year Books,* iv, xxii.
3. For this rendering of "Bauquel" or "Banquel," see Beaven, *Aldermen of London,* ii, lxxi, and Stow, *Survey of London,* ii, 336-7, ed. Kingsford. Mr. Kingsford however inclines to Backwell as the form; but John's London house was later called "Bakewell" or "Blackwell" Hall. I owe the dates of his seneschalship to Miss H. Johnstone, who will give further details in her forthcoming article on Ponthieu.

PUBLIC
BRITISH

Mr. Richard of Abingdon, king's clerk,	First appointed in place of Lisle, 23 September, 1299,	*P.* 438.
	Reappointed to place held under late king, 20 January, 1308,	*P.* 44.
	Replaced by John of Ockham, 18 June, 1317,	*P.* 671.
	Dead before 3 April, 1322,	*F.* 115.
Roger of Scotter, narrator, (=king's sergeant),	Appointed, 17 July, 1310, (See list of chief barons.)	*P.* 265.
John of Foxley, knight by 2 February, 1315, (*Cl.* 209),	Appointed in place of Hegham, 28 February, 1309,	*P.* 100.
	Succeeded by Bellers, 20 July, 1322,	*P.* 182.
	Dead before 28 November, 1324,	*Inq.* vi, no. 571.
Walter of Gloucester, layman, formerly escheator S. of Trent,	Appointed, 15 May, 1311,	*P.* 348.
	Acting, 15 July, 1311,	*P.* 360.
	Deceased before 29 August, 1311,	*P.* 385.
Walter of Norwich, clerk, afterwards knight,	Appointed to succeed Gloucester, 29 August, 1311,	*P.* 385.
	Appointed chief baron, 3 March, 1312, (See list of chief barons.)	*P.* 437.
John Abel, knight,	Appointed Norwich's successor as baron, 8 March, 1312,	*P.* 437.
	Appointed escheator S. of Trent, 30 December, 1312,	
	Again appointed baron, 4 May, 1315,	*P.* 279.
	? Removed, ? 1320-1,	Foss, *Biog. Jur.*, p. 3.
	Dead, 13 September, 1322,	*Inq.* vi, no. 398.
John de Lisle,[1] ? knight,	Admitted, 20 October, 1295,	Madox, ii, 56-7.
	Superseded, as engaged on other business, 20 September, 1299,	P. 438.
	Appointed, (? to succeed Abel, now escheator) 30 January, 1313,	*P.* 526.
	? Acting until 1318-9,	Foss, 369.
	Died before 5 June, 1320,	*Cl.* 240.
Hervey of Staunton, king's clerk,	Acting, from 28 September, 1314, to 29 June, 1316, (See list of chief barons.)	

1. "An advocate of distinction"; G. J. Turner, *Year Books*, iv, xxii.

INGELARD OF WARLEY, king's clerk, formerly keeper of wardrobe,	Acting as chief baron, from 29 December, 1316. Succeeded by Norwich, 30 May, 1317, (See list of chief barons.) Continued as baron after 30 May, 1317. Succeeded by Wodehouse, 24 July, 1318, *P.* 193. Deceased before 14 October, 1318, Madox, ii, 60.
JOHN OF OCKHAM, king's clerk, formerly cofferer of wardrobe,	Appointed to succeed Abingdon, 18 June, 1317, *P.* 671. Declared sufficient and necessary, 2 January, 1319, Madox, ii, 61.
ROBERT OF WODEHOUSE, king's clerk, formerly controller of wardrobe,	Appointed to succeed Warley, 24 July, 1318, *P.* 193. Barons ordered to admit him, 14 October, 1318, Madox, ii, 60. Declared sufficient and necessary, 2 January, 1319, *Ib.* ii, 61. Acting until reappointed controller of wardrobe, 8 July, 1323, *I.R.* 203, m. 3. *Enr. Acc.* (*W. and H.*), no. 2, m. 1. Keeper of wardrobe, 1323-1328. Appointed second baron, 16 September, 1329, *P.* 383.
LAMBERT OF THRECKINGHAM, clerk, formerly justice of common bench (1299), and king's bench (1316),	Appointed, 6 August, 1320, *P.* 504. Acting, 16 February, 1322,[1] *I.R.* 199, m. 1. Acting, ? to end of reign.
WALTER OF FRISKNEY, narrator (=king's sergeant), knight by 1321, (*Cl.* 362),	Appointed, 6 August, 1320, *P.* 504. Appointed justice of bench, 9 July, 1323, *P.* 322. Succeeded as baron by Passelewe, 20 September, 1323, *P.* 338.
ROGER BELLERS, knight,	Appointed to succeed Foxley, 20 July, 1322, *P.* 182. Acted till death, 19 January, 1326, *Ann. Paul.* 310.
WILLIAM OF FULBOURN, clerk of exchequer, remembrancer, 1321-3.	Appointed, 1 June, 1323, *P.* 303. Acting until at least 6 November, 1326, *I.R.* 219.

1. G. J. Turner (*Year Books*, iv, xx), says he "never took his seat"; but he received his fee for 1321 and 1322; *I. R.*, 195, m. 5; and 199, m. 1.

Edmund of Passelewe, narrator (=king's sergeant, 1307-8), knight in 1321, (*Ann. Paul.* 291),	Appointed to succeed Friskney, 20 September, 1323, Acted to end of reign. Dead before 27 March, 1327,	*P.* 338. *Inq.* vii, no. 32.
Mr. Robert of Ayleston, king's clerk, formerly keeper of the privy seal,	Appointed, 21 May, 1324, Acted until after Easter, 1326, Appointed chancellor of exchequer, 18 July, 1326.	*P.* 415. *I. R.* 218.
William of Everdon, exchequer clerk, treasurer's remembrancer, 1311-18,	Appointed, 18 June, 1324, Acted to end of reign.	*P.* 429.
Humphrey of Walden, knight, formerly steward of chamber manors, 1320,	? First appointed, 19 October, 1306, Not reappointed after July, 1307. Appointed, 18 June, 1324,	*P.* 467. *P.* 429.
Mr. John of Redeswell, clerk,	Appointed, 1 September, 1326,	*P.* 313.

(3) Chancellors of the Exchequer.

The chancellor of the exchequer was keeper of the exchequer seal and therefore responsible for the secretarial department of that office. He received the stipend of a baron, viz., 40 marks a year, and in the records of Edward I's reign his name often precedes those of the barons. It was natural then that the chancellor should often be confused with the barons, as when *Ann. Paul.*, p. 285, calls Staunton a baron in 1319. Like all keepers of seals, the chancellor of the exchequer was almost invariably a clerk, though one holder of the office, Benstead, some years later abandoned his clergy for knighthood. Except Markenfield, all Edward II's chancellors of the exchequer were men of mark; four became bishops, three treasurers, two chancellors, and two keepers of the wardrobe. Droxford seems to have combined the office with the keepership of the wardrobe, and Stapeldon, when already treasurer, also became chancellor of the exchequer; being "appointed at the usual fee to keep the exchequer seal." This interesting combination was occasioned by Staunton's appointment as chief justice of the king's bench. He resumed the exchequer chancellorship on resigning the office of chief justice, and abandoned it to become chief justice of common

pleas. It seems then that this post was as dignified as a baronship of the exchequer, or the chief justiceship of either bench. Under the Tudors its scope was considerably enlarged, but its modern position, as the acting head of the ministry of finance, only begins after the treasurership was permanently put into commission.

JOHN OF BENSTEAD, king's clerk, formerly controller of the wardrobe,	Appointed, 25 September, 1305,	*P.* 378.
JOHN OF SANDALL, king's clerk,	Appointed, 7 August, 1307,	*P.* 6.
JOHN OF DROXFORD, king's clerk, keeper of the wardrobe,	Appointed, 20 May, 1308,	*P.* 72.
JOHN OF MARKENFIELD, king's clerk,	Appointed, 5 July, 1310,	*P.* 235.
JOHN OF HOTHAM, king's clerk,	Appointed, 13 December, 1312,	*P.* 515.
HERVEY OF STAUNTON, clerk, baron of the exchequer,	Appointed, 22 June, 1316,	*P.* 479.
WALTER OF STAPELDON, bishop of Exeter, treasurer,	Appointed, 27 September, 1323,	*P.* 339, 353.
HERVEY OF STAUNTON, again,	Appointed, 26 March, 1324,	*P.* 400.
Mr. ROBERT OF AYLESTON, king's clerk, formerly baron of the exchequer,	Appointed, 18 July, 1326,	*P.* 299.

(4) REMEMBRANCERS OF THE EXCHEQUER.

Already under Edward I, the two remembrancers of the exchequer are sometimes distinguished as the king's and treasurer's remembrancers respectively.[1] Under Edward II the distinction is more often made, though it remained the exception.[2] The normal description of either remem-

1. Madox, ii, 266.
2. Madox, ii, 269, quotes the admission, on 11 Oct., 1311, of Everdon, "ad officium rememoratoris thesaurarii in scaccario"; Hall, *Antiquities of Exchequer*, p. 86, quotes a good instance later in the reign.

brancer was still *unus rememoratorum de scaccario*. There is no doubt whatever as to the separation of the two offices, and as to the persons designated to each. The king's remembrancers were appointed by patent, so that their succession can be easily established by the enrolments in the patent roll. As in each case but one[1] the name of the outgoing as well as of the ingoing officer is mentioned in the patent, there is a double security for the order of appointments to this post. The treasurer's remembrancer seems, as was natural, to have been the treasurer's own nominee. By exception, however, the appointment of one treasurer's remembrancer, Hugh of Nottingham, is recorded on the close roll soon after Edward II's accession.[2] This personage never seems to have acted, for Walter Reynolds preferred to keep on Walter of Norwich, the remembrancer of his predecessor Langton. The treasurer's remembrancer was, however, paid by the crown. Accordingly we can trace the succession of these officers by the enrolments of the payments of their wages in the issue rolls.

The comparative dignity of the two remembrancers is not clear. Their "fee" was different, for the king's remembrancer had, as a normal wage, £20 a year,[3] while

1. The one exception is that of William of Brocklesby, whose patent does not mention his predecessor, Robert of Nottingham. But Brocklesby had been Nottingham's personal clerk, *I. R.*, 218, m. 9, and the holder of the other remembrancership still continued in office, so that there is no doubt as to the succession.

2. *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 2, records this, along with the reappointment of John of Kirkby, king's remembrancer under Edward I. As Walter of Norwich was Kirkby's colleague under the old king, it looks as if Edward II made an attempt to claim for himself the appointment of treasurer's remembrancer, and preferred not to continue in office a man who had clearly been Walter Langton's confidential subordinate. But the case is not very simple, for a little earlier, on 20 Sept., the king issued an order, preserved on the memoranda roll, Madox, ii, 270, directing Hugh of Nottingham to go at once to the exchequer, "omnibus aliis rebus prætermissis," as the king wishes him to have the custody of the great rolls of the exchequer during pleasure. This is certainly the office that Nottingham actually entered upon, for during the first years of Edward II he is regularly receiving wages as one of the three scribes of the exchequer; *I. R.*, 142, 144, 146, etc. Compare his position with that held later by William of Everdon, who, after being a remembrancer for some years, became a simple scribe, and was styled "engrosser and keeper of the great roll." I therefore assume that Norwich was treasurer's remembrancer from Edward II's accession until 1311. I cannot help guessing that Reynolds resented Edward's interference with his interests, and preferred to keep Norwich as his remembrancer.

3. This could be supplemented. See, for instance, *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 632, an additional grant of £20 to Everdon for long service.

his colleague took 40 marks, that is £26 13s. 4d. Apparently, however, the former sum was a personal wage, while the latter was *ad sustentacionem suam et clericorum suorum secum in officio illo existencium*.[1] As one of the treasurer's remembrancers had five clerks acting under him at the same time,[2] it is unlikely that the post was really so good a one as the king's remembrancership. This is also suggested by the promotion of Robert of Nottingham, treasurer's remembrancer from 1311 to 1321, to the king's remembrancership in 1322. Perhaps the additional allowance of £5 a term, always given to the treasurer's remembrancer for writing the summonses of the exchequer, was by way of a set-off to the burden imposed upon him of sustaining a large staff of subordinates. It clearly suggests, however, that harder work, perhaps more mechanical duties, fell to the lot of the treasurer's remembrancer. The ultimate differentiation of the two offices, a result of Stapeldon's exchequer ordinances, had not yet been worked out in our reign.

Both remembrancers were always clerks, and few holders of the office attained a high position. Walter of Norwich is the chief exception in this reign. Of the rest, Adam of Lymbergh is the best known. Some wardrobe officers became remembrancers, as, for instance, Walter Bedwyn, the cofferer of Edward I's later years. The fortunate remembrancer often became a baron of the exchequer. It is a further suggestion of the more responsible duties of the treasurer's remembrancer at this period, that the holders of this office obtained their promotion to be a baron, more often and more quickly than did the king's remembrancers. Thus three treasurer's remembrancers—Norwich, Everdon and Fulbourn—became barons under Edward II, while of the three remembrancers who had to wait until the next reign for promotion—Nottingham, Coshall, and Lymbergh —only one, Coshall, was treasurer's remembrancer. Another treasurer's remembrancer, John Travers, was directly promoted at this time to the office of constable of Bordeaux, the chief financial minister of Gascony. On the other hand the treasurer's remembrancer, William of Everdon, went back to be a simple exchequer clerk, possibly as a

1. *I. R.*, 187, m. 4, is one of innumerable instances.
2. *I. R.*, 195, m. 3, records the payment of Robert of Nottingham's fee in 1321, to John of Norwich, and four other clerks of his, at a time when Robert was not at court.

result of the political changes in the autumn of 1318. He was later engrosser and keeper of the great roll, that is, one of the three scribes. He was, however, once more baron in 1323, and was *locum tenens* of the treasurer in 1324. Hugh of Nottingham, irregularly nominated to the treasurer's remembrancership in 1307, also fell back on this office of keeper and engrosser of the pipe roll. It hardly looks as if the remembrancers were much higher in dignity than the ordinary exchequer clerks.

(*a*)—King's Remembrancers.

John of Kirkby, king's clerk,	Admitted, 11 November, 1293, Reappointed, 26 September, 1307, Deceased before 1 March, 1308,	Madox, ii, 267. *Cl.* 2. Madox, ii, 267.
Walter of Bedwyn, king's clerk, formerly cofferer of the wardrobe,	Appointed, 1 March, 1308,	*Ib.*
John of Markenfield, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1 March, 1310,	*P.* 220.
John of Cockermouth, king's clerk,	Appointed, 2 August, 1310,	*P.* 273.
Adam of Lymbergh, king's clerk,	Appointed, 8 October, 1311,	*P.* 392.
Robert of Nottingham,[1] king's clerk,	Appointed, 21 June, 1322,	*P.* 137.
William of Brocklesby, king's clerk,	Appointed, 2 October, 1326,	*P.* 322.

(*b*)—Treasurer's Remembrancers.

Walter of Norwich,[2] king's clerk,	Acting under Edward I, Acting from 8 July, 1307, to 29 September, 1311,	*I.R.* 146, m. 2. *Ib.* m. 8. *Ib.* 157, m. 3.
William of Everdon, king's clerk,	Acting from 11 October, 1311, to 29 September, 1318,	Madox, ii, 269. *I.R.* 159, m. 2. *Ib.* 184.
Robert of Nottingham, king's clerk,	Acting from 30 September, 1318, to 29 September, 1321,	*Ib.* 186, m. 3. *Ib.* 195, m. 8.

1. Gervase of Clifton was *locum tenens* for Nottingham between 14 Aug. and 27 Sept., 1325; *I. R.*, 218, m. 19.

2. For the abortive appointment of Hugh of Nottingham, scribe of the exchequer, on 26 Sept., 1307; see above, p. 346.

William of Fulbourn, king's clerk,	Acting from 30 September, 1321,	*I.R.* 196, m. 4.
	to 1 June, 1323,	*Ib.* 205.
John Travers, king's clerk,	Acting from 1 June, 1323,	*Ib.*
	to 29 September, 1324,	*Ib.* 213.
William of Coshall, king's clerk,	Acting from 30 September, 1324,	*Ib.* 213.
	to at least 6 Nov., 1326, or to either 9 Dec., 1326, or 3 Feb., 1327.[1]	*Ib.* 219.

(5) Chamberlains of the Receipt.

The two chamberlains of the exchequer were hereditary magnates who held the office in fee. In the twelfth century these posts were in the hands of the families of Fitzgerald and Malduit. The Fitzgerald chamberlainship passed by marriage to the earls of Devon of the house of Redvers, and finally lapsed to the crown with the great Fors-Redvers inheritance in 1293, on the death of the countess Isabella. The other chamberlainship was still held under Edward II in fee by the Beauchamp earls of Warwick, the heirs of the Malduits. Dignitaries so great as the hereditary chamberlains naturally appointed deputies to discharge the duties of their office. In the thirteenth century, separate deputy chamberlains for the receipt, and for the exchequer of accounts, seem to have been regularly nominated by the chamberlains in fee. Under Edward II, however, I find little trace of the chamberlains of the upper exchequer. The only conspicuous officers of the exchequer now bearing this name are the deputy chamberlains of the receipt. They are often described as "chamberlains of the exchequer," and sometimes even as "the king's chamberlains," though that was precisely the title of the chamberlain, such as Despenser, who was at the head of the king's chamber.

Under Edward II, the deputies to the sometime Fitzgerald chamberlainship, were appointed by the crown by patent, and their succession is easy to establish from the patent roll. Up to 1315, earl Guy of Warwick continued to nominate the second chamberlain, and memoranda prefixed to the issue rolls testify to his admission to office. Moreover the wages of both chamberlains were paid by

1. The limit of Coshall's office is apparently the appointment on 9 Dec., 1326, of Hugh of Colwick, "ad summoniciones regis de scaccario scribendas." He began office on "3 Feb. last," that is apparently 3 Feb., 1327; *I. R.*, 220. Neither Coshall nor any successor appear in Stratford's Issue Roll (220), which begins on 20 Nov., 1326. He may therefore have gone out of office then.

the crown and recorded in the issue rolls, so that not only the date of appointment, but the duration of each term of office, can be easily ascertained. When earl Guy died in 1315, his son was a minor, and the custody of the Warwick estates remained in the king's hands for the rest of our reign. It follows that for the last eleven years of the reign, both chamberlains were appointed by patent.

The early chamberlains of the exchequer were knights, who kept their accounts in tallies. From the early thirteenth century, the elaboration of the enrolments, and of the system of accounting in the receipt, made it necessary that the chamberlains should have an education such as knights then seldom enjoyed. Accordingly, so early as 1240-1, it had been found desirable to admit to the office suitable persons who were not knights.[1] By the time of Edward II, the original conception of the office had become so utterly changed, that every chamberlain of the reign was a clerk, and engaged upon strictly clerical duties. The special function of the chamberlain now was to act as controller to the treasurer in the office of the receipt.[2] Accordingly, three copies were made of each issue and receipt roll, for one of which the treasurer and each of the two chamberlains were severally responsible. Writs addressed to the receipt were normally addressed to the treasurer and chamberlains, just as writs to the upper exchequer were generally addressed to the treasurer and barons. The chamberlains then were jointly second in command over the receipt, ranking immediately after the treasurer.

(*a*)—The former Fitzgerald-Redvers Chamberlainship.

William of Brickhill, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1298,	Madox, ii, 301.
Henry of Ludgershall, king's clerk,	Appointed, 23 August, 1307,	*P.* 7.
	Retired sick, 28 February, 1312,	Madox, ii, 301.
Mr. John of Percy, king's clerk,	Appointed, 16 March, 1312,	*P.* 442.
	Ordered to abandon office, 27 March, 1312,	*P.* 447

1. Madox, ii, 295.

2. This position is well brought out by the phrase in *I. R.*, 203, m. 1, recording the admission to office of John Langton as chamberlain in 1323, "et die lune proximo sequente, videlicet secundo die mensis Maii, incepit primo idem Johannes contrarotulare receptum et exitum scaccarii."

Richard of Cromwell, king's clerk,	Appointed, 27 March, 1312,	*P.* 447.
Mr. James of Spain, clerk, king's kinsman,	Appointed, 30 January, 1317,	*P.* 614.
John of Langton, king's clerk,	Appointed to act, 6 April, 1323, Began to act, 2 May, 1323,	*P.* 269. *I.R.* 203, m. 1.

(*b*)—The Malduit-Beauchamp Chamberlainship.

William of Pershore, clerk,	Died before 7 April, 1309,	*I.R.* 146, m. 1.
Peter le Blunt, clerk,	Admitted, 7 April, 1308, Ceased to act, 17 May, 1315,	*Ib.*, m. 1. *I.R.* 174.
Mr. John Golafre,	Appointed by earl, Began to act, 18 May, 1315.	*Ib.*
Mr. William of Maldon, king's clerk,	Appointed by king, September, 1315,	*P.* 345.
John Warin, king's clerk,	Appointed by king, 20 January, 1326,	*P.* 212.

C.—OFFICERS OF THE WARDROBE AND HOUSEHOLD.

Officers of the wardrobe and household were generally appointed by the king by word of mouth (*oretenus*). It is therefore exceptional to find any record of their appointment or removal from office. The only household place of any dignity habitually filled up by letters patent, was the keepership of the great wardrobe, the least important post of all. There is, therefore, no difficulty in determining the list of holders of this office. It is also fairly easy to ascertain the succession of the keepers and controllers of the wardrobe, since the periods of accounts for which they were severally responsible are always exactly recorded in their wardrobe accounts. In other cases all that can be done is to ascertain the dates at which each officer acts for the first and the last time. By Edward II's reign the custom had fortunately grown up of describing such officers by their official title in records. The task is therefore less impossible than in the thirteenth century when official designations are only exceptionally mentioned. Such appearances may occur in almost any record, but the most useful are the wardrobe accounts where entries of

payments made to the household staff, notably payments for fees and robes, are constantly appearing. Unfortunately, there are not for a large part of this reign wardrobe accounts which enter enough into particularities to afford such precise information. Nevertheless there is sufficient detail to enable us to present here a rough list of cofferers of the wardrobe, and keepers of the privy seal. It would not be impossible also to collect most of the names of the subordinate clerks of the wardrobe and privy seal.

On the whole the difficulty of drawing up lists of knightly officers of the household is greater than is the case with the clerks of the wardrobe. I have therefore only attempted to do so in the case of the stewards of the household, and the king's chamberlains. The latter case is particularly troublesome, since the chamberlains, important though they were, are very seldom designated by their official titles.[1] From this follows the difficulty already discussed in determining whether Gaveston was ever chamberlain, and the great uncertainty when Charlton entered upon that office. Later, difficulties are lessened by the fact that Charlton and the younger Despenser held the charge in succession for nearly the whole of Edward II's reign.

It was otherwise in the case of the stewardship of the household, which was held by eleven different knights within twenty years. There is fortunately a fairly easy way of obtaining a rough list of stewards by working through the list of witnesses to charters recorded in the charter rolls. By the fourteenth century it had become usual for a large proportion of the royal charters, issued from the chancery, to be attested by the steward of the household. Unluckily the published calendar of charter rolls has up to the present excluded all lists of witnesses, so that the enquirer has to have recourse to the charter rolls themselves. From these, however, a good working list can be obtained. Even when supplemented from other sources, there remain occasional gaps, and in more than one case the stewards seem to overlap each other. These overlappings are of no great moment, and are probably due to carelessness, and especially to a habit of the chancery clerks of putting down names without much regard as to whether their bearers were actually present or not. In

1. This was the case continuously from early Norman times; Davis, *Regesta Regum Anglo-Normannorum*, i, xxv.

many cases they are probably due to the few days' delay between appointment and entering on office.

The most difficult case in the reign is that of Hugh Audley. His appointment was due to the circumstance that Sir Edmund Mauley was compelled to answer in the steward's court an accusation of complicity in a forgery of the privy seal. As Mauley could not preside as steward over his own trial, it was necessary to remove him from office, pending these proceedings. Accordingly we find Audley presiding as steward over the court, which first met on 27 October 1312, and concluded its proceedings before 8 February 1313.[1] Audley never attested a charter as steward, and as Mauley attested one on 2 November, after Audley's appointment, it looks as if Audley had simply been appointed steward to preside over the tribunal which tried his predecessor. Mauley, on his acquittal, at once resumed his functions as steward.

(1). Lay Officers of the Household.

(*a*)—Stewards of the Household.

Miles of Stapleton,	Acting, 9 August, 1307, *Ch. R.* 1 Ed. II, m. 10, no. 32.
	Acting, 22 November, 1307, *Ib.*, m. 8, no. 21.
Robert FitzPayn,	Acting, 11 March, 1308, *Ib.*, m. 8, no. 15.
	Acting, 14 December, 1310, *Ib.*, 4 Ed. II, m. 15, no. 50.
Edmund of Mauley,	Acting, 28 December, 1310, *Ib.*, 4 Ed. II, m. 15, no. 49.
	Acting, 4 October, 1312, *Ib.*, 6 Ed. II, m. 25, nos. 56-5.
	Acting, 2 November, 1312,[2] *Ib.*, m. 25, no. 54.
Hugh of Audley, senior,	Acting, 27 October, 1312, *Foedera*, ii, 200.
Edmund of Mauley,	Acting, 11 February, 1313,[2] *Ch. R.* 6 Ed. II, m. 14, no. 28.
	Killed, 24 June, 1314, Brid. 46, *Ann. Lond.* 231.

1. *Foedera*, ii, 200-1.
2. There are no attestations of charters by any person described as "steward" between 2 Nov., 1312, and 11 Feb., 1313.

JOHN CROMWELL,	Acting, 17 July, 1314, *Ch. R.* 8 Ed. II, m. 22, no. 58.[1]
	Acting, 20 November, 1316, *Ib.*, 10 Ed. II, m. 15, no. 41.
WILLIAM OF MONTAGU,	Acting, 18 November, 1316, *Cl.* 441.
	Acting, 3 November, 1318, *Ch. R.* 12 Ed. II, m. 16, no. 65.
BARTHOLOMEW OF BADLESMERE,	Appointed, 20 October, 1318, Cole, *Records*, p. 3.
	Acting, 14 June, 1321, *Ch. R.* 14 Ed. II, m. 1, no. 2.
GILBERT PECCHÉ,	Acting, 14 January, 1322, *Ch. R.* 15 Ed. II, m. 8, no. 27.
	Acting, 30 April, 1322, *Ib.*, m. 5, no. 14.
SIMON OF DRYBY, senior,	Acting, 8 May, 1322, *Ib.*, m. 4, no. 6.
	Acting, 14 July, 1322,[2] *Ib.*, 16 Ed. II, m. 7, no. 30.
RICHARD OF AMORY,	Acting, 11 July, 1322, *Ib.*, m. 6, no. 18.
	Acting, 11 April, 1325, *Ib.*, 18 Ed. II, m. 2, no. 8.
THOMAS LE BLOUNT,	Acting, 14 May, 1325, *Ib.*, m. 2, no. 7.
	Resigned, 20 January, 1327, Geoffrey le Baker, p. 28.

(*b*)—KING'S CHAMBERLAINS.

JOHN OF CHARLTON,	Possibly acting before October, 1311, when barons petitioned for his removal from his office (office not specified) and court, *Ann. Lond.* 200.
	Acting, April, 1313, *MS. Cotton, Nero*, c. viii, f. 91 d, 93.
	Acting, 25 January, 1314, *F.* 188.
	Acting, 19 April, 1318, *P.* 133.
	Had ceased to act before 20 October, 1318.

1. No charters were issued between 7 June, 1314, when Edward II entered Scotland, and 17 July, 1314, when the king had returned to York, the chancery not accompanying him on the Bannockburn campaign.

2. At that date, at York, Dryby also witnessed a release as "the king's hospicer"; *Cl.*, 576. This is plainly a synonym for steward, but his successor was already in office.

Hugh le Despenser, junior,	Appointment renewed in parliament, 20 October, 1318, Cole, *Records*, p. 4. Continued to act, save during his exile in 1321, until the end of the reign, 1326.

(2) Chief Clerks of the Wardrobe.

The lists of keepers and controllers of the wardrobe, and that of the keepers of the great wardrobe, are, with some corrections, taken from lists published by me in the *English Historical Review*, xxiv, 499—505, where the authorities are given. To these I have now added somewhat tentative lists of cofferers of the wardrobe and keepers of the privy seal. It would not be hard to supplement these by lists of the *ostiarii*, the *subostiarii*, and the other subordinate wardrobe clerks, including the four clerks who wrote for the privy seal.

(*a*)—Keepers or Treasurers of the Wardrobe.

John of Benstead,	From 8 July, 1307, to 7 July, 1308.
John of Droxford,	From 8 July, 1308, to 7 July, 1309.
Ingelard of Warley,	From 8 July, 1309, to 30 November, 1314.
William of Melton,	From 1 December, 1314, to 31 January, 1316.
Roger of Northburgh,	From 1 February, 1316, to 29 April, 1322.
Roger of Waltham,	From 1 May, 1322, to 19 October, 1323.
Robert of Wodehouse,	From 20 October, 1323, to 24 January, 1327.

(*b*)—Controllers of the Wardrobe.

William of Melton,	From 8 July, 1307, to 30 November, 1314.
Robert of Wodehouse,	From 1 December, 1314, to 7 July, 1316.
Mr. Thomas of Charlton,	From 7 July, 1316, to 7 July, 1318.
Gilbert of Wigton,	From 7 July, 1318, to 7 July, 1320.
Mr. Robert of Baldock,	From 7 July, 1320, to 8 July, 1323.
Robert of Wodehouse, again,	From 8 July, 1323, to 19 October, 1323.
Robert of Holden,	From 20 October, 1323, to 1 November, 1326.
Nicholas of Huggate,	From 1 November, 1326, to 24 January, 1327.

(*c*)—Cofferers of the Wardrobe.

Peter of Collingbourn,	Acting, 8 July, 1307, to 7 July, 1308, *Exch. Accts., K. R.* 373/15, p. 5.
John of Ockham,	Acting, 8 July, 1308, to 7 July, 1309, *Ib.* 373/19, cf. *I.R.* 143.
Robert of Wodehouse,	Acting, from 8 July, 1309, to ? 7 July, 1311, *Cl.* 115.
John of Ockham,	Acting, 8 July, 1311, to ? 28 September, 1314, Cole, pp. 27, 42.
Nicholas of Huggate,	Acting, 29 September, 1314, to 28 September, 1315, *I. R.* 172.
Robert of Wodehouse,	Acting, 12 April, 1317, to 19 June, 1318, *Ib.* 180, 181, 184.
Richard of Ferriby,	Acting, 19 January, 1320, *Ib.* 189, m. 3. Acting, 19 October, 1323, *MS. Stowe*, no. 553, f. 121.

The household ordinance of June, 1323 (p. 315 above), ordered that an additional cofferer should be appointed to act after 8 July, 1323, to lessen the delays caused by the diffuseness of the accounts of past years, which had not yet been passed by the exchequer. I have failed to discover the name of this officer.

(*d*)—Keepers of the Privy Seal.

William of Melton,	Acting, 1 October, 1307, *Cl.* 42.

Melton, like his immediate predecessors, kept the privy seal as part of his work as controller, and therefore probably from 8 July, 1307, to some time after October, 1311, when the ordainers insisted upon the appointment of a separate keeper.

Roger of Northburgh,	The first independent keeper, possibly acting from March, 1312. Acting, November, 1312, to May, 1313, *Exch. Accts., K. R.* 375/8, ff. 8, 11. Captured with seal at Bannockburn, 24 June, 1314, *Cont. Trivet.* 14. Acting, 7 January, 1316, *Exch. Accts., K. R.* 376/7, f. 11d. Appointed keeper of wardrobe, 1 February, 1316.

Mr. Thomas of Charlton,	Appointed controller, 7 July, 1316, and, contrary to ordinances, combining keepership with controllership until 7 July, 1318.	
	Described as keeper, 15 November, 1316,	*Cl.* 440.
	Still keeper, 13 May, 1318,	*Chan. War.* file 1328, no. 4685.
	Probably continued as keeper, July to October, 1318.	
	Appointment renewed in parliament, October, 1318,	Cole, *Records,* 4.
Mr. Robert of Baldock,	Appointed keeper, 27 January, 1320,	*MS. Ad.,* 17,362, f. 9d.
	Also appointed controller, 7 July, 1320.	
	Appointed chancellor, 20 August, 1323.	
	(Baldock was the last person to combine the controllership and the keepership.)	
Mr. Robert of Ayleston,	Acting, 17 November, 1323,	*Cl.* 46.
	Acting, 9 March, 1324,	*Parl. Writs* ii, ii, Ap ., 248.
William of Airmyn, chancery clerk,	Acting, 8 August, 1324,	*Cl.* 306.
Mr. Henry of Cliff, chancery clerk,	Acting, 2 April, 1325,	*Foedera,* ii, 596.
William of Herlaston, chancery clerk,	Acting, ? 1325-6,	*Cl.* 1327—30, p. 291, *Rot. Parl.* ii, 383.
Robert of Wyvill, clerk of queen Isabella,	Acting, 26 October to 20 November, 1326,	*Cl.* 655.

(*e*)—Keepers of the Great Wardrobe.

Ralph of Stokes,	From 26 August, 1307.
William of Cusance,	From 11 September, 1320.
Gilbert of Wigton,	From 20 December, 1321.
Thomas of Ousefleet,	From 26 August, 1323.

D.—MISCELLANEOUS OFFICERS.

(1) Justices and Keepers of the Forest.

Up to the early thirteenth century, there was normally one chief forest official, the *capitalis forestarius* of the forest

charter of 1217, cap. 16. In 1238, however, a permanent division of the control into two was effected, and separate justices were assigned to the forest north and south of Trent. They were rarely officially described in these terms, though there are, in our period, some instances of this being done, when, for example, Ralph of Monthermer, is called in the roll of the York parliament of 1318, *gardien de la forest de la Trente devers le south.*[1] The usual official practice was the perplexing one of describing the justices as acting *ultra* or *citra Trentam*, according to the position of the place, at which the king happened to be staying, when he wrote the letter in which they were so described. Thus if the king or chancery were in Yorkshire, the justice *citra Trentam* would be the official in charge of the northern forests, while if the court were at London, *citra Trentam* would indicate the justice governing the southern forests.

The justice of the forest had more administrative than judicial functions, for though he was commonly included with other justices in judicial commissions for the forest, he was never prominent among them, and often did not act at all. It was not, however, the desire to make the name fit the office that caused the change in the official designation of these functionaries in 1311. It was rather the influence of the ordinances which enumerated, among the ministers to be appointed by the counsel and consent of the baronage in parliament, *un chief gardein de ses forestes decea Trente et un autre dela Trente.*[2] The term "keeper" suggested a more modest and restricted function than that of justice, and found, perhaps, more favour in the barons' eyes by reason of their long-standing difficulties with Edward I, in reference to the delimitation and the administration of the forests. Even before the ordinances, there was a tendency in this direction, for on 1 October 1310, Gaveston was appointed "to the keeping of the office of justice of the forest," and his subordinate, Hotham, is described after the ordinances as "acting keeper of the said forest." Similarly, Hugh le Despenser, the elder, appointed to "the office of justice of the forest" in March 1308, is described at the time of his removal from office, on 2 December 1311, as "late keeper of the said forest." It should be noted that the two first definite appointments to

1. Cole's *Records*, p. 3.
2. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 282.

keeperships, those in favour of Robert Fitzpayn and Henry Percy, both took place on the same day, 2 December 1311, a few weeks after the ordinances had been promulgated. The record of Percy's appointment makes it certain that this change was agreeable to the ordainers. The title of justice was only revived in 1397, by which period the office had become little more than formal. Even Hugh le Despenser, in 1312 and 1324, was called keeper only. See for complete list of forest justices south of Trent, and valuable remarks on the office, Mr. G. J. Turner's paper in *Eng. Hist. Rev.* xviii, 112—116. I must also refer to Mr. Turner's important *Select pleas of the forest* (Selden Soc. 1901), and especially to his introduction, pp. xiv—xvi.

The justice or keeper of the forest had great authority. The tyrannical proceedings of Hugh le Despenser, when charged with the office, excited bitter complaints. The office was always held by laymen of position, knights, barons, and even earls. The acting deputy might be a clerk, as the case of Hotham shews, but William of Claydon, deputy for earls Aymer and Hugh in succession, was a knight.[1] Only a few of the accounts of the keepers of the forest are extant for this period. Among them are those of keepers Cromwell and Scrope for the northern forests for the whole period of their office. None have been printed. The wage of the keeper of the southern forest was the large one of £100 per annum; his northern colleague only received 100 marks.

(*a*)—Justices and Keepers of the Forest, North of Trent.

Robert of Clifford,	Appointed, 22 August, 1297,	*P.* 306.
	Re-appointed, 18 August, 1307,	*F.* 2.
	Surrendered, 12 March, 1308,	*F.* 17.
John of Seagrave, the elder,	Appointed, 12 March, 1308,	*F.* 17.
	Surrendered before 1 October, 1310,	*F.* 73.
Peter of Gaveston, earl of Cornwall,	Appointed for life, 1 October, 1310,	*F.* 73.
John of Hotham, king's clerk, acting keeper,	Surrendered, 2 December, 1311,	*F.* 117.
Henry of Percy, keeper,	Appointed, 2 December, 1311, "And afterwards the ordainers consented to the aforesaid."	*F.* 116.

1. *C. P. R., 1327-30*, p. 518.

John of Seagrave, the elder,	Appointed, 4 September, 1312,	*F.* 144.
	Surrendered, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 230.
Robert of Umfraville, earl of Angus,	Appointed, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 230.
	Surrendered, 23 November, 1316,	*F.* 311.
John of Cromwell,	Appointed, 23 November, 1316,	*F.* 311.
	Surrendered, 10 September, 1323,	*F.* 238.
Henry le Scrope,	Appointed, 10 September, 1323,	*F.* 238.
	Acting, 7 April, 1326,	*P.* 256.
John of Cromwell,	Acting again, 10 December, 1326,	*Cl.* 62.

(*b*)—Justices and Keepers of the Forest, South of Trent.

Hugh le Despenser, the elder,	Appointed, 12 February, 1297,	*F.* 382.
	Surrendered, 18 August, 1307,	*F.* 1.
Payn Tibotot,	Appointed, 18 August, 1307,	*F.* 1.
	Surrendered, 16 March, 1308,	*F.* 19.
Hugh le Despenser, again as justice,	Appointed, 16 March, 1308,	*F.* 18.
	Surrendered keepership, 2 December, 1311,	*F.* 116.
	Office resumed by king "in compliance with the ordinances,"	*P.* 464.
Robert Fitzpayn,	Appointed keeper, 2 December, 1311,	*F.* 116.
	Surrendered, 14 June, 1312,	*P.* 464.
Hugh le Despenser, again, but now as keeper,	Re-appointed, 14 June, 1312,	*P.* 464.
	Surrendered, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 230.
Ralph of Monthermer,	Appointed, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 230.
	Surrendered, 18 May, 1320,	*F.* 23.
Aymer de Valence, earl of Pembroke,	Appointed, 18 May, 1320, "to keep until the next parliament,"	*F.* 23.
	Appointed, 13 October, 1320, "by king in full parliament by assent of the magnates there,"	*F.* 35.
	Died in office, 23 June, 1324.	
William of Claydon,	Lieutenant of earl Aymer, Surrendered, 27 June, 1324,	*F.* 287.
Hugh le Despenser, earl of Winchester, again,	Appointed for life, 27 June, 1324,	*F.* 287.
William of Claydon, knight,	Lieutenant keeper, Surrendered, 10 November, 1326,	*F.* 423.
Thomas Wake, king's kinsman,	Appointed, 10 November, 1326,	*F.* 423.

(2) Escheators.

The escheators, like the justices of the forest, were officially designated as acting *citra*, or *ultra Trentam*, according to the place at which the chancery or court was sitting at the time of the letter in which they were so described. The control exercised by the escheators over the sheriffs made them in a sense representatives of the central power in the various local districts. Though not strictly officers of the exchequer, they necessarily stood, like the sheriffs, in a specially close relation to it. The authority of the escheators was at all times looked upon with great suspicion by the baronage, since their office of safeguarding the interests of the crown as supreme lord, could easily be diverted into claiming as escheats land for which there was a natural heir, and in many other ways. Accordingly, from the provisions of Oxford onwards,[1] the barons took great pains to secure the appointment of good escheators. The ordinances of 1311, therefore, provided that the two escheators should be appointed in parliament. The earliest escheators' accounts surviving begin in 1258. Those for the reign of Edward II are tolerably complete.[2]

In 1258 the system of two escheators, one for the north and one for the south, was already in existence, and it was recognised by the ordinances in 1311. It was therefore, perhaps, part of the revolt of the Despensers from baronial tradition that in 1323 the two escheators were superseded by eight escheators, appointed to various groups of counties. The crucial date for this change is 29 November 1323, when the then escheators, Burgh and Walwayn, surrendered a large number of the counties entrusted to them, and remained in office as escheators for a portion of their earlier spheres. Walwayn resigned all save four counties, and Burgh three of his seven shires. Six new escheators were then appointed in addition to the two old ones. The old escheators soon disappeared altogether from office, for Walwayn gave up what was left to him on 10 January 1324, and Burgh surrendered his remaining shires in June 1324, so that by the summer of 1324, the new system was worked by entirely new hands. In the new arrangements the old dividing line of the Trent was ignored. One of the new escheatries took from the

1. *Select Charters*, p. 391, "bons eschaeturs seient mis."
2. *P. R. O. Lists and Indexes, Foreign Enrolled Accounts*, p. 265.

northern province Nottingham, Derby and Lancaster, and from the southern, Warwick and Leicester.[1] It is curious that this rearrangement should seem to have been made so as to include shires in which the estates of the house of Lancaster, then in the king's hands, were specially important. The fees assigned to three of the new escheators, the first three groups in our list, were fixed at 20 marks a year. The other five new escheators each received £10.

(*a*)—Escheators North of Trent, 1307–1323.

Richard Oysel, merchant, bailiff of Holderness,	Appointed, 19 April, 1305, Died before 2 October, 1308,	*F.* 515. *Cl.* 72.
Roger le Savage, knight,	Appointed, 24 November, 1307, Surrendered, 23 May, 1308.	*F.* 23 and *P.* 19.
Gerard Salvayn,[2] knight, of Harswell, Yorks,	Appointed, 23 May, 1308, Surrendered, 10 December, 1309,	*F.* 22. *F.* 52.
John of Hotham, king's clerk, afterwards bishop of Ely,	Appointed, 10 December, 1309, Surrendered, 3 February, 1313,	*F.* 52. *F.* 162.
John of Evre,[3] knight, of Cleveland,	Appointed, 3 February, 1313, Surrendered, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 162. *F.* 232.
Robert of Clitheroe, clerk,	Appointed, 19 February, 1315, Surrendered, 27 September, 1316,	*F.* 232. *F.* 301.
Robert of Sapey, king's yeoman, 1308, *P.* 52, lord of Huntley, Glos., 1326, *Inq.* 466.	Appointed, 27 September, 1316, Surrendered, 25 November, 1318,	*F.* 301. *F.* 381.
Mr. Ralph of Crophill, clerk,	Appointed, 25 November, 1318, Surrendered, 29 January, 1320,	*F.* 380. *F.* 15.
Gilbert of Stapleton, king's clerk,	Appointed, 29 January, 1320, Died in office, before 7 August, 1321,	*F.* 15. *F.* 66.

1. *Cal. Fine Rolls, 1319-27*, pp. 251-2.
2. In 1311 the ordainers petitioned that Salvayn should be deprived of all office and removed from court; *Ann. London*, p. 200.
3. Evre is apparently Iver, Bucks.

THOMAS OF BURGH, king's clerk,	Appointed, 25 August, 1321,	*F.* 69.
	Surrendered, Notts, Derby, and Lancashire, 29 November, 1323,	*F.* 252.
	Surrendered, Yorkshire, Northumberland, Cumberland and Westmorland, 13 June, 1324,	*F.* 283.

(*b*)—ESCHEATORS SOUTH OF TRENT, 1307–1323.

WALTER OF GLOUCESTER,	Appointed, 26 May, 1298,	*F.* 400.
	Re-appointed, 8 November, 1307,	*F.* 7.
	Surrendered, 26 April, 1311,	*F.* 89.
ROGER OF WELLESWORTH, king's clerk,	Appointed, 26 April, 1311,	*F.* 89.
	Surrendered, 30 December, 1312,	*F.* 158.
JOHN ABEL, knight,	Appointed, 30 December, 1312,	*F.* 158.
	Surrendered, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 232.
Mr. JOHN WALWAYN, king's clerk,	Appointed, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 232.
	Surrendered, 6 July, 1318,	*F.* 365.
Mr. RICHARD OF CLARE, king's clerk,	Appointed, 6 July, 1318,	*F.* 365.
	Surrendered, 22 February, 1320,	*F.* 16.
RICHARD OF RODNEY,	Appointed, 22 February, 1320,	*F.* 16.
	Surrendered, 14 November, 1321,	*F.* 78.
Mr. JOHN WALWAYN, clerk, formerly treasurer of exchequer,	Appointed, 14 November, 1321,	*F.* 78.
	Surrendered most of counties, 29 November, 1323,	*F.* 251, 252.
	Surrendered Surrey, Sussex, Kent, Middlesex, London, 10 January, 1324,	*F.* 252.

(*c*)—LOCAL ESCHEATORS, 1323—1327.

Wilts, Hants, Oxon, Beds, Bucks, Berks,	RICHARD LE WAYTE,	Appointed, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 252.
		Surrendered office, 29 June, 1326, *F.* 393.
	THOMAS OF HARPDEN,	Appointed, 29 June, 1326, *F.* 393.
		Acting, 10 Jan., 1327, *F.* 432.
Norfolk, Suffolk, Cambs, Hunts, Essex, Herts,	JOHN OF BLOMVILLE,	Appointed, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 252.
		Acting, 16 Jan., 1327, *F.* 432.
Yorkshire, Northumberland, Cumberland, Westmorland,	THOMAS OF BURGH, king's clerk,	Limited to these shires, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 252.
		Surrendered office, 13 June, 1324, *F.* 283.

	Simon of Grimsby,	Appointed, 13 June, 1324, *F.* 283. Acting, 6 Jan., 1327, *F.* 431.
Cornwall, Devon, Somerset, Dorset,	John Everard,	Appointed, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 252. Surrendered office, 10 Dec., 1325, *F.* 370.
	Robert of Bilkemore,	Appointed, 10 Dec., 1325, *F.* 370. Acting, 6 Jan., 1327, *F.* 431.
Hereford, Gloucester, Worcester, Salop, Stafford, Welsh March,	John of Hampton,	Appointed, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 252. Acting, 18 Jan., 1327, *F.* 432.
Surrey, Sussex, Kent, Middlesex, city of London,	Mr. John Walwayn, king's clerk,	Limited to these shires, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 251. Surrendered office, 10 Jan., 1324, *F.* 252.
	William of Weston,	Appointed, 10 Jan., 1324, *F.* 251. Acting, 10 Jan., 1327, *F.* 432.
Warwick, Leicester, Nottingham, Derby, Lancashire,	John of Bolingbroke,	Appointed, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 251. Acting, 13 Jan., 1327, *F.* 432.
Lincoln, Northampton, Rutland,	Matthew Brown,	Appointed, 29 Nov., 1323, *F.* 252. Acting, 13 Jan., 1327, *F.* 432.
North Wales,	Robert Power, king's clerk, chamberlain of North Wales,	Appointed, 19 July, 1323, *F.* 230. Acting, 27 Jan., 1325, *F.* 327.

(3) Keepers of the Exchanges of London and Canterbury.

These officers were known later as wardens of the mint, but it seems safer to describe them here by their proper contemporary designation, especially as the actual coining operations were performed by moneyers in various mints, out of strict relation to the keepers of the exchanges. The appointments of the keepers are in every case, save that of William Trent, recorded in the fine roll. The duration of each term of office is clear from the keepers' accounts

preserved in the pipe rolls. These accounts are, with a few exceptions, complete for this period. The first important exception is that of Amerigo dei Frescobaldi, who was exiled by the lords ordainers in 1311; the next is that of the last year of Hawstead, also a period of political confusion; and the last the last three years of Haselshaw, including the revolutionary end of the reign. The alternation of clerical and mercantile keepers is interesting. In compiling these lists, I have availed myself of the summary of these "mint" accounts in Messrs. C. G. Crump and C. Johnson's valuable "Tables of Bullion coined under Edward I, II, and III," reprinted from the *Numismatic Chronicle*, Fourth Series, vol. xiii (1913). Special references to these sources have not therefore been thought necessary, but I have noted in each case the dates for which *extant* accounts survive.

In each case the exchanges of London and Canterbury had the same keeper. Operations at Canterbury, though less than at London, were on a large scale. Pence only were coined there, and the archbishop had a share of the seignorage.

John of Everdon, king's clerk,	Accounted, from 1 May, 1305, to 18 September, 1307.	
Amerigo dei Frescobaldi, king's merchant,	Appointed, 20 August, 1307, Accounted, from 19 September, 1307, to 29 September, 1309, only.	*F.* 2.
John of Cockermouth, king's clerk,	Appointed, 9 October, 1311,	*F.* 104.
John of Lincoln, citizen and alderman of London,	Appointed, 20 October, 1311, Accounted, from 23 October, 1311, to 24 February, 1315.	*F.* 105.
William Trent, citizen and alderman of London,	Accounted, from 25 February, 1315, to 20 June, 1316. Died, 1316; will enrolled, 25 October.	
John of Cockermouth, king's clerk,	Appointed, 21 June, 1316, Accounted, from 21 June, 1316, to 11 April, 1317.	*F.* 284.
Augustine le Waleys, of Uxbridge, king's clerk,	Appointed, 28 January, 1318, Also 12 June, 1318, Surrendered, 12 August, 1320, Accounted, from 11 April, 1317, to 13 August, 1320.	*F.* 351. *F.* 363. *F.* 31.

William of Hawstead, king's clerk,	Appointed, 12 August, 1320,	*F.* 31.
	Surrendered, 6 October, 1322,	*F.* 180.
	Accounted, from 14 August, 1320, to 30 September, 1321.	
Robert of Hazelshaw, king's clerk,	Appointed, 6 October, 1322,	*F.* 180.
	Still in office at end of reign.	
	Accounted, from 7 October, 1322, to 30 September, 1323.	

(4) Mayors of the Merchants of the Staple.

For the functions of these officers, see above, pp. 245, 247, 248, 251–263.

The subjoined, very incomplete, list is only offered as a first attempt.

Richard Stury, burgess of Shrewsbury,	Acting, 26 November, 1312,	*Foedera*, ii, 188.
	Acting, 13 February, 1313, as "mayor of the merchants of our realm,"	*Ib.*, ii, 202.
	Acting, 22 August, 1313, as "mayor of the wool staple,"	*P.* 15.
John of Charlton, mercer of London,	Acting, 18 November, 1318,	*Foedera*, ii, 378.
	Acting, 22 July, 1323,	*Cl.* 9.
William of Merewell,	Acting, 13 August, 1324,	*P.* 13.
Richard of Béthune, pepperer of London, alderman 1322-33,[1]	Acting, 2 May, 1325,	*Cl.* 378.
	Acting, 27 November, 1325,	*Ib.* 527.
John of Charlton, again,	Elected by merchants, 12 June, 1326,	*Ib.* 564.
	Appointed, by patent, 30 July, 1326,	*P.* 301.

E.—OFFICERS OF THE TWO BENCHES.

(1) Chief Justices, Justices and Chief Clerks of the Bench for Common Pleas.

In the first commission appointing justices of the common bench for this reign, six judges were empowered, of whom Ralph of Hingham, or, as he is more often called,

1. See Beaven, *Aldermen of London*, i, 382, and Sharp, *Wills in Husting*, i, 445. He is generally described as a goldsmith. He is called "Betoyne" in contemporary documents, but I feel fairly confident that this means Béthune in Artois.

Hengham, the first mentioned, was continued chief justice. Of the rest, Peter Mallory was old, and never seems to have acted, while William Howard, the founder of the great family of Howards, only sat in Trinity term 1307.[1] Both these judges died in 1308, and Hingham, whose judicial career went back to Henry III's reign, also ceased to act early in 1309. In place of the two former justices, only one appointment, that of Henry le Scrope, was made. Bereford was, however, made chief justice in 1309 in succession to Hingham, and kept that post for the next seventeen years, being replaced on 18 July 1328, by Hervey of Staunton. The provision of the ordinances of 1311 that the chief justice must be appointed in parliament made no difference to his position. Probably he was deemed "sufficient," as was certainly the case in 1318, when the York parliament of October expressly agreed to his remaining in office.[2]

In 1307 and 1308 the number of working judges for common pleas had never been more than five, and for the greater part of 1309 only four. On the 18 September of that year, an ordinance of the king and council raised the number to six, "as it is necessary to have two places, owing to the number of pleas now greater than ever."[3] This suggests that two courts, each with three judges, were to sit simultaneously. Two new judges were immediately appointed. One, John Benstead, a prominent minister of Edward I, had relinquished, in July, 1308, the great post of keeper of the wardrobe, which was not assuredly, as Mr. G. J. Turner suggests, but a "stepping stone" in his career. Benstead took a less important post, one imagines, because he wished to marry, and abandon the clerical state, and his previous appointments at the wardrobe and the exchequer were only open to clerks.[4] Whether he was well qualified for his new duties is perhaps problematical. It

1. For the judicial officers of the early years of Edward's reign see the admirable "legal calendars" compiled by Mr. G. J. Turner for the *Year Books of Edward II*, Selden Soc. I have also had the advantage of using a manuscript article on the changes of ministers after Edward II's accession by Miss Mabel H. Mills, to whom I am indebted for several points especially as to judicial offices.

2. Cole's *Records*, p. 3.

3. *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 231. Compare G. J. Turner, *Year Books of Edward II*, iv, xxv-xxvi, where the working of the two divisions of the court is indicated.

4. *Ib.*, iv, xx. Mr. Turner brings out very clearly, though but in outline, the special interest of Benstead's remarkable career.

is certain that a career, hitherto purely political, financial, and administrative, seems to modern eyes a curious preparation for a common law judgeship. But the line between lawyer and layman was loosely drawn in the fourteenth century, and the bench at least secured in Benstead a distinguished personality. William of Bourn, the other new justice of 1309, apparently never acted,[1] so that despite the royal ordinance there remained only five justices of common pleas.

Two points of interest are suggested by the lists. These are, firstly, the proportion of laymen to clerks among the justices, and secondly, how far judgeships were filled by men of little forensic or judicial experience, and how far they had become the natural reward of distinguished advocates. With regard to the former point, it is noteworthy that of the nineteen justices of the common bench of the reign, eight or nine were clerks[2]; and that the clerical element was already on the decrease is suggested by the fact that no fresh clerical justice was appointed after 1316. Moreover, one of the proved clerks, Benstead, promptly gave up his clergy, so that the laymen were in a substantial majority in the latter part of the reign, though at the beginning there were three clerical and three lay justices. But the clerk Hingham still represented that order; Threckingham and Staunton, and still more Bacon and Roubury, kept up the clerical tradition, while the end of the reign saw in Staunton a new clerical chief justice. These details should make us hesitate to accept suggestions as to the natural antagonism of clerk and lawyer, such as F. W. Maitland was delighted to stress, and, I think, to stress unduly, anyhow for this period. When we realise how a substantial proportion of common lawyers was still clerical, the antagonism disappears of itself. But the differentiation of the clerical profession from that of the common lawyer had already made large strides.

As regards the antecedent qualification of the justices for judicial work, we are still struck by the way in which

1. *Year Books of Edward II*, ii, xxiv.

2. I am uncertain as to the status of William Bourn, but he may be identical with William Burne, clerk, who in 1305 and 1306 was a benefactor of St. John's Hospital, Bristol, and Glastonbury abbey; *C. P. R., 1301-7*, pp. 408, 481. Bourn's clergy is also suggested by his description in the writ of appointment; *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 231. If this be so, the defection of Benstead from his clergy is compensated for.

men, like Benstead, became judges without ever having been "at the bar." Staunton's case points in the same direction. He began life as a "king's clerk," and certainly had no experience as an advocate. Yet he lived to become chief justice of both benches, chief baron of the exchequer, and chancellor of the exchequer. Unlike Benstead, however, he had plenty of judicial experience. Staunton's alternation between the two benches and the exchequer suggests that the various branches of the royal service were in no ways closed departments, and that administrative experience was still regarded as a qualification for judicial work. He is one of the numerous examples of a similar tendency. Against these we may set the long career of Bereford at the common bench where he sat as judge for more than thirty years. Maitland has made us realise his strongly marked character, his shrewd sayings, his power of getting to the point, his jests and his oaths.

Herle, Geoffrey le Scrope, Mablethorp (see king's bench list), and Stonor, are the best examples of men raised to the bench in this reign by reason of their distinction as advocates. Besides these there were Scotter, Friskney, and Passelewe, eminent "counsel" who had their reward in the administrative work of a baron of the exchequer. Of these, however, Friskney soon went from the exchequer to the common bench.

Our conclusions, then, are that judicial office was still freely open to clerks and other persons, who were not professional lawyers. The increasing tendency was, however, to appoint as judges laymen who had made their mark as advocates.

Among the offices specified in the ordinances of 1311 as henceforth to be filled up with the counsel and assent of the magnates in parliament, was that of the chief clerk of the king in the common bench.[1] It must be assumed, therefore, that it was an office of some political importance, or, at least, a post which, in the hands of an irresponsible courtier, might do serious harm to the interests of litigants. References to this office occur very occasionally in the records, but the chancery rolls enable us to make out a fairly complete list of keepers of the rolls and writs of the common bench, and there is sufficient indication that the keeper of the rolls of the bench was also its chief clerk.

1. *Rot. Parl.*, i, 282.

Thus John Bacon, king's clerk, who had been keeper of the rolls of the bench since 1292,[1] is spoken of in an ordinance, enrolled in the close roll of 1309, as chief clerk of the bench. Bacon is, moreover, charged to keep a counter roll of all the pleas and essoins in bench.[2] Moreover, in the York parliament of October 1318, when for the first time a systematic review of all the posts to which parliament was to nominate was made, the person whom we know was then acting as keeper of the rolls of the bench, Adam of Herwington, was formally confirmed by parliament in the office of chief clerk of the bench.[3] With these facts before us, it is hardly rash to conclude that the two offices in question were always combined during our period. We may, then, complete our catalogue of all the officers of state and household, which the ordainers claimed to nominate, by adding this list to our collection.

(*a*)—Chief Justices.

Ralph of Hingham, (or Hengham), clerk,	Acted, 19 September, 1301, to	*P.* 606.
	to 15 March, 1309,	*P.* 109.
	Re-appointed, 6 September, 1307,	*P.* 2.
William of Bereford, knight,	Appointed, 15 March, 1309,	*P.* 109.
	Acted until July, 1326,	*P.* 297, 346.
Hervey of Staunton, clerk,	Appointed, 18 July, 1326,	*P.* 297.

(*b*)—Justices.

Ralph of Hingham, (or Hengham), clerk,	First appointment, 1272—1274.	
	Appointed chief justice, 1301.	
	Re-appointed, 6 September, 1307,	*P.* 2.
	Retired, 1309.	
	(Also justice and chief justice of king's bench.)	
William of Bereford, knight,	Appointed, 22 August, 1294,	*P.* 115.
	Reappointed, 6 September, 1307,	*P.* 2.
	and 18 September, 1309,	*Cl.* 231.
	Appointed chief justice, 15 March, 1309.	
	Acted, until July, 1326.	

1. *C. P. R., 1281-92*, p. 485.
2. *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 231.
3. "Mestre Richard de . . . . Sire Adam de Herwynton, Chef Clerk du commun Bank: Vis est as toutz . . . . demorrount en cels offices. Et le seigneur le roi se acord aussint par assent deux toutz qil te . . . . as offices come avant"; Cole, *Records*, p. 4.

PETER MALLORY, knight (*Cl. 1302-7*, p. 337),	Appointed, 28 August, 1292,	*P.* 507.
	Re-appointed, 6 September, 1307,	*P.* 2.
	Ceased to act, 1308.	
LAMBERT OF THRECKINGHAM, clerk,	First appointed, 1300.	
	Re-appointed, 6 September, 1307,	*P.* 2.
	and 18 September, 1309,	*Cl.* 231.
	Made justice of king's bench, 6 Aug., 1316,	*Cl.* 358.
HERVEY OF STAUNTON, king's clerk,	First appointed, 20 April, 1306,	*P.* 428.
	Re-appointed, 6 September, 1307,	*P.* 2.
	and 18 September, 1309,	*Cl.* 231.
	Appointed baron of the exchequer, 28 September, 1314,	*P.* 179.
	Chancellor of the exchequer, 1316—1323, and 1324—1326.	
	Justice of king's bench, September, 1323, to 1324.	
	Appointed chief justice of common pleas, 18 July, 1326,	*P.* 297.
WILLIAM HOWARD, knight,	First appointed, 8 October, 1297,	*P.* 319.
	Re-appointed, 6 September, 1307,	*P.* 2.
	Ceased to act, Trinity term, 1308,	*Y. B.* i, xciii.
HENRY LE SCROPE, (of Bolton), knight,	Appointed, 27 November, 1308,	*P.* 147.
	Re-appointed, 18 September, 1309,	*Cl.* 231.
	Appointed chief justice, king's bench, 15 June, 1317,	*Cl.* 419.
JOHN OF BENSTEAD, clerk, knight before 12 February, 1311 (*Cl.* 340),	Appointed, 18 September or 6 October, 1309,	*Cl.* 231, *P.* 193.
	Acted until 16 October, 1320,	*P.* 508.
WILLIAM OF BOURNE, ? clerk,	Appointed, 18 September or 6 October, 1309,	*Cl.* 231, *P.* 193.
	Never acted,	*Y. B.* iv, xxiv-v.
JOHN BACON, king's clerk, keeper of rolls of common pleas since 1288,	Appointed, 19 February, 1313,	*P.* 552.
	Succeeded by Stonor, 16 October, 1320,	*P.* 508.
WILLIAM INGE, knight,	Appointed in place of Staunton, 28 September, 1314,	*P.* 181.
	Succeeded by Roubury, 10 March, 1316,	*P.* 435.
GILBERT OF ROUBURY, clerk (*Cl. 1302-7*, p. 542),	Justice of king's bench, 1295—1316.	
	Appointed in place of Inge, 10 March, 1316,	*P.* 435.

JOHN OF MUTFORD, "narrator," [1]	Appointed, 20 April, 1316, Acted until 1329.	*P.* 450.
JOHN OF DONCASTER, layman,	Appointed, 5 June, 1319, Did not act after 1320.	*P.* 344.
WILLIAM OF HERLE, king's sergeant, knight,	Appointed in place of Benstead, 16 October, 1320, Acted for rest of reign.	*P.* 508. *I.R.* 220.
JOHN OF STONOR, king's sergeant, knight,	Appointed in place of Bacon, 16 October, 1320, Re-appointed, 3 May, 1324, Acted for rest of reign.	*P.* 508. *P.* 412.
JOHN OF BOURCHIER, knight,	Appointed in place of Roubury, 31 May, 1321, Acted for rest of reign,	*P.* 593. *I.R.* 219.
WALTER OF FRISKNEY, knight, baron of exchequer,	Appointed, 9 July, 1323, Acted for rest of reign.	*P.* 322.
GEOFFREY LE SCROPE, (of Bolton), king's sergeant, knight,	Appointed, 27 September, 1323, Appointed chief justice of king's bench, 21 March, 1324.	*P.* 340.

(*c*)—CHIEF CLERKS AND KEEPERS OF THE ROLLS AND WRITS.

JOHN BACON, king's clerk,	Appointed, 17 April, 1292, Re-appointed, 6 September, 1307, Entrusted with additional duties, 18 September, 1309, Appointed justice of the common bench, 19 February, 1313,	*P.* 485. *P.* 2. *Cl.* 231. *P.* 552.
WILLIAM OF RAVEN, king's clerk,	Appointed to custody of writs and rolls of bench, 19 February, 1313,	*P.* 552.
ROBERT OF HAUVILLE, king's clerk,	Appointed, 21 March, 1314,	*P.* 94.
ADAM OF HERWINGTON, king's clerk,	Appointed, 30 October, 1314, Confirmed in parliament, October, 1318, Mandate to surrender, 11 June, 1322,	*P.* 185. Cole, p. 4. *P.* 133.

1. *Year Books*, i, xciv. Mr. G. J. Turner, *ib.*, iv, xv-xvii, identifies the "narrator" or "counter" with the "sergeants," who later had exclusive audience in the common bench. Some, but not all the class, are described as king's sergeants at this period, and received stipends in that capacity.

Mr. William of Ayleston, king's clerk,	Appointed, 11 June, 1322,	*P.* 133.
Mr. John of Shoreditch, king's clerk,[1]	Appointed, 11 September, 1323,	*P.* 340.

(2) Chief Justices and Justices of Pleas, *coram rege*, or Justices of the King's Bench.

There were never more than three justices acting at once to hear *placita coram rege*, and their history and succession is further simplified in this reign by their long continuance in office. The proportion of clerks to laymen was that of three to six, rather smaller than in the common bench. Moreover, only one of the five chief justices of the reign was a clerk. The habit of transferring officers from the one bench to the other has been already mentioned. There were also two cases of barons of the exchequer becoming justices of pleas *coram rege*. The chief justice of each bench was by the ordinances to be appointed in parliament, but Brabazon, like Bereford, was allowed to continue in office. In 1318 Henry le Scrope was similarly pronounced "sufficient" by the York parliament.

(*a*)—Chief Justices.

Roger le Brabazon, knight,	First appointed chief justice, 1295,	
	Ordered to continue and took oath, 6 September, 1307,	*Cl.* 41.
	Resignation accepted, 23 February, 1316,	*P.* 437.
William Inge, knight, formerly justice of common bench,	Appointed after 23 February, 1316. Surrendered records of office, 15 June, 1317,	*Cl.* 415.
Henry le Scrope, knight, formerly justice of common bench,	Appointed before 15 June, 1317,	*Cl.* 415, 416, 419.

1. Shoreditch was much engaged in diplomatic work in France and elsewhere, and it is difficult to believe that he remained effective keeper of the rolls of the bench for the rest of the reign. However, I find no fresh appointment to the office until 4 Feb., 1327, when Peter of Lodington was appointed; *C. P. R., 1327-30*, p. 17. Between 1323 and 1326 there are indications that chief justice Bereford, or a deputy appointed by his letters patent, was personally responsible for the records and rolls; *C. C. R., 1323-7*, pp. 42, 593. Under Edward III Shoreditch renounced his clergy and became a knight.

Hervey of Staunton, clerk, previously chancellor of the exchequer,	Appointed before 27 September, 1323,	*P.* 339.
Geoffrey le Scrope, knight, formerly justice of common bench,	Appointed before 21 March, 1324, Acted to end of reign.	*P.* 409.
	(*b*)—Justices.	
Gilbert of Roubury, clerk,	Appointed in 1295. Ordered to continue, 6 September, 1307, Appointed justice of common bench, 10 March, 1316,	*Cl.*41. *P.* 435.
Henry Spigurnel, knight,	Appointed, ? 1300. Ordered to continue in office, 6 September, 1307,	*Cl.* 41.
Lambert of Threckingham, clerk,	Appointed justice of common bench, 1299. Appointed to king's bench, 6 August, 1316, Appointed baron of exchequer, 6 August, 1320,	*Cl.* 358. *P.* 504.
Robert of Mablethorp, "narrator,"	Appointed, 1320. Acted for rest of reign,	*I.R.* 220.

F.—OFFICERS OF THE PRINCIPALITY OF WALES AND THE EARLDOM OF CHESTER.

The administrative system of Wales and Cheshire remained, under Edward II, exactly as it had been settled by his father's statute of Wales of 1284. Edward of Carnarvon had entered upon the direct government of both the principality and the earldom in 1301. He retained the principality in his own hands for the whole of his life, never creating his eldest son prince of Wales. Edward of Windsor was, however, made earl of Chester when still a baby, so that after his creation he was supposed to appoint the officers of his palatinate personally.[1] The

1. So anxious were the Cheshire officers to act in the name of the infant earl that they paid twelve pence for a temporary copper seal, "pro breuibus cancellarie Cestrie sigillandis antequam sigillum comitis ibidem venit"; *Ministers' Accounts*, 771/7.

change was of course nominal, but it had this untoward result for historians that the last appointment of a high Cheshire officer to be enrolled in the chancery rolls of Edward II was that of Robert of Holland, nominated in December 1311. Later appointments of justices, and all appointments of chamberlains of Chester, have accordingly to be sought out in the imperfect financial and the voluminous judicial records of Cheshire. On the other hand the nomination and the removal of the justices and chamberlains of Wales are, with one or two exceptions, to be found enrolled on the fine rolls of Edward II for the whole of the reign. Accordingly the Cheshire lists are much more tentative than the Welsh lists, especially as the lists in Ormerod's *History of Cheshire,* though excellent so far as they go, do not always take us very far. I have, however, been greatly helped by the recently published calendars of the extant chamberlains' accounts of Cheshire under Edward II, by Mr. R. Stewart Brown, and my old pupil Mr. Arthur Jones.[1]

The details of the administrative system of Wales and Cheshire after 1284 have not yet been fully worked out. It is, however, I think, clear, that Edward I extended to the principality a system of government very similar to that which he had inherited in Cheshire from Simon of Montfort and the Norman line of earls. The vicegerent of the earl or prince, and the acting head of the government was the justice, who was nearly always a great baron. His chief subordinate was the chamberlain, who was the chief financial officer, "charged with the issues thereof," and required to answer for them at the exchequer at Westminster. By a survival of older usage the justices of Wales, the official superiors of the chamberlains, were also their controllers, and the chamberlain's accounts were tendered to the exchequer by the "view and testimony" of the justice as controller.[2] There was also a chancery at each of the three centres of government, but this was less prominent than the office of the chamberlain which, like

1. R. Stewart Brown, *Cheshire Chamberlains' Accounts, 1301—1360,* Lancashire and Cheshire Record Society, 1910; A. Jones, *Flintshire Ministers' Accounts, 1301—1328,* Flintshire Historical Society, 1913.

2. The preface to the enrolment of any of the Welsh chamberlains' accounts illustrate this, for example, the prior of Carmarthen's accounts in *Pipe, 7 Edw. II,* m. 37, rendered "per testimonium Rogeri de Mortuo Mari, iusticiarii parcium illarum et contrarotulatoris eiusdem camerarie."

the financial department of the English kings, was called an exchequer. Speaking roughly, the system was that of a great feudal barony rather than that of the English crown, and may be instructively compared with both the pre-Edwardian administration of the Scottish kings, and still more with the system which Edward I tried in vain to establish in Scotland. The analogies with the English administrative system are, however, very close, since the baronial court was always organised after the model of the royal court, though after a somewhat simpler fashion. It seems, however, that Edward I consciously supplemented what he found ready to his hands, by borrowing much from England, and notably by the establishment of something very closely approaching the English shire system in all these districts.

Normally there were three centres of administration, each under a justice with its exchequer and chancery, and local capital. The justice of Cheshire ruled from Cheshire, not only the old county palatine, but also over the newly established and subordinate county of Flint, which mainly consisted of the districts conquered from the Welsh, which Edward ventured to keep in his own hands.[1] Chester was the seat of the exchequer and chancery of the two shires, but each had its own sheriff, and the other apparatus of county self-government. The northern part of the ancient principality was the sphere of the justice of north Wales, whose residence was at Carnarvon, where the exchequer and chancery were established. The keeping of Carnarvon castle, his natural residence, was generally to be at the justice's own cost and risk, and occasionally, the justice himself acted as constable, and therefore also as mayor of the town. Under the justice, were "the three old shires of Gwynnedd," namely Anglesea, Carnarvon, and Merioneth. Similarly the southern portions of the principality were under the jurisdiction of the justice of south or west Wales, indifferently described as justice of either or of both those districts. Carmarthen and its castle stood to the justice of south Wales as Carnarvon stood to his northern colleague. His sphere of jurisdiction was divided between the counties of Carmarthen and Cardigan, and the cantred of Cantrev-

1. See for this my paper on *Flintshire and its Records* in *Transactions of the Flintshire Historical Society*, 1912.

mawr.[1] Marcher franchises, however, limited the authority of the justice of south Wales to regions much more limited than those of the modern Carmarthenshire and Cardiganshire. Cardiganshire yielded most of his revenue, but the receipts of the south Welsh administration were insignificant as compared with those of the government at Carnarvon.[2] However, the justice of south Wales was also appointed to act as justice in the lands of the bishopric of St. David's,[3] and sometimes also in the lands of the bishopric of Llandaff.[4] For a large part of Edward II's reign, namely from 1308 to 1315, and again from 1317 to 1326, the same individual held the office of justice in both districts of the principality. He was then described as the justice of Wales. The two exchequers and chanceries remained distinct, even when there was a single justice. Accordingly, there was for the whole of the reign a separate line of chamberlains of Carmarthen and Carnarvon, for thus the chamberlains of north and south Wales were often designated. I have spoken elsewhere of the significance of the great aggregations of power in this reign under marcher chieftains.[5]

With the one exception of Walter of Petherton, the justices of both north and south Wales were noblemen of high standing, generally with interests in Wales and the march. Mortimer and Arundel, the great justices, and ordinary governors such as Grey of Ruthin and Martin of Kemmes were heads of marcher lordships, and Audley and Berkeley had influence in the lands immediately adjacent to the march on its English side. The traditional fee of the justices of north and south Wales was 200 marks a year.[6] When they also "kept" the castle and town of Carnarvon or Carmarthen, they received an additional

1. In most of the accounts of the chamberlains of Carmarthen the receipts are grouped under these three heads, except, of course, during the years in which Hugh le Despenser the younger held Cantrevmawr independently of the Carmarthen exchequer. I can find no reference to the sheriff of Cardigan, though the "steward of Cardiganshire" occurs regularly. Rhys ap Gruffydd (see p. 379) held this post, 1310-17.

2. Thus in 6 Edward II the receipts in South Wales were only £979. 13s. 11¾d., of which £682. 13s. 5¼d. came from Cardiganshire; *Pipe, 7 Edw. II*, m. 37. In the same year the North Welsh receipt was £3,182. 10s. 8¾d.; *ib.*, m. 40.

3. *C. Fine R.*, ii, 8, 13, 316, 403.

4. *Ib.*, iii, 87.

5. See above, pp. 137—143, 153—155.

6. This was the sum received by Audley, and by his predecessor William of Sutton; *Pipe, 5 Edw. II*, m. 55.

stipend of £100 on that account.[1] A larger stipend was given to the justice of all Wales. Thus Roger Mortimer received 350 marks, besides £100 for the custody of Carnarvon.[2] The justice of Chester's fee was £100, a sum which included the custody of his castles.[3] Both the Welsh and Cheshire offices were within the influence of general political tendencies in England: the alternating supremacy of Mortimer and Arundel shews this in Wales. In Cheshire Payn Tibotot represents the courtier element, and Robert Holland the Lancastrian. There was some difficulty in getting rid of Tibotot after the ordinances. Sapey represents the restoration of the courtier party to authority, and Ingham and Amory the royalist reaction of the end of the reign.

The chamberlains were always clerks. Each of the three chamberlains had a normal fee of £20 a year. They were seldom of much personal importance. The close connexion of the southern chamberlainship with the priory of Austin canons at Carmarthen is an interesting survival of the time when the "religious" often acted as finance ministers in England. Two priors in succession held the office for rather more than half the reign. They generally acted through attorneys, who were usually canons of their house. The only clearly Welsh officials were these attorneys to the southern chamberlains, notably John Goch, who is not described as a canon. The joint chamberlainship of the two priors with Thomas Doun or Dwnn, who also may have been a Welshman, shews a curious wish to keep the office in the priory even at the risk of its unity and efficiency.

The hardest list to establish was that of the chamberlains of Chester, which remains even more imperfect than that of the justices. More careful examination of the Cheshire plea rolls and recognisance rolls, than I have been able to give, would probably produce a much more precise list. As it is, my list suggests a few small problems which others must be left to solve. It includes in Richard of Bury one famous name. Incidentally it may be noticed that the employment of this famous clerk of Edward of Windsor's wardrobe in Cheshire, destroys the widespread fiction that this illiterate but book-loving official was Edward III's tutor.

1. *Pipe, 5 Edw. II*, m. 54 d. This was the sum received by Audley as keeper of Carnarvon.
2. *Ib.*, m. 55. The 350 marks were "tam pro Northwallia quam Suthwallia."
3. *Ministers' Accounts*, 771/9.

(1)—Justices of North and South Wales.

Hugh of Audley, senior, knight,	North,	Acting, 10 May, 1306,	*Cl.* 385.
		Ordered to surrender office, 15 January, 1308,	*F.* 13.
Walter of Petherton, king's clerk,	South,	First appointed, 24 September, 1298,	*F.* 404.
		Re-appointed, 10 November, 1307,	*F.* 7.
		Surrendered, 15 January, 1308,	*F.* 12.
Roger Mortimer of Chirk,[1] baron,	N. and S.,	Appointed, 15 January, 1308,	*F.* 12.
		Began to act, 12 February, 1308,	*Pipe, 3 Ed. III*, m. 55.
		Surrendered, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 232.
John of Grey, lord of Ruthin, baron,	N.,	Appointed, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 232.
		Surrendered, 23 November, 1316,	*F.* 312.
William Martin, lord of Kemmes, baron,	W. and S.,	Appointed, 19 February, 1315,	*F.* 232.
		Surrendered, 24 June, 1316,	*F.* 285.
Roger Mortimer,[2] of Chirk,	N.,	Appointed, 23 November, 1316,	*F.* 312.
Maurice of Berkeley, baron,	W. and S.,	Appointed, 24 June, 1316,	*F.* 285.
		Surrendered, 7 October, 1317,	*F.* 342.
Roger Mortimer of Chirk,[2] (for life), baron,	N. and S.,	Appointed, 7 October, 1317,	*F.* 342.
		Removed for rebellion before 5 January, 1322,	*F.* 86.
Edmund Fitzalan,[3] earl of Arundel,	N. and S.,	Appointed, 5 January, 1322,	*F.* 86.
		Captured and executed, 17 November, 1326,	*Brid.* 87.
Richard of Amory, knight,	N.,	Appointed, 12 December, 1326,	*P.* 338.

(2)—Justices of Chester.

William of Ormesby, knight,		Acting in September, 1307,	*D. K., 36th Rep.*, 35.

1. John Peacock was Mortimer's attorney in 1314-15; *Pipe, 9 E. II*, m. 53.

2. William of Shalford was Mortimer's attorney in North Wales from Easter 1317 to Easter 1319; Robert Malleie in South Wales from 29 Sept., 1317, to 29 Sept., 1321; and William Meverel, clerk, in North Wales from 29 Sept., 1320, to 15 May, 1322; *Pipe, 12 Ed. II*, m. 35; *ib., 16 Edw. II*, mm. 40 and 46, and *ib., 17 Edw. II*, m. 48.

3. Robert of Hope, clerk, was Arundel's attorney in North Wales from 16 May, 1322; *Pipe, 16 Edw. II*, m. 46; and Matthew Lestrange, clerk, in North Wales from Easter 1323 to 29 Sept., 1326; *ib., 17 Edw. II*, m. 44; and also for Amory and Mortimer; *ib., 2 Edw. III*, m. 45. In South Wales Rhys ap Gruffydd was Arundel's lieutenant in 1325; *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 219.

Robert of Holland, knight,	Appointed, 1 October, 1307,	*F.* 5.
	Surrendered, 24 October, 1309,	*F.* 50.
Payn Tibotot, knight,	Appointed, 24 October, 1309,	*F.* 50.
	Ordered to surrender, 30 January, 1312,	*Cl.* 396.
Robert of Holland, knight,	Appointed, 26 December, 1311,	*F.* 122.
	Acting, 28 October, 1312,	*Cl.* 486.
Hugh of Audley,[1] the elder, knight,	Acting from 7 December, 1312,	Brown, p. 78.
	Acting from Easter, 1315, to 29 September, 1315,	*Min. Acc.* 771/8.
	Acting, 31 March, 1316,	*P.* 476.
	Acting, 1 November, 1317,	*Cl.* 505.
John of Sapey, knight,	Acting, before 20 October, 1318,	Cole, p. 4.
	Acting up to 7 July, 1319,	*D.K., 31st Rep. Ap.*, 236.
Robert of Holland,[2] knight,	Acting in 1319.	
	Acting, 30 September, 1320,	Brown, p. 89.
Oliver of Ingham, knight,	Acting, from 1 November, 1322,	*P.W.* ii, ii, ap. 221.
	to 14 November, 1323,	*Ib.*, ii, ii, 239.
Richard of Amory, knight,	Acting, 25 September, 1325, to 21 December, 1326,	Jones, pp. 80-3.

(3)—Chamberlains of North Wales.

Mr. Thomas of Asthall,[3] king's clerk,	Appointed, 29 September, 1302,	*Pipe, 5 Ed. III*, m. 53.
	Surrendered, 11 October, 1312;	*F.* 148.
	Accounts extant from 29 September, 1305, to 29 September, 1312,	*Pipe, 5 Ed. III*, mm. 53, 54, 55, 56.

1. In 1315 Robert of Hemington was his deputy; *D. K., 36th Report*, Ap. ii, 514.

2. In 1320 Robert of Shirburn was *locum tenens* of the justice; *ib.*, ii, 472; Jones, p. 80.

3. This person is called "Esthalle" and "Estehalle" in the rolls, but these are also the spellings representing Asthall, Oxfordshire, a village between Witney and Burford. I have, therefore, ventured to describe him by the modern form of the place from which he in all probability derived his surname. On 24th May, 1312, orders were issued to release Asthall, who was then imprisoned in the Fleet for not paying his chamberlain's account; *C. C. R., 1307-13*, p. 423. His own property was seized, and it was not until 1332 that his accounts were passed. The delay was largely due to the confusion of the wardrobe accounts; see above, pp. 82-3, 178. Finally the executors of archbishop Reynolds were burdened with a large proportion of Asthall's deficit; *Pipe, 5 Edw. III*, mm. 53-56.

THOMAS OF CHEDWORTH, king's clerk,	Appointed, 11 October, 1312,	F. 148.
	Surrendered, 9 October, 1315,	F. 262.
	Accounted from 29 September, 1312,	*Pipe, 7 Ed. II*, m. 40.
	to 29 September, 1315,	*Ib., 18 Ed. II*, m. 55.
WILLIAM LE DUYN, clerk,	Appointed from Michaelmas, or 9 October, 1315,	F. 262.
	Surrendered, 12 January, 1317,	F. 315.
	Accounted, from 29 September, 1315, to 1 May, 1317,	*Pipe, 11 Ed. II*, m. 30.
EDMUND OF DYNIETON,[1] king's clerk,	Appointed, 12 January, 1317,	F. 315.
	Surrendered, 3 June, 1319,	F. 402.
	Accounted from 1 May or Easter, 1317, to Easter, 1319,	*Pipe, 12 Ed. II*, m. 35.
HENRY OF SHIREOAKS, king's clerk,	Appointed, 3 June, 1319,	F. 402.
	Surrendered, 8 November, 1320,	F. 38.
	Accounted from Easter, 1319, to 29 September, 1320,	*Pipe, 14 Ed. II*, m. 30.
ADAM OF WETTENHALL, king's clerk,	Appointed, 8 November, 1320,	F. 38.
	Surrendered, 11 May, 1323,	F. 208.
	Accounted from 29 September, 1320, to Easter, 1323,	*Pipe, 16 Ed. II*, m. 46.
ROBERT POWER,[2] king's clerk,	Appointed, 11 May, 1323,	F. 208.
	Acting until 1 Ed. III,	F. 421.
	Accounted from Easter, 1323, to	*Pipe, 17 Ed. II*, mm. 44, 45.
	31 October, 1327,	*Ib., 19 Ed. II*, m. 40, and *2 Ed. III*, m. 45.

(4)—CHAMBERLAINS OF SOUTH WALES.

WILLIAM OF ROGATE, clerk,	Acting before October, 1307,	*Pipe, 7 Ed. II*, m. 36.

1. An exchequer clerk since 1311 (*I. R.*, no. 157, m. 2), he is called "Dynyeton," "Dynieton," "Dinyeton," "Dymeton," and "Dynynton"; *Pipe, 11 Edw. II*, mm. 30-31, and Seebohm, *Tribal System in Wales*, App., p. 22-3. (Cf. Henry of Dynyeton, sheriff of Carnarvon in 1307; *Pipe, 5 Edw. III*, m. 55.) The form Dynynton suggests Dennington, Suffolk, as the origin of this name; but it is never used in his own accounts.

2. William de la Bataille was Power's attorney from 29 Sept., 1326, onwards; *Pipe, 2 Edw. III*, m. 45. Power sent in a separate account as escheator; *ib., 17 Edw. II*, m. 45 d.

Mr. William le Hore, king's clerk,	Appointed, 4 October, 1307, *F.* 9. Surrendered, 25 August, 1312, *F.* 144. Accounted from 29 September, 1307, to 25 August, 1312, *Pipe, 7 Ed. II*, m. 36.
Robert,[1] prior of Carmarthen,	Appointed, 25 August, 1312, *F.* 144. Surrendered, 5 May, 1315, *F.* 246. Accounted from 15 August, 1312, to 5 May, 1315, *Pipe, 7 Ed. II*, m. 37, and *9 Ed. II*, m. 53.
Mr. Richard of Mustlewick, clerk,	Appointed, 5 May, 1315, *F.* 246. Accounted from 5 May, 1315, to 29 September, 1317, *Pipe, 10 Ed. II*, m. 35.
Walter of Fulbourn, clerk,	Appointed before 29 September, 1317, Surrendered, 11 September, 1318, *F.* 375. Accounted from 29 September, 1317, to 20 September, 1318, *Pipe, 15 Ed. II*, m. 40.
Robert,[2] prior of Carmarthen, and	Appointed, 11 September, 1318, *F.* 375.
Mr. Thomas Doun,[3] clerk, constable of Carmarthen castle,	Appointed to act with the prior after 29 September, 1321, *Pipe, 19 Ed. II*, m. 35. The prior accounted alone from 20 September, 1318, to 29 September, 1321, *Ib., 17 Ed. II*, m. 48. The joint chamberlains accounted from 29 September, 1321, to 29 September, 1325, *Ib., 19 Ed. II*, m. 35.
William of Otterhampton, king's clerk,	Appointed, 12 January, 1324, *F.* 253. Appointment apparently cancelled.

1. From 29 Sept., 1314, to 5 May, 1315, Henry of Somery, canon of Carmarthen, was the prior's attorney; *ib., 9 Edw. II*, m. 53.

2. Henry of Somery, canon of Carmarthen, was prior Robert's attorney from 20 Sept., 1318, to 29 Sept., 1325; *Pipe, 17 Edw. II*, m. 48, and *19 Edw. II*, m. 35. Robert resigned his priory before the end of his nominal tenure of office, for on 9 Oct., 1324, license to elect his successor was issued; *C. P. R., 1324-7*, p. 33.

3. Doun, also called Deyn and Doyn (?Dwnn, a well-known Welsh name) was "clericus assignatus eidem priori ad officium camerarie predicte una cum prefato priore exercendum." He is often called chamberlain, for instance in *C. Fine Roll*, p. 342. Henry of Caerau was his attorney from 29 Sept., 1321, to 29 Sept., 1323; *Pipe, 19 Edw. II*, m. 35.

JOHN OF CHANDOS,[1] prior of Carmarthen, and Mr. THOMAS DOUN, clerk,	Accounted jointly from 29 September, 1325, to 23 October, 1331, *Pipe, 1 Ed. III*, m. 47, and *Ib., 7 Ed. III*, m. 43.

(5)—CHAMBERLAINS OF CHESTER.

HUGH OF STANDISH, clerk,	Last account in arrears in 1308-9, Ormerod i, 59; *D. K., 36th Rep.* ii, 110. Late chamberlain in 1309, *Ib., 36th Rep.*, ii, 39.
JOHN OF DALTON, clerk,	Acting in 1308-9, *Ib.*, 59, and *Ib.*, 189.
WILLIAM STONEHALL, clerk,	Acting from 1309-11, *Ib.*, 59, and *Ib.*, 248.
Mr. STEPHEN OF CHESHUNT, clerk,	Acting from 7 December, 1312, to 29 September, 1313, Brown, p. 78. Acting in part of 1314-15, *D. K., 31st Rep.*, 184.
WALTER OF FULBOURN, clerk,	Acting from 9 June, 1315, to 29 September, 1315, Brown, p. 86. Late chamberlain, 25 March, 1316, Ormerod, i, 59; *D. K., 36th Rep.*, ii, 374.
WILLIAM OF BURSTOW, clerk,	Acting in 1316, *Ib.*, 482. Acting about 24 April, 1317, *Ib.*, 191. Acting about 30 October, 1317, cf. *Cl.* 178. Re-appointed, 10 December, 1317, Ormerod, i, 59. Acting on 9 April, 1320, *D. K., 36th Rep.*, ii, 440.
RICHARD OF BURY,[2] king's clerk,	Acting from 26 May, to 30 September, 1320, Jones, p. 74. Brown, p. 89. Acting, 9 April, 1321, *D. K., 36th Rep.*, ii, 361. Acting, 6 December, 1322, *Cheshire Recognizance Roll, 8-16 Ed. II*, m. 1d. Called late chamberlain, 23 July, 1324, *D. K., 36th Rep.*, ii, 449.

1. His name comes from *C. P. R., 1324-7* p. 45, the record of the confirmation of his election and the order for the restitution of his temporalities, issued on 10 Nov., 1324. As canon of Carmarthen he had brought the king news of his predecessor's resignation in October. John Winter, canon of Carmarthen, and Stephen Jacobs were attorneys for prior John up to 29 Sept., 1326, *Pipe, 1 Edw. III*, m. 47, after which his attorneys were John Goch and William Josephs; *ib., 7 Edw. III*, m. 43.

2. "Ricardus de sancto Edmundo," probably rightly identified with Richard of Bury, afterwards bishop of Durham, who was certainly clerk to the justice of Chester in 1319; *D. K., 31st Report*, App. 181.

Mr. William of Easington, clerk,	Appointed before July, 1324. Acting, 24 May, 1325, *D. K., 31st Rep.*, 196. Acting between 29 September, 1325, and 21 December, 1326, Jones, p. 81.
John Paynel, parson of Rostherne,	Appointed, 17 December, 1326, *Pipe, 3 Ed. III*, m. 44. Acting between 17 December, 1326, and 24 January, 1327, Jones, p. 84. Accounted from 17 December, 1326, to 13 March, 1328, *Pipe, 3 Ed. III*, m. 44.

G.—OFFICERS OF IRELAND.

The normal governor of Ireland was called the justice. He was appointed by letters patent, issued from the English chancery, and was assigned a salary of £500 a year.[1] For this he was compelled to maintain at his own expense a corps of twenty men-at-arms with armoured horses.[2] Sometimes a higher dignitary was appointed, to whom wider powers were assigned, with the title of king's lieutenant and keeper of Ireland. The three cases of this under Edward II include the cancelled appointment of the earl of Ulster, the famous lieutenancy of Gaveston during his first exile, and the first period of office of Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, which covered the critical years of the invasion of Edward Bruce. Mortimer was, however, generally addressed, even in official letters, as justice, and during his second term of office he was appointed by no other title. Both the justice and the lieutenant were frequently absentees, in which case they appointed a *locum tenens* or deputy. The justice could continue under a lieutenant, and Wogan continued to act as justice all through the time of Gaveston's lieutenancy. In the subjoined lists justices are printed in roman capitals, king's lieutenants in italic capitals, and deputies of either in small italics indented. This latter method of printing has been also adopted in all later cases of lists with deputies and officials.

Gaveston's position was unique. The majority of the other rulers of Ireland under Edward II were either Irish magnates, such as the earls of Ulster, Carrick, Kildare, and Louth, or Irish ecclesiastics, such as archbishop

1. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 568.
2. Compare *ib., 1317-21*, pp. 558 and 578, when the justice was himself reckoned as the twentieth man.

Bicknor of Dublin, the only clerical justice of the reign, who, however, was a king's clerk in England before he went to Ireland with Wogan before 1305. Other governors, such as Theobald of Verdon and Roger Mortimer, had great territorial interests in Ireland, these two dividing between them the ancient Lacy palatinate of Meath. Three only had no connexions with the higher Norman-Irish aristocracy, namely Sir John Wogan, a Pembrokeshire vassal of the house of Valence, John Darcy, a Lincolnshire baron, and Ralph Gorges, a Somerset landowner. Of these three all, except Wogan, were summoned as barons to the English parliament. Wogan established a branch of his house in Ireland, though not previously belonging to that country.

Under the justice was a system of administration which reproduced that of England with extreme fidelity. There was an Irish council, chancery, exchequer and two benches. I have contented myself here, however, with giving lists of the Irish chancellors and treasurers. It would be a simple matter to increase the number of the lists of Irish officers, on the lines adopted here for the corresponding English offices, since the departments of Irish government were staffed on exactly the same lines as their English equivalents, and were so often filled up from England that the patent and other chancery rolls afford us ample material. I am inclined to believe that the study in detail of the administrative history of Ireland would be of value, not only on its own account, but as showing considerable light on parallel developments in England. In any case the Irish equivalents in no wise lagged behind their English counterparts. Thus we have record of a baron of the Dublin exchequer being appointed by patent, before there is evidence of a similar appointment in England.[1] Similarly there was a chief baron, distinguished above his fellow barons, in Ireland almost as early as in England.[2]

The majority of the Dublin officials seem at this period to have been Englishmen; this is certainly the case with the chancellors and treasurers in our lists. Even the episcopal chancellors and treasurers were generally Englishmen; thus William Fitzjohn, successively bishop of Ossory and archbishop of Cashel, was emphatically

1. *C. P. R., 1292—1301*, p. 145; the date is 1 Sept., 1295. See above, p. 335.

2. Walter of Islip was succeeded by William of Moenes as chief baron of the exchequer, Dublin, on 1 June, 1311; *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 354.

English.[1] Alexander Bicknor, archbishop of Dublin after 1314, came from the southern march of Wales.[2] John Leek had been chaplain and almoner of Edward II, who had failed to establish him in the Scottish bishopric of Dunkeld.[3] As regards the lesser dignitaries, the majority of them seem to have had quite subordinate posts in England. They were not, however, raised to the highest Irish posts, until they had done some preliminary work in subordinate offices. Adam of Herwington is the chief exception to this rule of official insignificance, as before he came to Ireland he acted, between 1314 and 1322, in the important office of keeper of the writs and rolls of the English common bench. With one exception, none of the Irish chancellors and treasurers took much share in Edward II's extra-Irish business. Archbishop Bicknor, however, played an important part in French and Gascon affairs from 1324-5, and was a conspicuous supporter of Isabella and Mortimer in the rebellion of 1326. The archbishopric of Dublin was the chief reward within the scope of the king's clerks in Ireland. Not only did Leek and Bicknor hold this office, but Thornbury aspired to it in rivalry to Bicknor after Leek's death. However, Thornbury's own death avoided a prolonged contest. It is to be set down to the credit of these alien administrators that Leek and Bicknor were chiefly instrumental in procuring the foundation of the mediæval university of Dublin. I have no information as to Roger Outlaw's origin. He probably owed his appointment as chancellor to the good service which he did in defending Ireland against Edward Bruce and the Scots.[4]

The subordination of Ireland was ensured by the Dublin treasurers being required, like the constables of Bordeaux, and the chamberlains of Chester and Wales, to account before the exchequer at Westminster. There is abundant evidence of the periodic crossing of the channel by Irish exchequer officials for the purposes of this account. Sometimes special officers were sent from England to enquire into or redress the state of affairs in Ireland. Thus the

1. *C. P. R., 1313-17*, p. 137.
2. Bicknor is the name of two villages in the forest of Dean. Alexander had, in 1311, licence to crenellate his house at Ruardean, Gloucestershire; *ib., 1307-13*, p. 355.
3. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, p. 202.
4. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 197.

well-known John of Hotham was sent in August 1314, to "supervise the estate of the exchequer of Dublin."[1] The Dublin treasurer was expected to make large contributions towards the expenses of the war against Scotland, and surprisingly large sums were occasionally rendered.

(1)—JUSTICES AND LIEUTENANTS OF IRELAND.

JOHN WOGAN, knight,	Appointed, 18 October, 1295,	*P.* 155.
	Ordered to surrender,[2] 30 April, 1313,	*Cl.* 568.
Edmund Butler,	Late deputy of John Wogan, 22 May, 1313,	*P.* 595.
RICHARD DE BURGH, earl of Ulster,	Appointed king's lieutenant, 15 June, 1308,	*P.* 83.
PETER OF GAVESTON, earl of Cornwall,	Appointed king's lieutenant, 16 June, 1308,	*Foedera,* ii, 51.
	Still acting, 28 June, 1309,	*P.* 122.
	Called late lieutenant, 7 October, 1309,	*P.* 194.
THEOBALD OF VERDON, baron,	Appointed, 30 April, 1313,	*P.* 568.
	Ordered to surrender, 4 January, 1315,	*P.* 207.
EDMUND BUTLER, earl of Carrick, after 1 September, 1315,	Appointed, 4 January, 1315,	*Foedera,* ii, 260.
	Ordered to surrender, 23 November, 1316,	*P.* 563.
ROGER MORTIMER OF WIGMORE, baron,	Appointed king's lieutenant, 23 November, 1316,	*P.* 563.
Mr. William Fitzjohn, archbishop of Cashel, and chancellor,	Acting as Mortimer's lieutenant, 11 August, 1318,	*P.* 196.
MR. ALEXANDER BICKNOR, archbishop of Dublin,	Appointed, 11 August, 1318,	*P.* 196.
	Ordered to surrender, 15 March, 1319,	*P.* 317.
ROGER MORTIMER OF WIGMORE, baron,	Appointed, 15 March, 1319,	*P.* 317.
	Ordered to surrender, 1 February, 1321,	*P.* 558.
RALPH OF GORGES, baron,	Appointed, 1 February, 1321,	*P.* 558.
	Acting, 30 March, 1321,	*Cl.* 295.
THOMAS FITZJOHN, (FITZGERALD), second earl of Kildare,	Appointed, 23 April, 1321,	*P.* 578.
	Ordered to surrender, 21 May, 1321,	*P.* 588.

1. *C. P. R., 1313-17,* p. 165. On 1 Sept., 1315, Hotham was empowered jointly with the justice, to remove "insufficient officers in Ireland and appoint others"; *Foedera,* ii, 276.

2. During the lieutenancy of Gaveston Wogan continued to act, even during the period when Gaveston was resident in Ireland.

John of Birmingham, first earl of Louth,	Appointed, 21 May, 1321,	*P.* 588.
	Ordered to surrender, 18 November, 1323,	*P.* 348.
John Darcy, baron,	Appointed, 18 November, 1323,	*P.* 348.
	Acting, 31 December, 1326,	*P.* 344.

(2)—Chancellors of Ireland.

Mr. Thomas Cantock, bishop of Emly after 1306,	Appointed, 28 October, 1291,	*P.* 448.
	Re-appointed, 5 June, 1308,	*P.* 76.
	Died before 27 February, 1309,	*F.* 39.
Walter of Thornbury, king's clerk, chancellor of the Dublin exchequer since 1307,	Appointed, 4 March, 1309,	*P.* 106.
	Died before 28 January, 1314,	*F.* 188.
Richard of Bereford, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1 April, 1314,	*P.* 102.
	Not chancellor by 29 June, 1316,	*P.* 486.
Mr. William Fitzjohn, bishop of Ossory since 1302,	Appointed, 8 August, 1316,	*P.* 524.
Nicholas of Balscott, king's clerk, chief baron of the exchequer, Dublin, since 1313,	Appointed, 2 June, 1317,	*P.* 658.
Mr. William Fitzjohn, archbishop elect of Cashel,	Appointed, 4 August, 1317,	*P.* 10.
	Ordered to surrender, 4 January, 1322,	*P.* 46.
Roger Outlaw, prior of the Hospital of St. John of Jerusalem in Ireland,	Appointed, 4 January, 1322,	*P.* 46.
	Still acting, 2 October, 1327,	*P.* 175.

(3)—Treasurers of the Exchequer at Dublin.

Richard of Bereford, king's clerk,	Appointed, 8 June, 1300,	*F.* 429.
	Ordered to surrender, 28 October, 1307,	*P.* 13.
Alexander of Bicknor, king's clerk, afterwards archbishop of Dublin,	Appointed, 28 October, 1307,	*P.* 13.
	Ordered to surrender, 20 May, 1313,	*P.* 585.
Walter of Thornbury,	Appointed by patent, 2 June, 1311, Bicknor's deputy, while the treasurer attended the general council of Vienne,	*P.* 351.

JOHN LEEK, archbishop of Dublin,	Appointed, 20 May, 1313,	*P.* 585.
	Died before 8 August, 1313,	*P.* 11.
Mr. WALTER OF ISLIP, king's clerk, baron of the Dublin exchequer since 1308,	Appointed, 2 February, 1314,	*P.* 82.
	Absent in England, 4 August, 1317 to nearly 23 July, 1318,	*Cl.* 561.
		Cl. 5.
	Acting, 28 June, 1319,	*Cl.* 90.
Nicholas of Balscott, clerk,	Appointed, to supply his place while in England, 4 August, 1317,	*Cl.* 561.
	Removed from all offices, 23 July, 1318,	*Cl.* 5.
JOHN OF COGAN,[1] king's clerk,	Appointed, 8 August, 1321,	*F.* 66.
	Ordered to surrender, 15 March, 1322,	*F.* 109.
WALTER OF ISLIP,	Appointed, 15 March, 1322,	*F.* 109.
	Ordered to surrender, 7 December, 1325,	*P.* 197.
ADAM OF HERWINGTON, king's clerk, chief baron of the Dublin exchequer since 1323,	Appointed to "the custody of the office of the treasurership of the exchequer of Dublin," 7 December, 1325,	*P.* 197.
	Ordered to surrender, 23 July, 1326,	*F.* 402.
JOHN OF COGAN, king's clerk,	Appointed, 23 July, 1326,	*F.* 402.

H.—CHIEF OFFICERS OF SCOTLAND.

The method of governing Scotland under its English king was first elaborated in 1305, after the conquest had apparently been definitively effected. It is elucidated in detail by a remarkable document on the Scottish king's household, originating in the English exchequer, but now among the manuscripts of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, which has been published by the late Miss Bateson.[2] It belongs to the period between the conquest of Scotland and the dissolution of the order of the Temple, and if not perhaps descriptive of a system that ever got into real working order, is at least evidence of what a good many

1. Cogan was twice previously appointed in this year, on 1 Feb. and 31 May, 1321, but the entries were cancelled in favour of the August one; *C. F. R., 1319-27*, pp. 46, 59.

2. *The Scottish King's Household and other Fragments* in Scottish History Society's Miscellany, ii, 1—43, 1904. Compare Miss Bateson's notice of the same document in the *Juridical Review*, Dec. 1901 and March 1902, Edinburgh. Compare M. R. James, *Catalogue of C. C. C. MSS.*, 1, 73.

English officials, and a certain number of Scots of English sympathies, wished to establish. It shews a real desire to carry on the traditional Scottish offices and customs, with however certain conspicuous amendments, suggested by English experience, notably in the case of the privy seal. Unluckily for the projectors of this system, it was destroyed by the success of Robert Bruce. After this there is something pathetic in the persistence with which ministers were appointed to carry out the government of Scotland on behalf of the English king. At their head was the king's justice or lieutenant of Scotland, who, as under Edward I, was an English nobleman of high rank. He received 10 marks a day as wages, but was required out of it to maintain the large number of sixty men-at-arms of his own private household.[1] Under him acted the chancellor and chamberlain of Scotland, both of these officials being promoted clerks of the English king. The controller, also a royal clerk, was the chief subordinate and official check of the chamberlain. Chamberlain was the traditional name of the first financial minister of Scotland, just as was the case in Wales and Chester. Generally the appointment was at this time made to the office of chamberlain and receiver. Except Hugh Cressingham, the unpopular English clerk appointed as treasurer in 1296, and slain at Stirling Bridge, in 1297, there were no treasurers of Scotland before the fifteenth century. Sometimes, however, the chamberlains were informally described as treasurers by Englishmen.[2] None of the English officials, contained in our lists, could ever have exercised much power, and, after Bannockburn, their position was, outside Berwick, purely nominal. Nevertheless the farce was kept up till at least 1317. By that time the various offices were continued under the same person, and he was to seal "on the view of the receiver of stores at Berwick."[3] The chancellor and chamberlain of Berwick in later times[4] carried on the tradition, though limited to the administration of a single Scottish town, the sole permanent result of the Edwardian attack on Scotland.

1. *Foedera*, ii, 4, 6, 70.

2. *C. P. R., 1307-13*, pp. 116, 464.

3. *Cal. Doc. Scot.*, iii, 107. When Berwick was for a time captured he lost his indentures; *ib.*, iii, 166.

4. *Ib.*, iii, 199, 208.

(1)—KEEPERS AND LIEUTENANTS OF SCOTLAND.

AYMER OF VALENCE, earl of Pembroke,	Re-appointed, 30 August, 1307, *Foedera*, ii, 4.,
JOHN OF BRITTANY, earl of Richmond,	Appointed, 13 September, 1307, *Ib.*, 6. Payment to begin, 29 September, 1307, Re-appointed, 15 January, 1308, *P.* 44.
William of Ros, of Helmsley, baron,	Appointed lieutenant of the keeper, 20 May, 1308, *Parl. Writs*, ii, ii, i, 372.
ROBERT OF UMFRAVILLE, earl of Angus, WILLIAM OF ROS, of Helmsley, baron,	Appointed joint lieutenants and keepers, 21 June, 1308, *Foedera*, ii, 51.
JOHN OF SEAGRAVE, baron,	Appointed keeper, 10 March, 1309, *Ib.*, ii, 71.
ROBERT OF CLIFFORD, baron,	Appointed keeper, 15 December, 1309, *Ib.*, ii, 100.
JOHN OF SEAGRAVE, baron,	Appointed keeper, 10 April, 1310, *Ib.*, ii, 106.
AYMER OF VALENCE, earl of Pembroke,	Appointed keeper and lieutenant until the king's arrival, 24 March, 1314, *Ib.*, ii, 245.

(2)—CHANCELLORS OF SCOTLAND.

Mr. WILLIAM OF BEVERCOATES, king's clerk,	Acting, 8 December, 1304, *Cl.* 229. Acting, 20 May, 1308, *Cl.* 66. Acting, 1 November, 1315, *P.* 365. Late chancellor, February, 1316, *C.D.S.* iii, 90.
JAMES OF BROUGHTON, king's clerk, controller of the chamberlain of Scotland, after 1 July, 1315,	Appointed, 17 June, 1317, *C.D.S.* iii, 107-8. Recently chancellor, Easter term, 1320, *I.R.* 191, m. 14.

(3)—CHAMBERLAINS AND RECEIVERS OF SCOTLAND.

JOHN OF SANDALL, king's clerk,	Acting, 31 March, 1305, *Hist. Doc. Scot.*, ii, 488. Ordered to surrender, 29 September, 1307, *P.* 6.
Mr. EUSTACE OF COTTESBACH, clerk,	Appointed, 10 September, to act from 29 September, 1307, *P.* 6. Ordered to surrender, 14 March, 1309, *P.* 104.

Robert Heron, king's clerk, controller of Scotland,	Appointed his deputy, 10 September, 1307,	*P.* 6.
Mr. John of Weston, king's clerk,	Appointed, 14 March, 1309,	*P.* 104.
	Ordered to surrender, 1 June, 1315,	*F.* 250.
		C.D.S. iii, 82.
Stephen le Blunt, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1 June, 1315,	*Foedera,* ii, 268.
	Ordered to surrender, 1 July, 1315,	*F.* 252.
Mr. John of Weston, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1 July, 1315,	*F.* 252.
	Accused of fraud and peculation before the Council, 4 June, 1317,	*C.D.S.* iii, 106-7.
	Called late chamberlain, 16 October, 1317,	*P.* 34.
James of Broughton, "chancellor of Scotland,"	Appointed chamberlain, 17 June, 1317,	*C.D.S.* iii, 107.

(4)—Controllers of the Chamberlains of Scotland.

Robert Heron, king's clerk,	Acting, 10 September, 1307,	*P.* 6.
Robert of Well, king's clerk,	Appointed, 2 August, 1311,	*P.* 381.
James of Broughton, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1 July, 1315,	*P.* 305.

I.—OFFICERS OF THE DUCHY OF GASCONY.

The two chief officers of the English king in his capacity of duke of Gascony were, firstly, the seneschal, whose position corresponded to that of the justices in Wales and Chester, and, secondly, the constable of Bordeaux, who, like the chamberlains in Wales and Chester, had the supreme responsibility for finance. As regards the reign of Edward I, full details of the holders of these offices and their functions are given in M. Bémont's admirable introduction to the *Rôles Gascons* of Edward I.[1] It is much to be regretted that we have no such help for the reign of Edward II, whose Gascon rolls remain unpublished and uncalendered. Some help is got, however, from the casual

1. *Rôles Gascons,* iii, xix—cii, Documents inédits sur l'histoire de France, 1906.

and unsatisfying, but generally accurate, excerpts in Carte's *Gascon Rolls*,[1] from the numerous extracts from the rolls in Rymer's *Foedera*, and also from the abbé Tauzin's *Les Seneschaux anglais en Guyenne*.[2] For the latter reign we have chiefly to notice the short duration of the various seneschalships, the long time which often ensued between the appointment and the actual taking up of office, and the frequent absence of the seneschals in attending the parliament of Paris, and in going on missions to Avignon and elsewhere. Accordingly the duties were often discharged by lieutenants of the seneschal. The result was that the traditional seneschal's fee of 2,000 "good small pounds of Tours," equivalent to £500 sterling,[3] was inadequate, the more so as he was expected to pay the wages of his deputies, which were usually ten shillings a day.[4] Accordingly, "reasonable expenses" were also allowed the seneschal, when absent on duty at the French court or elsewhere, and sometimes considerable gifts were made in addition.[5] The seneschal was sometimes required to provide a retinue, as, for instance, John of Hastings, who, when lieutenant of Edward I, received wages at the rate of £1,095 per annum, "for himself and thirty men-at-arms staying on the king's service in the duchy."[6]

The authority of the seneschal is sometimes distinguished from that of the royal lieutenant. Normally the same person acted in both capacities, but sometimes, especially in critical periods, or when a very great personage was sent to Gascony, the seneschal's authority was subordinated to that of the king's lieutenant. On these occasions the latter was primarily the military commander, and the seneschal

1. Thomas Carte, *Catalogue des rolles gascons, normans, et françois.* 2 vols. London, 1743.

2. *Revue de Gascogne*, t. xxxii, pp. 353, *et seq.* This list is unluckily not very accurate.

3. *G. R., 1-3 Edw. II*, m. 5: "duo millia librarum bonarum paruarum turonensium quarum quatuor valent unum sterlingum.

4. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 53, gives this as the sum received by Amanieu de Fossat, in 1309-10. The king paid Amanieu, but deducted the sum from the seneschal's wages. Compare *Foedera*, ii, 345, for the case of Antony di Pessagno.

5. For instances of these payments see *Gascon Rolls, 1-3 Edw. II*, m. 5; *Foedera*, ii, 221, records a supplementary grant to Amaury de Craon of £5,000 of Tours; compare *ib.*, ii, 377, for expenses and gift to W. Montagu.

6. *C. P. R., 1317-21*, p. 53. These "wages" were still unpaid in 1317, as were those of Hastings as lieutenant of Edward II. The latter were at the more normal rate of £1. 7s. 4¾d. a day, a day, *i.e.* nearly, but not quite, £500 a year.

the administrator.[1] The chief instance in our period is that of Edmund of Kent, under whom the seneschal continued to discharge the routine duties of the government in his presence, or to represent him in his absence. On several occasions special commissions from England limited the authority of the seneschal, exploited Gascon revenues in English interests, aimed at promoting administrative reform in Gascony, or simply represented its duke in the unending negotiations with France. Allusion to these has been made elsewhere.

In all the Gascon lists deputies of the various ministers have their names printed in italic capitals, and indented.

(1)—Seneschals of Gascony.

John of Havering, knight,	Acting (for second time), from 24 March, 1305, to 17 October, 1307, Bémont, *R.G.*, iii, no. 4085.
	Still acting, 6 October, 1308, *Foedera*, ii, 95.
Guy Ferre, knight,	Appointed (for second time), 12 March, 1308, *G. R., 1–8 Ed. II*, m. 24.
Amanieu du Fossat, knight,	His lieutenant, 15 May, 1309, *Ib.*, m. 10.
John of Hastings, knight,	Appointed (for second time), "locum tenens regis et senescallus," 24 October, 1309, *Foedera*, ii, 95.
	Received wages, 26 October, 1309, to 15 April, 1310, *P.* (*1317–21*), 53.
Amanieu du Fossat,	His lieutenant, 26 October, 1309, to 15 April, 1310, *Ib.*
Assieu de Goulard.	His lieutenant, 13 August, 1311, *G. R., 9 Ed. II*, m. 8.
John of Ferrers, knight,	Appointed, 24 January, 1312, *Ib., 4–5 Ed. II*, m. 6.
Jordan Morant, clerk,	His lieutenant, 26 June, 1312, *Ib.*, m. 1.
Stephen de Ferreol, lord of Tonneins, knight,	Appointed, 28 October, 1312, *Foedera*, ii, 185.
	Pembroke empowered to revoke his commission and appoint another, 3 February, 1313, *Ib.*, ii, 198.

1. Bémont, *R. G.*, iii, lxxxiii.

AMAURY DE CRAON,[1] knight, king's kinsman,	Appointed, 2 July, 1313, *G. R., 4–5 Ed. II*, m. 1, cf. m. 6.
GAUCELM DE CAMPAGNE,	His lieutenant in 18 June, 1316, *G. R., 9 Ed. II*, m. 2.
GILBERT PECCHÉ,[2] knight, king's kinsman,	Appointed, 18 July, 1316, *G. R., 10 Ed. II*, m. 12.
	Acting, 12 September, 1317, *Cl.* 567.
ANTONIO DI PESSAGNO, of Genoa, knight,	Appointed, 3 November, 1317, *Ib., 11–12 Ed. II*, m. 16. *Foedera*, ii, 345.
	Ordered to go to England, 17 November, 1318, *G. R., 11–12 Ed. II*, m. 5.
AMANIEU DU FOSSAT,	Appointed, 17 November, 1318, "ad regimen senescalie custodiendum quousque prefatus senescallus noster redierit," *Ib.*
WILLIAM OF MONTAGU, knight,	Appointed, 20 November, 1318, *Ib.*, m. 5; *Foedera*, ii, 377.
	(Died, before 6 November, 1319).
AMANIEU DU FOSSAT.	Appointed keeper, "quosque aliud inde duxerimus ordinandum," 6 November, 1319, *Foedera*, ii, 406.
MAURICE OF BERKELEY, knight, king's kinsman,	Appointed, 28 February, 1320, *Foedera*, ii, 418.
AMAURY DE CRAON, again,	Appointed, 22 July, 1320, *G. R., 13–14 Ed. II*, m. 7.
	Acting, 16 February, 1322, *Cl.* 522.
FULK LESTRANGE, knight,	Appointed, 11 April, 1322, *G. R., 15–17 Ed. II*, m. 15.

1. See for the Craon family, Bémont, *R. G.*, ii, l-lii, who refers to B. de Broussillon, *Le maison de Craon* (1893). Amaury's grandfather, Amaury IV de Craon, married Isabella de la Marche, half sister of Henry III. His father, son of this couple, Amaury V de Craon, was lieutenant of Gascony, 1289-92, and died in 1293. Edward II's officer was therefore Amaury VI of Craon. Craon is in Anjou, dep. Mayenne, arr. Chateau Gontier. The family also held Sablé in the same district.

2. I do not know why Pecché is called king's kinsman. Perhaps his grandmother Eva, "de partibus transmarinis oriunda," *Liber memorandorum ecclesie de Bernewelle*, p. 48, the wife of an earlier Gilbert Pecché, was one of the Lusignan brood. This would perhaps help to account for their son, father of the seneschal, bequeathing the patronage of Barnwell priory and much of his property to Edward I and queen Eleanor; *ib.*, 50. The name, in Latin "Peccatum," Maitland boldly wrote as Pecché, modern form Peachey; *ib.*, xlvi, Introd.

RALPH BASSET OF DRAYTON, knight,	Appointed, 11 June, 1323, *Ib., 15–17 Ed. II*, m. 10. Removed before 15 March, 1324, *Foedera*, ii, 547.
ROBERT OF SHIRLAND, mayor of Bordeaux,	Appointed keeper, "quousque de senescallo ibidem ordinando providere valeamus," 15 March, 1324, *G. R., 15–17 Ed. II*, m. 6. *Foedera*, ii, 547. ? Still acting, 18 April, 1324, *Ib.*, ii, 550.
RICHARD GREY, knight,	Appointed, 1 April, 1324, *G. R., 15–17 Ed. II*, m. 4. Still acting, 10 July, 1324, *Foedera*, ii, 560.
EDMUND OF WOODSTOCK, earl of Kent,	Appointed, "locum tenens regis et capitaneum,"[1] 20 July, 1324, *Foedera*, ii, 562.
RALPH BASSET, knight,	Appointed seneschal under Kent, 21 July, 1324, *G. R., 18 Ed. II*, m. 30.
JOHN OF WISHAM,[2] knight,	Appointed, 18 November, 1324, *Ib., 18 Ed. II*, m. 21. ? Re-appointed by Edward of Windsor, 14 September, 1325, *P.* 174. Surrendered seal, 2 January, 1327, *I.R.* 217.
? *JOHN OF SEAGRAVE*,[2] senior, knight,	Appointed, 18 November, 1324, *G. R., 18 Ed. II*, m. 30.
EDWARD, EARL OF CHESTER.[3]	Appointed duke of Aquitaine, 10 September, 1325, *Foedera*, ii, 607-8.
OLIVER OF INGHAM, knight,	Appointed, 10 March, 1326, *G. R., 19–20 Ed. II*, m. 5.

1. John of Warenne, earl of Surrey, was appointed captain of the army in Gascony until the arrival of the king's lieutenant; *G. R., 18 Edw. II.* m. 9.

2. These were alternative appointments, power to make either being given by patent to Edward of Windsor; *C. P. R., 1324-7* p. 71; Wisham probably acted.

3. On 10 Sept., 1325, the king's eldest son, the earl of Chester, was appointed duke of Aquitaine; *Foedera*, ii, 607. The administration was continued in the name of Edward II, who described himself on later writs as "Edwardi filii nostri primogeniti, Aquitanie ducis ac comitis Cestrie Pontiue et Montisstrolli, ac terrarum ac rerum ipsius gubernator et administrator."

(2)—CONSTABLES OF BORDEAUX.

Mr. RICHARD OF HAVERING, king's clerk,	Appointed, 28 March, 1305, Bémont, *R. G.* iii, cii. Archbishop elect of Dublin before 16 September, 1307, *P.* 2.
Mr. JORDAN MORANT, king's clerk,	Appointed, 15 March, 1308, *G. R., 1-3 Ed. II*, m. 22.
AMERIGO DEI FRESCOBALDI, king's merchant,	Appointed, 6 April, 1309, *Ib., 1-3 Ed. II*, m. 12. His agents and property in Gascony seized, 12 October, 1311, *Ib., 4-5 Ed. II*, m. 10.
UGOLINO UGOLINI,	Appointed his attorney, 8 April, 1309, *Ib., 1-3 Ed. II*, m. 11.
MR. JOHN GUITARD, clerk, controller of Bordeaux, *MR. ALBERT MEDICI,* clerk,	Appointed joint receivers, 12 October, 1311, *Ib.*
Mr. JOHN MORANT, king's clerk,	Re-appointed constable, 1 December, 1311, *Ib.*, m. 7.
MR. JOHN GUITARD,	Lieutenant, 1312-13, *Ib.*, m. 1.
MR. JOHN GUITARD, *MR. ALBERT MEDICI,*	Lieutenants up to and after Easter, 1313.
Mr. AICARD BARBE, king's clerk,	Accounted from 4 March, 1314, to 1 June, 1315, *Misc. Books Exch., T.R.*, clxxxvii, 192. Still acting, 2 August and 6 October, 1315, *G. R., 9 Ed. II*, mm. 16, 20.
RICHARD OF ELSFIELD, king's clerk,	Appointed, 6 December, 1318, *Ib.*, m. 11, and *Ib., 12 Ed. II*, m. 4. Received protection as going to Gascony, 20 July, 1319, *P.* 380. Ordered to England, to answer complaints, 27 July, 1320, Lehugeur, p. 262.
ADAM OF LYMBERGH, king's clerk,	Appointed, 24 April, 1322, *G. R., 15 Ed. II*, m. 15. Still acting, 1 October, 1324, *Ib., 18 Ed. II*, m. 26.

John Travers, king's clerk,	Appointed, 1 April, 1324,	*Ib., 17 Ed. II*, m. 4.
	Re-appointed by duke Edward, 14 September, 1325,	*P.* 174.
	Still acting, Easter term, 1326,	*I. R.*, 218.
Mr. Albert Medici, clerk,	Appointed, 12 March, 1326,	*G. R., 19–20 Ed. II*, m. 5.
	Acting till appointment of John Weston, clerk, 7 February, 1327.	

J.—SENESCHALS OF PONTHIEU AND MONTREUIL.

Richard of Rokesle, knight,	Appointed, 1 November, 1307,	*P.* 10.
	Still acting, 14 May, 1308,	*P.* 74.
John Delaunay, knight,	Appointed, 14 May, 1309,	*P.* 114.
John Lenfant, knight,	Appointed, 5 October, 1312,	*P.* 501.
	Still acting, 18 September, 1315,	*Cl.* 301. *Foedera*, ii, 278.
Robert de Fiennes, knight,	Appointed, 25 August, 1316,	*P.* 539.
	Ordered to surrender, 15 August, 1320,	*P.* 502.
John de Castre, knight,	Appointed, 15 August, 1320,	*P.* 501.
	Still acting, 30 December, 1322,	*P.* 231.
	? Deceased, before 11 August, 1326,	*P.* 307.
Edward, earl of Chester,	Made count of Ponthieu, 2 September, 1325,	*P.* 173.
	Has power to nominate a seneschal, 14 September, 1325,	*P.* 175.

INDEX.

Aardenburg, Flanders, and the foreign staple, 245
Abel, John, knight, baron of exchequer, 335n, 339, 342; escheator, 363
Abergavenny, 154
Abingdon, Mr. Richard of, king's clerk, baron of exchequer, 335n, 342
Administration, personnel of, 28-30; system of, 30, 31; neglect of, 39-43; reforms in, under Edward II, 157-204
Agenais, receivers of, 219; in French hands, 223
Airmyn, Richard of, chancery clerk 62; keeper of the seal, 323, 327; keeper of the rolls, 329
Airmyn, William of, chancery clerk, 57n, 62; compiler of the roll of parliament of Lincoln, 104; vice-chancellor, 184, 185 and n; bishop of Norwich, 232 and n, 234; keeper of the seal, 320, 323, 324, 325, 326, 327, 328; keeper of the rolls, 329; and warden of the converts, 330; keeper of the privy seal, 357
Albe, M. E. *Les suites du traité de Paris*, 212n
Alien priories, the, 34
Aliens, the religious, 234
Amory, Richard of, knight, steward of the household, 160, 354; justice of Chester, 378, 380; justice of North Wales, 379
Amory, Roger of, baron, uncle of Richard, 115, 139; his share of the Clare lands, 140; death of, 154, 240
Angus, Robert of Umfraville, earl of, keeper of the forest, 360; lieutenant of Scotland, 391
Annales Londonienses, 5, 95
Annales Paulini, 5
Annates, 229, 230
Antwerp, Brabant, the foreign staple at, 244, 245, 246, 247; held by Edward I, 244
Appeals, statute of, 234
Armagnac, John, count of, 217 and n
Articuli super Cartas, 51, 61, 70, 84
Artois, a centre of cloth trade, 246
Arundel, Edmund Fitzalan, earl of, 15n, 141; member of the council of 1318, 122n; joins the middle party, 117; joins Edward II against Badlesmere, 147; justice of Wales, 155, 161, 209, 377, 378, 379
Ashburton, staple town for tin, 261n
Askeby, Robert of, chancery clerk, keeper of the seal, 324, 325
Assier, Master Rigaud of, papal nuncio, 113 and n, 130n, 230, 231 and n, 232; bishop of Winchester, 231n
Asthall, Mr. Thomas of, king's clerk, chamberlain of N. Wales, 380 and n
Atkyns, Richard, 268
Audley, Hugh of, senior, knight, justice of N. Wales, 377, 378n, 379; justice of Chester, 380; steward of the household, 353
Audley, Hugh, the younger, 115, 139, 140; forfeiture of, 154
Avignon, papal residence at, 230
Ayleston, Mr. Robert of, king's clerk, baron of exchequer, 344; chancellor of exchequer, 345; keeper of the privy seal, 357; keeper of the rolls of chancery, 373

Bacon, John, king's clerk, keeper of the rolls, 370, 372; justice of common bench, 368, 371
Badlesmere, Bartholomew, baron, partisan of Lancaster, 106; his quarrel with Lancaster, 111 and n; his missions to Avignon, 112, 114, 136; his alliance with Pembroke, 115; and the middle party, 118; member of the standing council, 1318, 130; assists in drafting the household ordinance of York, 131 and n, 268n, 270; negociates with the Scots, 133n, 135 and n; joins the opposition, 1321, 145 and n, 146 and n; his isolation, 146-7-8; his execution, 149; his part in reform, 158, 159; in Gascony, 222; steward of the household, 126, 127, 139n, 268n, 270, 354

Badlesmere, Lady, her insult to Queen Isabella, 147
Baker, Geoffrey le, his chronicle, 5, 6
Bakewell, John of, knight, alderman of London, seneschal of Ponthieu, 246, 336 and n; baron of the exchequer, 341 and n
Bakewell, Cecilia, wife of John, 336n
Bakewell, Thomas of, son of John, 336n
Baldock, Ralph of, bishop of London, chancellor, 77; loses office, 78; an ordainer, 86, 135, 323
Baldock, Master Robert of, archdeacon of Middlesex, 20, 21; aids Despenser, 137, 145; negociates with the Scots, 150; chancellor,, 182, 183 and n, 184, 233, 260, 327, 328; his chancery administration, 167; his part in reform, 159-60; controller of the wardrobe, in defiance of the ordinances, 136, 163, 355; keeper of the privy seal, 134, 135, 163, 191, 357
Baldwin, Prof. J. F., *The King's Council*, 43n, 183n
Balscott, Nicholas of, king's clerk, chancellor of Ireland, 388; deputy to Islip, 389
Bamburgh, castle of, 96 and n
Banaster, Adam, at war with Lancaster, 103
Bangor, bishop of, see Sais, Eineon
Bankers, the Gascon, 83
Bankers, the Italian, 37, 83, 84, 114, 240, 246; their policy towards the English staple, 263; see also Bardi, Frescobaldi, Pessagno
Bannockburn, battle of, 8, 18, 34, 74, 105; results of, 100, 102; tactics of, 224, 225-228; capture of privy seal at, 102, 162
Barbe, Mr. Aicard, king's clerk, constable of Bordeaux, 219, 397
Barbour, his *Bruce*, 7
Bardelby, Robert, chancery clerk, keeper of the seal, 323, 324, 325, 326
Bardi, the, financiers, 241; their interest in the staple, 251, 257, 258; their offences against the staple ordinance, 259, 260; in conflict with English merchants, 263, 264
Barons of the exchequer, see Exchequer
Basing, William of, sheriff, 101n
Basset, Ralph, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 396
Bataille, William de la, 381n
Beauchamp, Guy, see Warwick, earl of; family of, holding hereditary chamberlainship, 349
Beauchamp, William of, baron of the exchequer, 334
Beaumont, Henry of, 96, 102; attack on, 114
Beaumont, Louis of, bishop of Durham, 231n, 232; attack on, 114
Bedwyn, Walter, king's clerk, king's remembrancer, 347, 348
Bek, Antony, bishop of Durham, 32
Bek, John, 72n
Bellers, Roger of, knight, baron of exchequer, 50, 314, 330, 339, 343; his part in reform, 160 and n, 199; deputy treasurer, 200, 333; death of, 201
Bémont, M. Charles, *Rôles Gascons*, 392
Bench, the Common, chief clerk of the, to be appointed in parliament, 93
Bench, the King's, following the crown, 56n; to remain at Westminster, 61
Benches, chief justices of the two, to be appointed in parliament, 93; officers of the two, 366-374
Benstead, John of, clerk, afterwards knight, 50n; controller and keeper of the wardrobe, 77 and n, 78; his accounts, 82 and n, 201, 203, 355; in Gascony, 219; chancellor of the exchequer, 344, 345; justice of common bench, 367-9, 371; Petronilla, wife of, 82n
Bereford, Richard of, king's clerk, chancellor of Ireland, 388; treasurer of Dublin exchequer, 388
Bereford, William of, knight, chief justice of common bench, 367, 369, 370, 373 and n; declared sufficient, 1318, 126
Berkeley, Maurice of, baron, justice of S. Wales, 377, 379; seneschal of Gascony, 395
Berwick, capture of, 110, 120; siege of, 133
Berwick, John, clerk of Edward I, 77n
Béthune, Richard of, mayor of the merchants of the staple, 247 and n, 259 and n, 260; his action on the staple question, 266, 366 and n
Bevercotes, Mr. William of, king's clerk, chancellor of Scotland, 391
Bicknor, Mr. Alexander, archbishop of Dublin, 208, 222; justice of Ireland, 385, 386, 387; treasurer of the Dublin exchequer, 388

Bilkemore, Robert of, escheator, 364
Binstead, see Benstead
Birmingham, John of, see Louth, earl of
Bishoprics, papal appointments to, 34, 231
Blanche of Artois, queen of France, 17n
Bland, Mr. A. E., 252n, 256n
Blaneford, Henry, his chronicle, 7 and n
Bleddyn, David ap, bishop of St. Asaph, 232n
Blomville, John of, escheator, 363
Blount, Thomas le, steward of the household, 161, 354
Blount, William le, knight, in custody of the seal, 327
Blunt, Peter le, clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 351
Bluntesdon, Henry of, warden of the converts, 328
Bohun, Humphrey, see Hereford, earl of
Bolland, Mr. W. C. Introduction to the *Eyre of Kent*, 238n
Bolingbroke, John of, escheator, 364
Bordeaux, Bertrand de Got, archbishop of, 216; see also Clement V
Bordeaux, constables of, 53, 215, 216, 224, 397; controller of castle of, 215 and n, 216; mayor of, 13n, 223, 396
Bordeaux, Oliver of, king's valet, 73
Borhount, Thomas of, tenant-in-chief, 302
Boroughbridge, battle of, 20; tactics, 34, 148, 154, 173, 227 and n, 228
Boston, town with cocket seal, 243n, 249n, 261n
Botetourt, John, baron, member of the standing council, 1318, 130
Boudon, William of, usher of Edward of Carnarvon, afterwards keeper of Queen Isabella's wardrobe, 73
Bourchier, John of, knight, justice of common bench, 372
Bourne, William of, ? clerk, justice of common bench, 368 and n, 371
Bowyer, Adam, household servant, 312
Brabant, John, duke of, 244; his charter to English merchants, 244, 246; clothiers of, fear English manufactures, 265; see also Antwerp
Brabazon, Roger le, knight, chief justice of king's bench, 373
Braose, house of, 140; William de, 140
Brecon, 155
Brickhill, William of, king's clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 350
Bridlington, canon of, *Gesta Edwardi de Carnarvan*, 5, 7, 90, 91n, 129
Bristol, revolt against the king in, 103, 112, 240; a staple town, 1326, 261n.; possessing cocket seal, 243n, 249n
Brittany, John of, see Richmond, John, earl of
Brocklesby, William of, king's clerk, king's remembrancer, 346n, 348
Brome, Adam of, king's clerk, founder of Oriel College, Oxford, 62, 240, 319; justice of the staple, 258, 259n
Broughton, James of, king's clerk, chancellor of Scotland, 391; chamberlain of Scotland, 392; controller of Scotland, 392
Brown, Matthew, escheator, 364
Brown, Mr. R. Stewart. *Cheshire Chamberlain's Accounts*, 79n, 375
Bruce, Barbour's, 7
Bruce, Edward, in Ireland, 103; defeat of, 132, 207, 208, 209, 384
Bruce, Robert, king of Scots, 38, 81, 118, 206, 207, 390; attacks northern England, 100, 103, 110; recognition of, 150; at Bannockburn, 225, 226; his dealings with the legates, 115; his excommunication, 132; his dealings with the papacy, 229, 233
Bruges, Flanders, the foreign staple at, 244, 245, 247, 250, 251, 253, 258, 259, 260, 263
Burgh, Hugh of, chancery clerk, keeper of the seal, 325
Burgh, Richard of, see Ulster, earl of
Burgh, Thomas of, escheator, 361, 363
Burghersh, Henry, bishop of Lincoln, 135, 231n, 232, 234
Burnell, Robert, bishop of Wells, chancellor, 60, 61, 66, 181
Burstow, William of, clerk, chamberlain of Chester, 383
Burstwick, Yorks, manor of, appropriated to the chamber, 173, 174
Bury, Richard of, king's clerk, afterwards bishop of Durham, chamberlain of Chester, 378, 383 and n
Butlers in Ireland, the, 208
Butler, Edmund, see Carrick, Edmund, earl of
Byland, battle of, 150, 227

—

Cade, William, financier, 250n, 45n
Caerau, Henry of, 382n
Cahors, James of, see John XXII, pope

Calhau, family of, 13n; relations with Gaveston, *ib.*; capitalists, 83, 216
Calhau, Arnold, knight, mayor of Bordeaux, 13n; seneschal of Saintonge, keeper of Oléron, 84, 221
Calhau, Bertrand, the elder, 13n
Calhau, Bertrand, the younger, 13n, 83 and n, 84
Calhau, Peter, mayor of Bordeaux, 13n
Callthrop, Miss C. M., 269
Cambridge, Thomas of, king's clerk, baron of exchequer, in Gascony, 219, 338, 339, 340, 341
Cambridge, university of, 233, 239
Camera curiae, 63, 64
Campagne, Gaucelm de, lieutenant of the seneschal of Gascony, 395
Cancellaria and *hospicium* contrasted, 61
Canterbury, Mr. Henry of, king's clerk, 191
Canterbury, execution of Badlesmere at, 149; archbishops of, see Winchelsea, Thomas, and Reynolds, Walter; the king's exchange at, 364-6
Cantock, Mr. Thomas, bishop of Emly, chancellor of Ireland, 388
Cantrev Mawr, lordship of, granted to Despenser, 139, 140, 154, 377
Capitalists, growth of class of, 240
Cardiff, a staple town, 1326, 210-11, 261n
Cardiganshire, 377; the steward of, *ib.*
Carlisle, parliament of 1307, 61n; bishops of, see Ross, John, and Halton, John; statute of, 228, 229; taxation of bishopric of, 236; earl of, see Harclay, Sir Andrew
Carlton, William of, king's clerk, baron of exchequer, 337, 338, 340, 341
Carmarthen, castle of, 377; chamberlains of, 377, 381-3; priory and priors of, 377, 378, 382; staple town, 1326, 261n
Carmarthenshire, 155, 377
Carmelite friars, at Oxford, 240
Carreg Cennin, castle of, secured by Despenser, 154
Carrick, Edmund Butler, earl of, justice of Ireland, 384, 387
Cashel, archbishop of, see Fitzjohn, Mr. William
Castre, John de, knight, seneschal of Ponthieu, 398
Chamber, the king's, 43, 44, 62-65, 68, 168; records of, 2-4; reforms in, 152; revival of, 164, 168-175; a court chancery, 170; office of, 172, 173; revenues in, 169, 170, 174; seals of, 170, 172, 174, 175; manors of, 173; knights of, oppose the ordinances, 106; officers of the, 174, 281; ushers, 281, 311; serjeants-at-arms, 281; serjeants, 306; valets, 281, 312; serjeant butler, 289; serjeant porter, 297; serjeant of the napery, 287; valets of the door, 297; pages, 281; launderer, 287, 312; launderer of the napery, 288; valets of the napery, 287; valet of the cup-house, 289; ewerer and valet, 287; sumpter horses, 301
Chamberlain, the king's, 12, 93, 126, 144, 349, 354-5; see also Charlton, John, lord of Powys, and Despenser, Hugh, the younger; of England, see Oxford, earl of
Chamberlains of the exchequer, see Exchequer
Chancellor, the office of, 30; chancellor to be appointed in parliament, 93; changes after Bannockburn, 100-101; list of, under Edward II, 323-328
Chancellor of the exchequer, see exchequer
Chanceries, the different secretarial departments or, 164
Chancery, the department of the, 30, 31, 40, 41, 58-9, 60-62, 62n; following the crown, 54, 56n; to remain at Westminster, 61; career in the, 66, 69; baronial support of the, 70; under Edward I, 58-62; under Edward II, 180-186; reforms of the, 152, 180-186; compared with the French chancery, 165; clerks of, 61, 62, 66, 184, 331; its relations with the exchequer, 45, 52, 83, 184; "held in the exchequer," 54, 56-7; and court offices, 64; hanaper of the, 59, 71, 181, 197, 319; accounts of the, 179, 186; its relations to the household, 60-64, 184, 186; household of the, 59, 328, 338; keepers of *domus conversorum*, 184, 319, 328, 329; keepers of the rolls of, 62, 184, 193, 319; keepers of the seal, office of, 322; officers of, 319-330; records of, 1-2, 190, 193, 194; rolls of, 1-2, 185, 186, 319, 328; seal of, 58; wardrobe and, 166-7-8; of France, 165-6; of Gascony, 224; of Ireland, 385, 387-8; of Scotland, 391; of Wales and Chester, 375
Chandos, John of, prior of Carmarthen, chamberlain of S. Wales, 383
Charles IV, king of France, 17n

Charlton, John, lord of Powys, king's chamberlain, 73, 80, 81, 93n, 108, 116 and n, 352, 354; joins the middle party, 117; at war in Wales, 103, 138; attacks Despenser, 141, 163, 169, 266n, 352
Charlton, John, mercer, mayor of the merchants of the staple, member of parliament for London, 247 and n, 252; in Flanders, 253 and n; leader of the London capitalists, 256-7; against the Bardi, 258; justice of the staple, 258; collapse of his policy, 259 and n; supports the English staple, 263; mayor of the staple, 264 and n; his official position, 265, 266n, 366
Charlton, Mr. Thomas of, king's clerk, keeper of the privy seal, 108, 126, 134, 163, 171, 357; controller of the wardrobe, 108 and n, 126, 355; joins the middle party, 116, 117
Chedworth, Thomas of, king's clerk, chamberlain of N. Wales, 381
Chepstow, honour of, secured by Despenser, 154
Cheshunt, Mr. Stephen of, clerk, chamberlain of Chester, 383
Chester, town with cocket seal, 249n; earldom and earl of, 209, 211, 374; see also Edward of Windsor; officers of, 374-378, 379-380, 383-384
Chichester, bishop of, see Langton, John; town with cocket seal, 249n
Chigwell, Hamo of, clerk, then knight, 50n; mayor of London, 237, 240, 264n, 266
Chronicles of the period, 5-8
Church, Edward I and the, 37; his hostility to, 234; his policy towards, 228; Edward II and the, 228-235
Cilgerran, 154
Clare, Despenser and the inheritance of, 137
Clare, Eleanor of, wife of Hugh le Despenser, 139
Clare, Elizabeth of, widow of Roger of Amory, founds Clare Hall, Cambridge, 240
Clare, Gilbert of, see Gloucester, earl of
Clare, Margaret of, wife of Gaveston, 14, 80; wife of Hugh Audley, 140
Clare, Mr. Richard of, king's clerk, escheator, 363
Clark, Mr. G. T. *Cartae et Munimenta ad dominium de Glamorgan pertinentia*, 142n
Claydon, William of, knight, acting keeper of the forest, 360
Clement V, pope, 37, 79, 98; bull of, 207, 239; and Gascony, 216, 217 and n, 218 and n; executors of, 220, 228, 229 and n; death of, 230 and n; his relations to England, 228-30, 232, 233 and n, 235
Clergy, taxation of, 112, 229, 230-1, 234
Clerks of the household, see Wardrobe, Great Wardrobe and Privy Seal; see also Chancery and Exchequer
Cliff, Mr. Henry of, chancery clerk, 137n; keeper of the seal, 323, 325, 326, 327, 328, 357; keeper of the rolls, 329
Cliff, William of, clerk to Despenser, 136; in the king's council, 137 and n; chancery clerk and keeper of the seal, 325, 326, 327
Clifford, Robert of, baron, keeper of the forest, 359; lieutenant of Scotland, 391; killed at Bannockburn, 225
Clifford, Roger, son of above, hereditary sheriff of Westmorland, 101n
Clifton, Gervase of, 348n
Clitheroe, Robert of, clerk, escheator, 362
Clun, 155
Cluny, abbot of, 234
Cobham, John, baron of exchequer, 337
Cobham, Thomas, bishop of Worcester, 231n, 232, 240; member of the council of 1318, 122n, 130n
Cockermouth, John of, king's clerk, keeper of the exchanges, 94 and n, 365; king's remembrancer, 348
Cocket seal, 243, 248; customs certified by, 261
Cofferer of the wardrobe, see Wardrobe
Cogan, John of, king's clerk, treasurer of Dublin exchequer, 389 and n
Cole, Henry, his *Records*, 1, 124, 185
Collingbourn, Peter of, cofferer of the wardrobe, 356
Colwick, Hugh of, scribe of the Exchequer, 349n
Commons, see Parliament
Conduit, Reginald, merchant of London, 241, 259n, 264n
Consilium of the barons, 72n
Constitutio domus regis, 269
Controller of the wardrobe, see Wardrobe

Cornwall, Margaret, widow of Edmund, earl of, hereditary sheriff of Rutland, 101n
Cornwall, earl of, see Gaveston, Peter of
Cork, staple town, 1326, 261n
Coshall, William of, king's clerk, treasurer's remembrancer, 347, 349 and n
Cottesbach, Mr. Eustace of, clerk, chamberlain of Scotland, 391
Council, permanent, set up by treaty of Leake, 121; its powers, 122; members of 122n; additions to, 129-30
Councils held "in the exchequer," 54, 56-57
Court, emancipation of chancery from the, 186; see also Household
Court party, the, 75; its opposition to the ordinances, 120; and the chamber, 172-3
Courtenay, Hugh, baron, member of the council of 1318, 122n, 139n
Courtrai, battle of, 226, 227 and n
Cowick, the ordinance of, 192, 194
Craon, Amaury, de, seneschal of Gascony, 222, 393n, 395 and n
Crecy, battle of, 34, 226, 228
Cressingham, Hugh, clerk, 390
Crophill, Mr. Ralph of, clerk, escheator, 127n, 362
Cromwell, John, steward of the household, 354; keeper of the forest, 360
Cromwell, Richard of, king's clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 351
Crump and Johnson, Messrs., on exchequer rolls, 55n; "Tables of Bullion," 365
Cumberland, sheriffdom of, 101n; sheriff of, 129
Curia regis, 30; under the Angevins, 44, 45, 58
Cusance, William of, clerk to Despenser, appointed keeper of the great wardrobe, 136 and n, 357
Customs, Amerigo dei Frescobaldi, chief receiver of, 83; alien farmers of 96; accounts of, 196; organisation of, 243; ordinance of 1297, 243

Dalton, John of, clerk, chamberlain of Chester, 383
Darcy, John, baron, justice of Ireland, 385, 388
Darcy, Henry, merchant, of London, 264n
David ap Bleddyn, bishop of St. Asaph, 232n
Davis, Mr. H. W. C. Edition of Stubbs' *Select Charters*, 92n
Delaunay, John, knight, seneschal of Ponthieu, 398
Denbigh, lordship of, 154
Déprez, M. E. *Les préliminaires de la Guerre de Cent Ans*, 212n
Despenser, family of, 209
Despenser, Hugh le, the elder, earl of Winchester, 19, 20, 33, 75, 95, 119, 134, 135n, 137; banishment of, 144, 145; feared by the lords of the march, 148; victory of, 149; his reforms, 152; made earl of Winchester, 153; possessions of, 154; as a reformer, 152, 158-160, 361; in Gascony, 222; keeper of the forest, 358, 359, 360
Despenser, Hugh le, the younger, king's chamberlain, his policy, 15, 16; 19, 20, 29, 33, 75, 115, 119; removed from the king's council, 102; chamberlain, 116, 126 and n, 349, 352, 355; acts with the middle party, 117; member of the standing council, 1318, 130; assists in drafting the household ordinance of York, 131 and n, 270; negociates with the Scots, 133n, 134; his ambitions in the Welsh march, 136, 137, 138, 139 and n; his acquisitions in the march, 139-141; and the custom of the march, 141; confederacy against him, 141, 142; disliked by Welsh, 142; banishment of, 144, 145; feared by the lords of the march, 148; victory of, 149; theories of, 150; as reformer, 149-152; ambition in the march, 153; his possessions in the march, 154; takes refuge in Welsh lands, 156; his policy of reform, 158-160, 169, 170, 174, 361; his Welsh policy, 210, 377n; his staple policy, 260, 262, 264; his ability, 266
Devon, earls of, holding hereditary chamberlainship, 48
Devonshire, sheriff of, 101n
Dialogus de Scaccario, the, 45, 57n, 62, 334
Dibben, Miss L. B. *Secretaries in the Thirteenth and Fourteenth Centuries, Chancellor and Keeper of the Seal under Henry III*, 43n, 59n, 68n; her work on the chancery, 58n, 181n
Doncaster, Lancastrian assembly at, 147

Doncaster, John of, layman, justice of common bench, 372
Doun, Mr. Thomas, clerk, chamberlain of S. Wales, 378, 382 and n, 383
Drogheda, staple town, 1326, 261n
Drokensford, John of, see Droxford
Droxford, John of, king's clerk, keeper of the wardrobe, 77, 78, 355; accounts of, 82, 83; chancellor of the exchequer, 78, 344, 345; bishop of Wells, 232n
Dryby, Simon, steward of the household, 160, 354 and n
Dryslwyn, castle of, granted to Despenser, 139 and n
Dublin, archbishops of, see Bicknor, Alexander, and Leek, John; staple town, 1326, 261n; exchequer of, 388-389; university of, 208, 386
Dundalk, battle of, 132
Dungeye, Hugh, household servant, 312
Durham, bishops of, see Bek, Antony; Beaumont, Louis of; Bury, Richard of; Kellaw, Richard; taxation of bishopric of, 236
Duyn, William le, clerk, chamberlain of N. Wales, 381
Dwnn, Thomas, see Doun
Dynevor, castle of, granted to Despenser, 139
Dynieton, Edmund of, king's clerk, chamberlain of N. Wales, 381 and n

Eaglescliffe, John, bishop of Llandaff, 232n
Easington, Mr. William of, clerk, chamberlain of Chester, 384
Eauze, Gaucelin of, cardinal, embassy to England, 113; attack on, 114; interdict laid on Scotland, 115; negociations in English affairs, 118, 120, 123, 125, 233
Edward I, administration under, 30, 32, 37, 38, 39, 42; his chancery, 60; his offices of court and state, 70
Edward II, personality of, 9-11, his collegiate foundations, 240
Edward of Windsor, earl of Chester, duke of Aquitaine, 209 and n, 223; in custody of the seal, 328, 396 and n
Edwards, Mr. J. G., 212n
Eineon Sais, bishop of Bangor, 232n
Elsfield, Richard of, king's clerk, constable of Bordeaux, 221 and n, 397
Ely, bishops of, see Keton, John, and Hotham, John
Emly, bishop of, see Cantock, Thomas
Emlyn, commote of, Despenser secures control of, 139
"Establishments" of York, 1322, 152, 184
Etampes, 113
Everard, John, escheator, 364
Everdon, John of, king's clerk, keeper of the exchanges, 365; baron of exchequer, 335n, 341; dean of St. Paul's, 337
Everdon, William of, exchequer clerk, treasurer's remembrancer, 336, 346n, 347; baron of exchequer, 344, 348; deputy treasurer, 333
Evesham, battle of, 107
Evre, John of, knight, escheator, 362
Escheators, the, 31; appointment of, 93, 200; number of, increased, 200; accounts of, 196, 202; list of, 361-4
Exchanges at London and Canterbury, the king's, 83, 364-5
Exchequer, the department of, 30, 40, 41, 43-57; councils in, 57 and n; independence of, 50, 51; office at Westminster, 53, 61; migrations of, 54; administrative and judicial work, 55 and n, 56; baronial support of, 69, 70; confusion of finances, 82; relations with the chancery, 183-4; with the escheators, 361; with the household, 63-4; with the wardrobe, 179, 189; division of it suggested, 192, 200, 201, 330; reforms in, 152, 157, 187-204; affecting the chancery, 186; chamber lands exempted from jurisdiction of, 173; and the assembly of merchants, 1319, 254 and n; of account, or "upper exchequer," 46, 47, 330; of receipt, or "lower exchequer," 46, 47, 330; pleas in the, 55 and n, 187, 198; accounts in, 51, 52, 55, 168, 169, 187, 188, 193, 196; "foreign accounts," 195, 196, 197, 201; control of "foreign accounts," 199, 203, 204; chamber accounts in, 174; Cheshire accounts in, 386; Gascon accounts in the, 216, 386; accounts of the great seal in, 186; hanaper accounts in, 186; Irish accounts in, 386; Welsh accounts in, 375, 386; wardrobe accounts in, 178-9; clerks of, 47, 48, 49, 197, 198, 199, 331; auditors in the, 198; the chief baron of, to be appointed in parliament, 93, 338; duty of, 339; barons of the, 47, 49, 55, 196, 198, 202, 315, list of barons, 333-344; and treasurer

Langton, 98; salaries of, 335; appointments by patent, 335n; lay and clerical barons, 336; corporate life of, 337; "cursitor baron" of the, 198; chamberlains of, 46, 49 and n, 197, 349-51; hereditary chamberlains of the, 107, 349; "chamberlains of the tallies," 199; chancellors of, to be appointed in parliament, 93, 47, 55; list of the, 344-5; clerk of the pells, 47; clerk "to sit at the receipt," 47; engrosser of the, 197; remembrancers of, 4, 47, 55 and n, 194, 197, 198, 202 and n, 345-9; serjeants of, 46; treasurer of, 30, 46, 50, 97, 98, 100, 101, 196, 198, 200, 202, 331-3, 350; to be appointed in parliament, 93; ordinances of, 175; and the chancery, 181; execution of, 202-3; ordinance of 1323, 157, 178, 193-196, 335; ordinance of 1324, 157, 178, 199, 200; ordinance of 1326, 160, 201, 203, 260; records of, 2-4, 186; rolls of, to be calendared and arrayed, 189, 190, 192; issue rolls of, 3-4, 47, 52-3, 55 and n, 82, 187-189, 193, 194, 331; memoranda rolls of, 3, 47, 55 and n, 194; pipe rolls of, 3, 64, 179, 189, 194, 195, 203; receipt rolls of, 3-4, 37, 52, 55 and n, 187-189, 193, 194; seal, the, 45, 47, 56, 164, 187, 344; keeper of, 47; see also chancellor of the exchequer; tallies of the, 47, 51, 52; writs of, 56; of Ireland, 385

Exeter, bishop of, see Stapeldon, Walter; staple town, 1326, 261n; College, Oxford, 240

Eyre of Kent, the, 238 and n

Famine, 132

Familia, see Household

Ferréol, Stephen de, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 394

Ferrers, John of, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 394

Ferre, Guy, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 73 and n, 222, 394

Ferriby, Richard of, cofferer of the wardrobe, 356

Fiennes, Robert de, knight, seneschal of Ponthieu, 398

Fiesco, Luca, cardinal, his embassy to England, 113; attack on, 114, 115; negociations in English affairs, 118-119, 120, 123, 125, 233

Fitzalan, house of, 209; Edmund, see Arundel, earl of

Fitzgerald, family of, chamberlainship of, 48, 349; in Ireland, 208

Fitzjohn, Mr. William, archbishop of Cashel, 385; deputy lieutenant of Ireland, 387; chancellor of Ireland, 388

Fitzjohn, Thomas (Fitzgerald), see Kildare, earl of

Fitzpayn, Robert, keeper of the forest, 95n, 359, 360; steward of the household, 353

Flanders, Robert, count of, and English merchants, 246, 250

Flanders, Edward I and, 36; cities of, 214; dependence on France, 244; successful revolt, 245; the English wool staple in, 244, 245, 247, 250, 253, 259, 265

Fleta, *Commentarius Juris Anglicani*, 61 and n, 65n

Flores Historiarum, 6

Forests, two keepers of the, to be appointed in parliament, 93; ameliora- of law of, 152; justices or keepers of, 357-360

Fors, the house of, its inheritance, 173

Fossat, Amanieu de, lieutenant of the seneschal of Gascony, 393n, 394, 395

Foxley, John, knight, baron of exchequer, 335n, 339, 342

France, Edward I and, 36-7; administration of, compared with England, 165-6; Scotch alliance with, 206, 214; Edward II's feudal relations with, 212, 213; and the English staple policy, 247, 253; appeals from Gascony to king of, 221; hostility of, 260; war against, 233-4

Francis, Mr. John, chancery clerk, keeper of the seal, 323, 324

Frescobaldi, the, financiers, 38, 83, 182, 241; expulsion of, 246, 249, 251; in Gascony, 214

Frescobaldi, Amerigo dei, keeper of the exchanges, 83, 365; loses the keepership, 94, 96; constable of Bordeaux, 216, 397

Friskney, Walter of, knight, justice of the common bench, 336, 369, 372; baron of exchequer, 343

Fulbourn, Walter of, clerk, chamberlain of S. Wales, 382; chamberlain of Chester, 383

Fulbourn, William of, clerk of exchequer, treasurer's remembrancer, 336, 347, 349; baron of exchequer, 336, 340, 343

Gadarn, Hawise, see Hawise
Garderobarii, see Wardrobe, clerks of
Gascony, duchy of, 34, 36, 83; appointment of ministers of, 93; forfeiture of, 155; accounts of, 196, 216, 386; the ordainers and, 206; documents concerning, 190, 191; administration of, 214-216; finances of, 216; ordinances for, 223-224; attempts at reform in, 222; seneschals of, 214, 215, 223, 394-396; seal of, 223; chancery of, 224; officers of, 392-398
Gaveston, Arnold de, father of Peter, 13n
Gaveston, Peter of, 10, 11, 12 and n; his Gascon kinsfolk, 13n; his position, 14, 15; earl of Cornwall, 15n; 17, 29, 73, 78, 80, 81, 83, 137, 169, 216; exile of, 84, 87, 91, 94; recall of, 97; death of, 99; tomb of, 173; keeper of the forest, 358, 359; ? chamberlain, 12 and n, 352; lieutenant of Ireland, 384, 387
Gavrilovitch, M. *Le traité de Paris de 1259*, 212n
Gawer, wife of Simon le, launderer, 312
Gifford, John, baron, member of the standing council,, 1318, 130, 142n; forfeiture of, 154
Gilbert, Mr. L. H., 242n
Glamorgan, Clare lordship of, war in, 103; 138, 140, 154; Despenser lordship of, see Despenser, Hugh le, the younger, and Llewelyn, Bren
Gloucester, Hugh le Despenser and the earldom of, 153
Gloucester, Gilbert of Clare, earl of, 10, 13n, 14n, 80; opposes the king, 86; palatinate of, 103, 115; death of, at Bannockburn, 225
Gloucester, Joan of Acre, countess of, 14n
Gloucester, Walter of, layman, escheator, 363; baron of exchequer, 336, 339, 342
Goch, John, 378, 383n
Golafe, Mr. John, clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 351
Gonnore, dame, launderer, 312
Gorges, Ralph of, baron, justice of Ireland, 385, 387
Got, Bertrand de, see Clement V, pope; Clement's V's nephew, vicomte of Lomagne and Auvillars, 217, 218, 219n, 220; family of, 216, 217 and n, 219; Reine de, countess of Armagnac, 217
Goulard, Assieu de, lieutenant of the seneschal of Gascony, 394
Gower, peninsula of, 140 and n, 141; seizure of, ordered, and prevented, 142 and n; again seized by Despenser, 154
Gravesend, Stephen, bishop of London, 232n
Gray of Heaton, Sir Thomas, *Scalacronica* of, 7 and n
Great charter, read before the estates, 1318, 130
Great seal, the, 70, 71, 164, 165, 183, 193, 202; keepers of, 184; writs of, 200; accounts of, 186; see also Chancery
Great wardrobe, the office of the, 71, 72, 177; accounts of the, 197, 199 and n, 201, 203; officers of, 177; clerk of, 177, 178; clerk purveyor of the, 274, 275, 315; keepers of, 357
Grey, Richard, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 396
Grey, John, baron, member of the council of 1318, 122n
"Griffin" seal, the, 174-5
Grimsby, Simon of, escheator, 364
Guitard, Mr. John, clerk, constable of Bordeaux, 397; controller of castle of Bordeaux, 215 and n
Gwent, marcher lordship of, 139
Gynour, Robert, household servant, 312

Haberiour, John, household servant, 312
Hackney, Richard, merchant of London, 258
Halidon Hill, battle of, 226
Hall, Mr. Hubert, on the exchequer, 44n, 55n; *Red Book of Exchequer*, 178, 193n, 330n
Hall, officers of the: knight marshals, 283, 290, 293, 305, 307, 316; serjeant marshals, 284, 312; usher-in-chief, 272, 282, 290, 293, 305, 307, 316; serjeant ushers, 283, 312; serjeants, 306; squires of the table, 284, 290, 291, 293, 294; valets, 283, 312; serjeant of the napery, 287; valet of the napery, 287; launderer of the napery, 288
Hall, pleas in the, 280; eating in the, 308; strangers in the, 282; see also Household, Wardrobe

Hallam, *Europe in the Middle Ages*, 88n
Halton, John, bishop of Carlisle, member of the council of 1318, 122n, 229
Hampton, John of, escheator, 364
Hanaper, see Chancery, hanaper of
Häpke, Dr. R. *Brügges Entwicklung zum mittelalterlichen Weltmarkt*, 242n, 247n
Harclay, Andrew, knight, sheriff of Cumberland, 101n; his victory at Boroughbridge, 148 and n, 227, 228; made earl of Carlisle, 150; death of, 150
Harcourt, Mr. L. W. Vernon. *His Grace the Steward and Trial by Peers*, 67n, 107n
Harpden, Thomas of, escheator, 363
Hartlepool, town with cocket seal, 249n
Haskins, Prof. *William Cade*, 250n
Hastings, John of, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 393, 394
Hastings, Lawrence, a minor, his lands in the custody of Despenser, 154
Hausteade, Robert, steward of Edward of Carnarvon, when prince, 73
Hauville, Robert of, king's clerk, keeper of the rolls, 372
Havering, John of, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 394
Havering, Richard of, king's clerk, constable of Bordeaux, 397
Hawise, surnamed Gadarn, wife of John Charlton of Powys, 81
Hawstead, William of, king's clerk, keeper of the exchanges, 365, 366
Hazelshaw, Robert of, king's clerk, keeper of the exchanges, 365, 366
Heath, Haymo, bishop of Rochester, 232n
Hegham, Roger, knight, baron of exchequer, 335n, 339, 341
Hemingburgh, Walter of, his chronicle, 8 and n
Hemington, Robert of, 380
Hengham, Ralph of, chief justice of common bench, 366-8, 370
Henry III and the chancellors, 58-9
Hereford, bishop of, see Orleton, Adam
Hereford, Humphrey of Bohun, earl of, 15n; opposes the king, 86; joins the middle party, 117; member of the council of 1318, 122n, 130, 131n; his policy in the march, 138, 139n; attacks Despenser, 141, 142n; joins Lancaster against the king, 1321, 148; his defeat and death at Boroughbridge, 148; forfeiture of his lands, 173
Herlaston, William of, chancery clerk, keeper of the seal, 325, 326, 327; keeper of the privy seal, 357
Herle, William of, knight, justice of common bench, 369, 372
Heron, Robert, king's clerk, deputy to Eustace of Cottesbach, 392; controller of Scotland, 392
Herwington, Adam of, 386; treasurer of Dublin exchequer, 389; keeper of the rolls, 370 and n, 372
Higden, *Polychronicon* of, 8 and n
Hingham, see Hengham
Holden, Robert of, controller of the wardrobe, 160, 355; warden of the house of converts, 328, 330
Holderness, its escheat to the crown, 173
Holland, Robert of, knight, justice of Chester, 72n, 375, 378, 380
Holland, William, count of, seizes English ships, 260; allies with the French, 244
Hope, Robert of, clerk, 379n
Hore, Mr. William le, king's clerk, chamberlain of S. Wales, 382
Hornby, Miss E., 233n
hospicium and *cancellaria*, 61
Hotham, John, king's clerk, bishop of Ely, 21; deputy to Gaveston, 95 and n; treasurer, 108; goes on a mission to Avignon, 112, 113; joins the middle party, 117; member of the council of 1318, 122; declared "sufficient," 126, 127, 128n, 130n, 131; negociates with the Scots, 133n; 134, 139n; chancellor, 182 and n; 222, 232n, 268n, 270; in Ireland, 387 and n; his offices: chancellor, 325; treasurer, 332; chancellor of the exchequer, 345; acting keeper of the forest, 358, 359; escheator, 362
Hoton, Robert of, clerk, 190n, 192n
Household, of Edward of Carnarvon, when Prince of Wales, 72-3; of the barons, 72; of Thomas of Lancaster and other magnates, 109; the king's household in Scotland, 389
Household administration, the, 25, 29, 30, 31, 44; the secretarial department, 60, 64; the chancery and, 60-62, 184; organisation, 68; baronial attack on, 70-71; expenses of *hospicium regis*, 103 and n; changes in, 101-2; Thomas of Lancaster and, 106, 133; officers

of, support the middle party, 116, 125; retained in position, 1318, 126, 128; new officers, 137; Hugh le Despenser and the, 144; jurisdiction of officers of, limited, 152; disorder in, 155; privy seal independent of the, 168; its form fixed, 157; custody of archives of, 162; limitations of, 174; decline of, 180; queen and officers, 309; complaints against, 313-4; reform in, pressed for, 85, 92, 93; unaccomplished, 106; to be undertaken by the middle party, 122; a committee of council for reform, 125; reforms, 152, 161-168, 169, 175, 176, 177; protest against jurisdiction of, 252; finance of, 63-4-5, 131; accounts of, 198, 202, 306; subsidiary accounts, 199 and n, 203, 204, 314, 315, 316; the ordainers and the, 76, 95, 170; ordinance of 1279, 176; ordinance of Woodstock, 270, 307; ordinances of York, 267-9, 181; text of, 270-318; the ordinance of 1318, 31, 175-6, 131, 132, 157, 158; and the keepership of the privy seal, 163; the ordinance of 1323, 157, 178, 314; the "establishments" of York, 184; administrative offices of, 184; purveyances, 295, 297, 298, 302, 304, 316

Household, officers of the, 66, 67, 176, 351, 353; offices, 307; alms of the king, 317, 318; the almoner of the, 278, 308, 311, 318; clerk of the almoner, 279, 311; the *avenrie*, 307; clerk purveyor in the avenrie, 297, 300, 311; valets of the avenrie, 298, 300, 311; buyers for the, 291, 294, 311; the buttery, 307, 309; butler of the, 178, 288, 290, 304, 305, 311, 314; the serjeant butler, 288, 304, 305, 311; the clerk of the buttery, 284, 285, 288, 289, 305, 308, 311, 316; porters of the buttery, 290; valets of the buttery, 289, 311; chamberlain, the king's, 67, 68, 93n, 271, 275, 354; the chandlery, 307; the chandler, 311; the serjeant chandler, 277 valets of the chandlery, 277, 311; chaplains of the, 278, 311; "clerks of offices," 68, 69; confessor, the king's, 277, 312; the *herbergerie*, 307, 310; *herberiours*, 305, 312; valets of the *herberiour*, 312; serjeant *herberiour* for horses, 298; valet *herberiour* for horses, 298, 299; serjeant *herberiour* for carriages, 299; valet *herberiour* for carriages, 299; the kitchen ,307, 309; buyers, of the kitchen, 294; clerk of the kitchen, 290, 291, 293-6, 311, 316; under clerks of the kitchen, 291, 294; usher of the kitchen, 292, 294; serjeant cooks, 291, 293, 294; potager of the kitchen, 292; roasters of the kitchen, 292; serjeant cooks for the *mesne*, 292; potager of the kitchen for the *mesne*, 292; *quisour* of the kitchen for the *mesne*, 292; roasters of the kitchen for the *mesne*, 292; valets of the kitchen, 292, 293; valets of the kitchen for the *mesne*, 292; *akers* of the kitchen, 293; ewers of the kitchen, 292, 294; *garbager* of the kitchen, 295; valet *garbager* of the kitchen, 295; baker, the, 312, 317; serjeant bakers, 286; valets of the baker, 287, 312; valet for bread, 286; waferer, 286, 312; larder, 307, 309; serjeant of the larder, 293; usher of the larder, 293, 294; launderers, 312; marshalsea, 307, 315; the marshal, 67, 68, 105, 312; serjeant marshal of the stable, 299, 300; serjeant marshal for great horses, 301; serjeant marshal for young horses, 302; chief clerk of the marshalsea, 297-300, 316, 317; valets of the marshalsea, 317; valets of the stable, 301; valet for sick horses, 300; napery, 307; naperer and valets, 311; the pantry, 307, 309; clerk of the pantry, 284-5, 288-9, 308, 311; clerk usher of the pantry, 285; panterer, 311; serjeant and underserjeants of the pantry, 285; porters of the pantry, 285; valets of the pantry, 285, 311; physicians, 279, 312; the poultry, 307; the poulterer, 312; the serjeant poulterer, 294, 295; valets of the poulterer, 295, 312; valet of the poultry, 295; the *salserie*, 307; serjeant of the *salserie*, 296, 311; valets of the *salserie*, 296, 311; the scullery 307; serjeant of the scullery, 295, 311; second serjeant of the scullery, 296, 311; valets of the scullery, 296; *secretarii* of, 68; the king's squires and others, 311; stewards of, 67, 68, 97, 107, 271, 271-318 *passim*, 353; to be appointed in parliament, 93; keeper of seal, 322, 323; clerk of the steward, 312; steward of the queen, 309; surgeon, the king's, 279, 312; miscellaneous officers: archers of the, 307; *avantalours*, 310; boys in the, 307; *bribours*, 312; carriers, 301; carters, 309;

carvers, 311; clerk of the market, 280; clerks of the spicery, 274, 275, 276, 287; coroner, the, 312, 313; drawers of wine, 289; ewerer and valets, 311; falconers, 312; ferreter, fisher, fowler, 303; fruiterer and valets, 311; Welshmen of the, 307; hackneyman, 301; hanaper, servant of the, 311; hatter, 304; officer of the hounds, 303; knights in the, 68, 311; messengers, 304, 307, 309; *ministraux*, 312; pages, 308; palfreymen, 309; partridger, 303; porters in the butchery, 294; porter of the *garner*, 300; porter and valets, 312; musicians, 303; purveyor of ale, 289; servants of the, 312; squires of the fruits, 276; squires of the meats, 280, 293; squire (*asseour*) of the table, 293, 294; surveyor of the *dressour*, 284; *sterhont*, 303; sumptermen, 301, 309; treasurer of the queen, 309; trumpeters, 303; *turmentours*, 295; *valets de mestier*, 309; valets, 308; valet of the pitcher-house, 289; *vaytez*, 312; yeomen of the guard, 304; regulations concerning carts, 301; dogs, 308, 312; followers of the court, 313; gifts, 308-9; horses and carts, 312; journeys, 314; livery, 308-9; meals, 309; old servants sent to monasteries, 309; strangers, 307; sumpter horses, 301; wards in the household, 280, 311; see also officers of Chamber, Privy Seal, Wardrobe, Great Wardrobe

Howard, William, knight, justice of common bench, 367, 371

Hughes, Mr. Arthur, his *The Parliament of Lincoln of 1316*, 41n, 104n, 183n, 185n

Huggate, Nicholas of, king's clerk, 73; controller of the wardrobe, 355; cofferer of the wardrobe, 356

Hull, town with cocket seal, 243n, 249n

Hundred years' war, the, 34

Inge, William, knight, justice of common bench, 371; chief justice of king's bench, 106, 373

Ingham, Oliver of, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 223, 396; justice of Chester, 378, 380

Inquisition, the first brought into England, 230

Ipswich, town with cocket seal, 243n, 249n

Ireland, English power in, 34, 36, 207-208; the ordainers and, 206; Edward Bruce in, 103, 207; appointment of ministers of, 93; accounts of, 196, 386; administration and officers of, 384-7

Isabella, of France, queen of Edward II, insulted by lady Badlesmere, 147; her estates sequestrated, 155 and n; 198, 200, 260; lands with Mortimer, 1326, 264; keeper of the seal, 322, 326, 328

Islip, Walter of, king's clerk, treasurer of Dublin exchequer, 389

Issue rolls, see Exchequer

Italian bankers, see Bankers, Italian

Jacobs, Stephen, 383n

Jenckes, Miss Adaline. *Origin, Organisation and Location of the Staple of England*, 241n

Jenkinson, Mr. C. Hilary. *William Cade*, 45n; *On Exchequer Tallies*, 43n; 52n

Joan of Navarre, queen of Philip IV of France, 17n

Joan of Acre, see Gloucester, countess of

John XXII, James of Cahors, pope, receives English mission, 112; his pontificate, 112, 218, 220; his influence in England, 230-233; nominates to English bishoprics, 231; bull to Cambridge University, 233, 239

Johnson, Mr. C. *Exchequer Chamber under Edward II*, 57 and n; his article on the exchequer, 198n

Johnson, Messrs. Crump and, on *exchequer rolls*, 55n; *Tables of Bullion*, 365

Johnston, Mr. Elias, king's clerk, 190, 191

Johnstone, Miss Hilda, 27n, 212n, 214n, 341n

Jones, Mr. Arthur. *Flintshire Ministers' Accounts*, 79n, 83n, 209n, 375, 211n

Josephs, William, 383n

Justices of the two benches, chief, to be appointed in parliament, 93, 366-70

Kay, Mr. Harold. *Marcher lordships of Wales*, 153n

Keepers of the exchanges of London and Canterbury, 83, 364-5

Keepership of the palace, hereditary office of the, 67; see also Stench, John

Keeper of the wardrobe, see Wardrobe
Kellaw, Richard, bishop of Durham, 232n
Kemmes, lordship of, see Martin, William
Kennington petitions, the, 210
Kent, Edmund of Woodstock, earl of, 222, 223; lieutenant of Gascony, 394, 396
Keton, John, bishop of Ely, 232n
Kidwelly, 155
Kildare, Thomas Fitzjohn (Fitzgerald), earl of, justice of Ireland, 384, 387
King's Hall, Cambridge, 240
King's Langley, manor of, 173, 174
Kirkby, John of, king's clerk, king's remembrancer, 346n, 348
Knighton, Henry, chronicler, 121
Knights, see Household

Lacy, Alice, wife of Thomas of Lancaster, 16n, 110, 154
Lacy, Henry, see Lincoln, earl of
Lambard, William, 268, 269
Lancashire, 362; Adam Banaster's revolt in, 103; Thomas of Lancaster, sheriff of, 101n
Lancaster, Henry of, 142n; holding lands in the march, 155
Lancaster, Thomas of, earl of, 15n, 16n, 74, 86, 90, 95, 99, 130, 133, 134, 136, 138, 139n, 210; his policy, 17, 18, 19; his claim as steward of England, 67, 106, 107, 116, 127; his household, 72 and n, 108, 109; his feud with earl Warenne, 110, 119; sheriff of Lancashire, 101n; at war in Lancashire, 103; incompetence of, 103-4; king's counsellor, 105; his opposition policy, 106; coalitions against, 110; failure of, 111, 114, 115, 116; negociates with the middle party, 118-121; to appoint a banneret in the council of 1318, 122; his position in 1318, 123, 125; partisans of, 142; gains by Despenser's fall, 143; refuses to help Badlesmere, 147; defeat at Boroughbridge, 148, 154; execution of, 149; his lands forfeited, 173
Lanercost, chronicle of, 7 and n
Langley, see King's Langley
Langton, John, bishop of Chichester, chancellor, 60 and n, 78; loses office, 79 and n; joins the middle party, 117; member of the council of 1318, 122n, 323
Langton, John, king's clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 350n, 351
Langton, Walter, bishop of Lichfield, treasurer, 14, 20, 21, 37n, 38, 46, 51, 70, 77; a wardrobe clerk, 66, 70, 77, 78, 79, 83; his disgrace, 78; his forfeiture, 168; his reappointment as treasurer, 97, 331, 332 and n, 346 and n; his appeal to Avignon, 98; removed from the king's council, 102, 128n; member of the standing council of 1318, 130; his grievances unredressed, 130
Lapsley, Mr. G. T., on the *Commons and the Statute of York*, 151
Leake, treaty of, 19, 75, 121, 122; approved by parliament, 125, 132, 169, 237
Leech, John, see Leek
Leeds, castle of, Kent, 147; taken by king, 148
Leek, John of, archbishop of Dublin, 207, 386; treasurer of Dublin exchequer, 389
Legates, papal, see Eauze, Fiesco, Vienne, Orange
Lehugeur, M. P. *Histoire de Philippe le Long*, 212n
Leicester, earldom of, Lancaster holding, 106-7; Lancaster's stronghold of, 119
Leicester, Peter of, baron of the exchequer, 337
Lenfant, John, knight, seneschal of Ponthieu, 398
L'Estrange, Eubulo, knight, 110, 154
Lestrange, Fulk, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 395
Lestrange, Matthew, clerk, 379n
Lewes, prior of, 234
Lewis, Prof. E. A. *Mediæval Boroughs of Snowdonia*, 210n, 211n
Lewis, Mr. R. G. *The Stannaries*, 220n
Ley, Roger de la, baron of the exchequer, 334
Liberate, writs of, 53
Liber custumarum, 95, 96n
Liber Niger Scaccarii, 269
Lichfield, bishops of, see Northburgh, Roger, and Langton, Walter
Lincoln, John of, alderman of London, keeper of the exchanges, 94 and n, 365
Lincoln, Henry Lacy, earl of, 13n, 15n, 16n, 17n; in opposition to the king, 86; his death, 86 and n

Lincoln, cathedral of, 105; staple town, 1326, 261n; parliaments of, see Parliament; ordinances for Wales, 210; statute of, 152; bishop of, see Burghersh, Henry
Lisle, John de, knight, sheriff, 101n; appointed baron of exchequer, 335n, 336, 340, 342
Llewelyn Bren, rising of, 103; death of, 138
Landaff, bishop of, see Eaglescliffe, John
Llwyd, Sir Gruffydd, 210
Lodington, Peter of, clerk, 373n
London, annalists of, 5; city of, 240; increasing centralisation of administration and politics in, 54; the chancery in, 61; ordinances proclaimed in, 91; growth of its commercial and economic importance, 240; its merchants, 241, 258, 263; its staple policy, 255-257, 263; in sympathy with the middle party, 252; staple town, 1326, 261n; possessing cocket seal, 243n, 249n; keepers of the exchanges at, 364-66; parliaments of, see Parliaments; its representatives in parliament, 252, 266; bishops of, see Baldock, Ralph, Segrave, Gilbert, Newport, Richard, and Gravesend, Stephen; mayors of, see Chigwell, Hamo of, and Béthune, Richard of; aldermen of, see Bakewell, John; Béthune, Richard of, Lincoln, John of; St. Paul's cathedral, 91; Tower of, 71, 72n, 189, 190, 321; privy wardrobe in the Tower of, 71.
Lostwithiel, staple town for tin, 1326, 261n
Louis X, king of France, 17n, 251
Louth, John of Birmingham, earl of, justice of Ireland, 384, 388
Louvigny, 13n
Lubimenko, Madame, 213n
Ludgershall, Henry of, king's clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 350
Lundy Island, obtained by Despenser, 140
Lunt, Prof. W. E. *The first levy of Papal Annates*, 229
Lymbergh, Adam of, king's clerk, king's remembrancer, 347, 348; constable of Bordeaux, 397
Lynn, town with cocket seal, 249n
Lyte, Sir Henry Maxwell, 1
Mablethorp, Robert of, narrator, justice of king's bench, 369, 374
Madox, Thomas, his *History of the Exchequer*, 44n, 54, 56, 183
Mackenzie, Mr. W. M., his *Battle of Bannockburn*, 7n, 225 and n; his edition of Barbour's *Bruce*, 225 and n
Maidstone, Walter, bishop of Worcester, 231n
Maitland, F. W., his *Year Books of Edward II*, 8, 238, 368-9; his *memoranda de parliamento*, 41; his conjecture that Berwick kept the privy seal in 1305, 77n; on the importance of formalism, 186; on the antagonism of clerk and lawyer, 368; on the name Pecché, 395
Maldon, Mr. William of, clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 49n, 190, 351
Malduit, family of, chamberlainship of, 48, 349
Malleie, Robert, 379n
Mallory, Peter, knight, justice of common bench, 367, 371
Malmesbury, the monk of, his chronicle, 5, 6, 10, 15, 85, 90, 99, 100, 102, 109, 132, 234
March, the, see Wales, march of
Markenfield, John of, king's clerk, chancellor of the exchequer, 344, 345; king's remembrancer, 348
Markets of the staple, 241
Marsan and Louvigny, Clarmonde of, mother of Peter of Gaveston, 13
Marshal, of England, see Norfolk, earl of
Marshal, see Hall and Household
Marshalsea, office of, see Household
Martel, Mr. Philip, *custos processuum*, etc., 190n
Martin, David, bishop of St. David's, member of the council of 1318, 122n
Martin, William, lord of Kemmes, member of the standing council, 1318, 130; justice of South Wales, 377, 379
Mauley, Edmund, steward of the household, 97; died at Bannockburn, 102; keeper of the seal, 323, 324n; steward, 353
Maure, Amice, *bribour*, 312
Maxwell, Sir Herbert, his translations of chronicles, 7
Mayors of the merchants of the staple, 366
Meaux, chronicle of Cistercian abbey of, 7

Medici, Mr. Albert, clerk, 215 and n; constable of Bordeaux, 223, 397, 398
Melsa, see Meaux
Melton, William, archbishop of York, his character, 21-22; controller of the wardrobe of Edward of Carnarvon when prince of Wales, 73, 78, 79 and n; keeper of the privy seal, 80, 356; controller of the wardrobe, 97, 355; loses keepership of privy seal, 98; keeper of the wardrobe, 102, 323, 355; his appointment as archbishop of York, 108; his part in household reform, 125, 130, 131, 139n, 159, 314; treasurer, 160, 199, 200, 201, 202, 232n, 270, 314; his share in treasury reforms, 201-202
Memoranda rolls, see Exchequer
Merchants, English, and foreign trade, 242, 246, 249; charter to, 244, 249; corporation of, 244 and n, 248; financiers to the king, 251; political interests and, 253; assembly at Westminster, 1319, 254 and n; the staple policy, 255; second assembly at Westminster, 1320, 258; conflicts on staple policy, 256, 266; of London and the north, and the staple policy, 256, 257; the law merchant, 261; London merchants and the policy of 1326, 262, 263; mayor of the merchants, 244, 247, 248; mayor of the staple, 261, 264, 366; seal of the mayor, 248n
Merchants, foreign, 37; and English trade, 242; and the "fixed staple," 250
Merewell, William of, mayor of the merchants, 259, 366
Meverel, William, clerk, 379n
Michaelhouse, Cambridge, 240
Middelburg, port of, and the foreign staple, 244
Middleton, Gilbert of, knight, his attack on the legates, 114
Middle party, the, 74, 75; formation of, 115-118; its dealings with Lancaster and the Scots, 118, 121; supports the ordinances, 119, 120; machinery of, 122; triumph of, 123, 124, 126; break up of, 145; see also Pembroke, earl of, and Badlesmere, Bartholomew
Milford, castle of, 114
Ministers, of Edward II, 75, 76, 78; changes at Edward II's accession, 77; distinction between ministers of the household and the state, 92; responsibility of, 93; changes after Bannockburn, 100-101; in 1318, 127-9; appointment in parliament, 126; complaints against, 129; changes, 134, 145; accounts of, 204; lists of ministers of the reign, 319-398
Molière, John de, captures earl of Pembroke, 113
Mons-en-Pévèle, battle of, 226
Montagu, Sir William, steward of the household, 116, 117, 126, 354; seneschal of Gascony, 221, 393n, 395
Montfichet, Richard of, baron of the exchequer, 334
Montfort, Simon of, earl of Leicester, *senescallus Angliae*, 67n, 90, 107, 375
Monthermer, Ralph of, keeper of the forest, 14n, 360
Montreuil, the "process" of, 213
Morant, Mr. Jordan, clerk, lieutenant of the seneschal of Gascony, 394; constable of Bordeaux, 397
Moray, Thomas Randolph, earl of, 225
More, Sir Thomas de la, chronicle falsely ascribed to, 5
Morel, M. *La grande Chancellerie royale*, 41, 165n, 172n
Morlaix, battle of, 227n
Morris, Dr. J. E. *Andrew Harclay*, 148n; *Cumberland and Westmorland Military Levies*, 228n
Mortimer, house of, 209
Mortimer, Roger of Chirk, baron, joins the middle party, 117; member of the standing council, 1318, 130; justice of all Wales, 139 and n, 210, 377, 379; his policy in the march, 138, 141; attacks Despenser, 139, 142; marches against the king, 1321, 148
Mortimer, Roger of Wigmore, baron, 72n; joins the middle party, 117; member of the council of 1318, 122n, 131 and n; policy in the march, 138, 141; marches against the king, 148; ambitions in the march, 155, 156; 160, 198, 200; lands with queen Isabella, 1326, 264, 265; lieutenant of Ireland, 384, 385, 387
Mortival, Roger, bishop of Salisbury, member of the council of 1318, 122n, 232n, 270
Mortmain, statute of, 228
Mowbray, John, baron, 139n, 141, 142, death of, 154
Munimenta Gildhallae Londoniensis, 8 and n
Murimuth, Adam, his chronicle, 6

Mustlewick, Mr. Richard of, clerk, chamberlain of S. Wales, 382
Mutford, John of, narrator, justice of common bench, 372
Myton, battle of, 34, 133, 227

Nasard, Henry, merchant of London, 258
Nether Went, gained by Despenser, 140
Newcastle-Emlyn, castle of, Despenser secures control of, 139
Newcastle-on-Tyne, 99; staple town, 1326, 261n; possessing cocket seal, 243n, 249n
Newport, Richard, bishop of London, 232n
Newport-on-Usk, gained by Despenser, 140 and n
Norfolk, Thomas of Brotherton, earl of, marshal of England, 154; his nomination of the marshal of the exchequer, 49; his share in household administration, 282, 314
Norham, siege of, 110
Northburgh, Roger, keeper of privy seal, 98, 99n, 162, 164, 268, 270, 356; captured at Bannockburn, 102 and n; keeper of the wardrobe, 108, 163, 268n, 270, 355; joins the middle party, 116; declared "sufficient," 1318, 126; assists in drafting the household ordinance of York, 131, 270; his part in reform, 159-160; bishop of Lichfield, 232 and n; in custody of the great seal, 326
Northumberland, sheriff of, 129
Northwood, Henry, merchant at Bruges, 258
Norwich, bishops of, see Salmon, John, and Airmyn, William
Norwich, staple town, 1326, 261n
Norwich, Walter of, clerk, then knight, treasurer, 50, 94, 98, 101, 332 and n, 333; chief baron of exchequer, 108, 254; declared "sufficient," 1318, 126, 128 and n, 131 and n, 134; deputy for Stapeldon, 159 and n; keeper of the treasury, 190, 192; baron of exchequer, 314, 335n, 338, 339, 340, 341, 342; treasurer's remembrancer, 336, 346 and n, 347, 348
Nottingham, Hugh of, clerk, scribe of the exchequer, 346 and n, 348 and n
Nottingham, Robert of, king's clerk, treasurer's remembrancer, 347n, 348; king's remembrancer, 346n, 347, 348

Ockham, John of, wardrobe clerk, 336; cofferer of the wardrobe, 97, 102, 356; baron of the exchequer, 108, 335n, 343
Offices, "in fee," "held by serjeantry," 48, 49 and n
Officers, see Chancery, Exchequer, Chamber, Hall, Household, Wardrobe, Great Wardrobe; see also Ministers
Obreen, M. H. *Une Charte brabançonne inédite de 1296*, 244n
Ordainers, the, 18, 31, 33, 75, 76, 81, 84; election of the, 85-87; their work, 87-93; their efforts against the household, 95, 96; their government of the south, 97; conquest of the north, 99; influence in the council, 106; policy towards the household, 106, 107; weakness of the party and its successors, 115; revival of, 142-144; their refusal to support Badlesmere, 146-147; their collapse, 148; their selfishness, 149; and the office of the privy seal, 167, 183; and the chamber, 169; and the chancery, 183; and foreign policy, 206-7, 241, 246; and the ordinance of the staple, 249; and the office of chief baron of the exchequer, 338; and the treasurer Langton, 332n
Ordinationes comitum secundae, 95-6
Ordinances, the, of 1311, 28, 29, 61, 74, 76, 157, 158; and the appointment of sheriffs, 56; baronial committee on, 84, 85; preliminary ordinances, 87; submitted to parliament, 87; publication of, 90; authority of, 91; provisions of, compared with provisions of Oxford, 91; and the appointment of ministers, 93; failure of, 93-4; the king revokes them, 97; cannot be enforced, 99, 100, 105, 106, 108; John XXII and, 112; supported by Lancaster, 118; and by the middle party, 119, 120; opposed by the court party, 120; their maintenance provided for in the treaty of Leake, 121; confirmation of, in parliament of 1318, 125, 130; and the appointment of ministers in parliament, 126; repeal of, 149, 150, 151; and subsequent reform, 159, 161, 163, 171, 183, 187, 214, 216; clerical attitude towards, 228; exile of Frescobaldi by, 246; and the ordinance of the staple, 249, 250; and the keepers of the forests, 358; and escheators, 361; and the chief clerk

of the common bench, 369; and the justices of the benches, 373; by the king in council, to effect reform, distinguished from a statute, 158; see also Exchequer, Household, Staple
Orange, bishop of, 233
Oriel College, Oxford, 240
Orleton, Adam, bishop of Hereford, 21 and n; member of the council of 1318, 122n, 135n, 231n, 232, 234
Ormesby, William of, knight, justice of Chester, 379
Osgodby, Adam of, chancery clerk, 62n; keeper of the seal, 94 and n, 321, 323, 324; keeper of the rolls and warden of the converts, 328, 329
Oswestry, lordship of, 155
Otterhampton, William of, king's clerk, chamberlain of S. Wales, 382
Outlaw, Roger, prior of the hospital in Ireland, 386; chancellor of Ireland, 388
Ousefleet, Thomas of, keeper of the great wardrobe, 357
Owen ap Gruffydd, claimant to Powys, his war with John Charlton, 138
Oxford, earl of, chamberlain of England, 67
Oxford, provisions of, 51, 91, 122, 361; burgesses of, 99; University of, 11, 21, 99; University library, 240; new colleges at, under Edward II, 21, 240
Oysel, Richard, merchant,, escheator, 362
Oystermouth, castle of, 140

Palgrave, Sir Reginald. *Parliamentary Writs*, 1; *Antient Kalendars and Inventories of the Exchequer*, 192n
Palmer, Roger, member of parliament for the city of London, 252
Paris, treaty of (1259), 213
Parliament, rolls of, 1, 41, 90, 184, 185; writs of, 1; appointment of ministers in, 76, 93, 162, 337; to appoint a council, 121, 122; theories concerning, 151; statute hardly yet distinguished from an ordinance, 158; hostility to wardrobe activities, 179; record of proceedings, 184-5; Welsh representation in, 211 and n; the commons in, 33, 40, 87, 91, 124, 152; the lords in, 124, 152; the three estates, 88, 151; a Lancastrian assembly called a, 143, 147; assembly at Leicester, called a, 119; assembly at Northampton, called a, 120; a baronial assembly, at London, 1310, 87, 88; at Lincoln, 105; at York, 1320, 134; full parliaments held, at Lincoln, 1316, 18, 56, 74, 104 and n, 105, 107, 112, 124, 183 and n; roll of the, 185; and a conference of merchants, 251; at Lincoln, Jan. 1318, 118; postponement of, 119; given up, 120; at London, February 1315, 102; at London, Oct. 1320, 136; at London, July 1321, 143, 145, 147, 238; at Stamford, 1309, 84; at Westminster, 1311, 87, 89, 90 and n; at York, 1314, 100, 101n, 102, 105, 107; at York, 20 Oct. 1318, 124, 134, 139, 169, 170, 268, 367, 370; and the execution of the ordinances, 125; and the king's ministers, 126, 128; dissolved Dec. 9 1318, 132; importance of, 132; and the staple, 252 and n; and barons of the exchequer, 335; at York, 1319, 133; and the staple, 257; at York, 1322, 33, 75, 89, 149, 151; repeals the ordinances, 149-150; representatives of commons of Wales in, 151; and the "establishments" of 1322, 152; of York, 1328, 266; a parliament, Jan. 1327, 151
Passelewe, Edmund of, narrator, 336; baron of exchequer, 344, 369
Paynel, John, chamberlain of Chester, 384
Peacock, John, 379n
Pecché, Gilbert, knight, steward of the household, 146n, 160, 354; seneschal of Gascony, 395 and n
Peckham, John, archbishop of Canterbury, 228
Pells, clerk of the, see Exchequer
Pembroke, Aymer of Valence, earl of, 13n, 15n, 16; character and policy of, 18-20, 74, 75; in opposition to the king, 86; drawn to the court party, 99, 111; goes on mission to Avignon, 112; his imprisonment in France, 113 and n, 114; his alliance with Badlesmere, 115; and the formation of the middle party, 116-118; gains over the king, 117, 120; negociations with Lancaster, 118, 121; member of the council of 1318, 122n, 130n; he and his associates not courtiers, 122; negociates with the Scots, 133n; regent of the kingdom, 135, 136; 139n, 141, 143, 145; joins Edward II against Badlesmere, 147; his influence, 149; negociations with the Scots, 150; death of, 150; his part in

reform, 158; his chancery policy, 182; keeper of the forest, 161, 360; lieutenant of Scotland, 391
Pembroke, Mary of St Pôl, countess of, 20 and n, 145, 240
Pembroke Hall, Cambridge, 240
Percy, Mr. John of, king's clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 350
Percy, Henry of, keeper of the forest, 95, 96n, 359
Périgueux, conference of, 213, 222
Pessagno, Antonio di, of Genoa, king's merchant, afterwards knight, 219 and n, 220 and n, 221 and n, 241 and n; seneschal of Gascony, 393n, 395
Pessagno, Manuel di, 221 and n
Petherton, Walter of, justice of S. Wales, 377, 379
Philip IV, the Fair, king of France, 17n, 32, 39, 172; and the staple, 251 and n
Philip V, king of France, 17n, 250
Piggsflesh, Reginald, merchant of London, 258
Pipe rolls, see Exchequer
Plane, William, *bribour*, 312
Podensac, Bertrand, lord of, relations with Gaveston, 13n
Poitiers, battle of, 34, 226
Pole, house of, 241
Poole, Mr. R. L., his *Exchequer in the Twelfth Century*, 44n, 45n
Polychronicon of R. Higden, 8 and n
Pontefract, castle of, 106, 118; Lancaster executed at, 149; ordinance at, 223
Ponthieu, Edward II and, 135, 212, 214; seneschals of, 341, 398
Popes, see Clement V and John XXII
Power, Robert, king's clerk, escheator, 364; chamberlain of N. Wales, 381 and n
Powys, lord of, see Charlton, John, and Owen ap Gruffydd; war for possession of, 138
Praemunire, statute of, 234
Prentice, Thomas, merchant of London, 258, 259n
Prior, John, merchant of London, 258
Prises and purveyances for the wardrobe, 70
Privy seal, the, 60, 64, 173, 177, 183, 202; in the chamber and the wardrobe, 65, 70; captured at Bannockburn, 102, 172; separated from wardrobe administration, 157, 162, 164; its connection with the wardrobe, 167, 175; a seal of state, 170; and the secret seal, 172; keepership of the, 98; separate office of keepership suppressed, 108; records of, 193; the keeper of the, 60, 61, 65, 162, 200; to be appointed in parliament, 93; and writs of exchequer, 202 and n, 273; keepers, 352, 356; clerks of the, 162, 163, 165, 273, 311, 331; household of the 338; of queen Isabella, 162
Privy wardrobe, the, 71, 72
Provisions, papal provisions to English sees, 112; John XXII makes provision the normal method of appointment, 231-233
Purveyances, for the household, 316; prises and, for the wardrobe, 70; certified in the wardrobe, 298, 302, 316; of goods, 295, 297, 298, 302, 304, 316

Queen, and household, officers of, 309; see also Isabella of France

Ramsay, Sir James. *The Genesis of Lancaster*, 227n
Randolph, Thomas, earl of Moray, 225
Raven, William of, king's clerk, keeper of the rolls of the common bench, 372
Reading, Robert of, his chronicle, 6, 11, 91n, 231 and n
Receipt rolls, see Exchequer
Red Book of Exchequer, 178n, 193n, 270, 330n
Redeswell, Mr. John of, clerk, baron of exchequer, 339, 344
Redvers, earls of Devon, chamberlainship of, 349
Registers, episcopal, 8
Reichskanzler, 58
Religious foundations of the reign, 239
Remembrancers, see Exchequer
Reynolds, Walter, king's clerk, bishop of Worcester, archbishop of Canterbury, keeper of the wardrobe of Edward II as prince of Wales, 73, 78; treasurer, 79; chancellor, 79; archbishop, 79 and n, 80, 94, and n, 100, 128n, 181, 182, 231n, 346 and n; treasurer, 331; his chancellorship, 319-322; keeper of seal, 324
Rhos, lordship of, 154
Rhuvoniog, lordship of, 154

Rhys ap Gruffydd, steward of Cardiganshire, 377; lieutenant of justice of South Wales, 378, 379
Richmond, John of Brittany, earl of, 15n, 18 and n, member of the council of 1318, 122n; joins Edward II against Badlesmere, 147, 222; lieutenant of Scotland, 391
Rivaux, Peter of, baron of exchequer, 334
Rivers, Richard of, sheriff, 101n
Robert, prior of Carmarthen, chamberlain of S. Wales, 382
Roches, Peter des, bishop of Winchester, 334
Rochester, bishop of, see Heath, Haymo
Rochester version of *Flores Historiarum*, 6
Rodney, Richard of, escheator, 363
Rogate, William of, clerk, chamberlain of S. Wales, 381
Rokesle, Richard of, knight, seneschal of Ponthieu, 398
Rolls, keepers of the rolls of chancery, 191; list of, 328-9; see also Chancery, Exchequer and Common Bench
Ros, Sir John, his attack on the younger Despenser, 105
Ros, William of, baron, lieutenant of Scotland, 391
Ross, John, bishop of Carlisle, 232n
Rotuli Scotiae, 2
Roubury, Gilbert of, clerk, justice of common bench, 368, 371; justice of king's bench, 374
Round, Mr. J. H. *The King's Sergeants*, 44n, 49n; *Peerage and Pedigree*, 88 and n
Ruardean, A. Bicknor's house at, 386
Ruthin, John of Grey, lord of, justice of N. Wales, 377, 379
Rutland, an hereditary sheriffdom, 101n

Saint Asaph, bishop of, see David ap Bleddyn
Saint David's, bishop of, see Martin, David
Saint John of Jerusalem, knights of, 230
Saint-Macaire, 224
Saint-Omer, the staple at, 250, 251; opposition to it, 257; suspended, 259; withdrawn, 263
Saintonge, receivers of, 219; Arnold Calhau, seneschal of, 13, 221
Saint-Sardos, war of, 213, 222, 224
Sais, Eineon, bishop of Bangor, 232n
Salisbury, bishop of, see Mortival, Roger
Salmon, John, bishop of Norwich, 105; goes on mission to Avignon, 112; joins the middle party, 117, 120; member of the council of 1318, 122n; chancellor, 134, 139n, 182, 222, 270, 323, 326; gives up chancellorship, 160
Sandall, John, king's clerk, chamberlain of Scotland, 391; chancellor of the exchequer, 345; keeper of the treasury, 332; treasurer, 80n, 332, 335, 128 and n, 101, 188, 189; resigns, 94, 100; bishop of Winchester, 182, 232n; chancellor, 101, 182, 326; member of standing council, 1318, 130; his death, 134
Sandwich, town with cocket seal, 243n, 249n
Sapey, John of, justice of Chester, 128, 129, 378, 380
Sapey, Robert of, king's yeoman, escheator, 127n, 362
Savage, Roger le, knight, escheator, 362
Scalacronica, of Sir Thomas Gray, 7n
Scarborough, 99
Scot, Cristiane, launderer, 312
Scot, Nicholas le, sheriff, 101n
Scotter, Roger of, narrator, 336; baron of the exchequer, 337, 338, 339, 340, 342, 369
Scotland, Edward I and, 32, 36, 38, 206; independence of, 34, 206; chancellors of, 391; controllers of, 392; chamberlains and receivers of, 53, 82, 391-2; Edward II and, 81; English administration in, 82, 269-270, 389-90; campaign in, 86-7; appointment of ministers of, 93; war with, 104; measures against, ineffective, 110; papal mediation between England and, 112; under interdict, 115, 132; the ordainers and, 206, 207; expedition of 1322 against, 228; truces with, 19, 133, 150; negociations with, 114, 150; invasions from, 120, 133, 236, 237; French alliance with, 206, 214; the army of, 227 and n
Scrope, Geoffrey le, knight, justice of the common bench, 369, 372; chief justice of the king's bench, 374
Scrope, Henry le, knight, chief justice of the king's bench, declared sufficient, 1318, 126; justice, 270; of the common bench, 367, 371; chief justice of the king's bench, 373; keeper of the forest, 360

Seagrave, John, the elder, baron, member of the council of 1318, 122n, 130n; keeper of the forest, 359, 360; lieutenant of Scotland, 391; seneschal of Gascony, 396
Seagrave, Gilbert, bishop of London, 232n
Seal, see Cocket, Great, Griffin, Exchequer, Privy, Secret
Seal of the mayor of the merchants of our realm, 248n
Seals for contracts in Gascony, 224
Secret seal, the, writs of, 4, 162, 164; development of, 170, 171; in the chamber, 172
Seneschals of Gascony, 223, 394-397
Serres, M. Borelli de. *Recherches sur Quelques Services Publiques*, 41
Signet, or the secret seal, office of, 175
Shalford, William of, 379n
Sharp, Dr. R., his *London and the Kingdom*, 266n
Sherburn in Elmet, Lancastrian assembly at, 143
Sheriffdoms, hereditary, 101 and n
Sheriffs, the, 31; tax collectors, 52; appointment of, 56, 93, 104; sheriffs and members of parliament, 101n; changes after Bannockburn, 100, 101; removal of, 1318, 129; statute of Lincoln concerning, 152; nominated in chancery, 183; accounts of, 194, 200, 201, 202, 204, 302
Shirburn, Robert of, 380
Shire, knights of the, 101 and n
Shireoaks, Henry of, king's clerk, chamberlain of N. Wales, 381
Shirland, Robert of, mayor of Bordeaux, temporary seneschal of Gascony, 396
Shoreditch, Mr. John of, king's clerk, keeper of the rolls, 373 and n
Shrewsbury, the exchequer at, 54; a staple town, 1326, 261n
Sibthorpe, Thomas of, clerk, 190n, 192n
Somery, John of, baron, member of the standing council, 1318, 130, 131n
Somery, Henry of, canon of Carmarthen, 282n
Southampton, town with cocket seal, 243n, 249n
Spain, Master James of, clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 190, 351
Spigurnell, Henry, knight, justice of the king's bench, 270, 374
Stamford, articles of, 84
Standish, Hugh of, clerk, chamberlain of Chester, 383
Stapeldon, Walter, bishop of Exeter, 21, 232n; treasurer, 21, 31, 134, 314, 332; in his diocese, 21, 135; establishes Stapeldon hall, 135, 240 and n; resigns treasurership, 145; his exchequer reforms, 159, 160, 189, 190 and n, 192, 193, 200, 201, 202; his calendar, 191, 192; chancellor of the exchequer, 344, 345; his death, 167
Staple, system of, 35; of wool, 211 and n; markets of the, 241, 242; policy of crown towards, 243; foreign staples, 242, 244, 247; growth of compulsory staple, 245-7; home staple, 249, 261; fixed at Saint-Omer, 250; difficulties in working, 251; suggestions at the Westminster assembly, 255, 256; conflicting interests, 257; English and foreign staples, 262, 266; abolition of staples, 266; justices of the, 258; mayors of the merchants of the, 366; ordinance of the, 1313, 247, 248; opposition to, 248, 249; and the ordinances, 249; ordinance not executed, 250, 251; agitations against, 257; re-enforced, 258; policy of, abandoned, 261; its influence, 266; second ordinance of the, 1326, 261; execution of, 264; its influence, 266; towns, 243n, 249n, 261n
Stapleton, Gilbert of, king's clerk, escheator, 362
Stapleton, Miles of, knight, steward of the household, 73n, 80, 353
Statute, in parliament, distinguished from an ordinance, 158
Staunton, Hervey of, king's clerk, 49, 50, 57; founder of Michaelhouse, Cambridge, 240; justice, 238, 336; chief baron of exchequer, 339, 340, 342; chancellor of exchequer, 344, 345; chief justice of the common bench, 367-370, 371; chief justice of the king's bench, 374
Stench, John, keeper of Westminster palace, 67n
Steward of England, hereditary office of, 107; see also Leicester, earl of; of the household, see Household
Stirling, 225
Stokes, Ralph of, keeper of the great wardrobe, 136, 357
Stonehall, William, clerk, chamberlain of Chester, 383
Stonor, John of, knight, justice of common bench, 369, 372

Stratford, John, bishop of Winchester, 21, 232 and n, 234; treasurer, 333
Stratton, Adam of, chamberlain of the exchequer, 46
Stubbs, William, bishop of Oxford, 19n, 22, 25, 27, 29, 39, 40, 44
Stury, Richard, burgess of Shrewsbury, mayor of the English merchants, 246, 247 and n, 248, 366
Surrey, John of Warenne, earl of, 15n, 18; drawn to the court party, 99; his feud with Lancaster, 109, 110, 119; joins the middle party, 117; attacks Despenser, 141; joins Edward II against Badlesmere, 147; leaves the opposition, 149; captain in Gascony, 396n
Sutton, William of, justice of N. Wales, 377n
Swanland, Simon, merchant of London, 258, 259n
Swansea, castle of, 140
Swerford, Alexander of, baron of the exchequer, 334

Templars, the, 8, 14, 168, 230
Tenths, the crusading, 229
Thompson, Sir Edward Maunde, 6
Thornbury, Walter of, king's clerk, 386; chancellor of Ireland, 388; treasurer of Dublin exchequer, 388
Thorntoft, William, clerk of the hanaper, 181n
Threckingham, Lambert of, clerk, baron of exchequer, 343, 336; justice of common bench, 368; justice of king's bench, 374
Tibotot, Payn, knight, justice of Chester, 378, 380; keeper of the forest, 360
Tintern version of *Flores Historiarum*, 6
Towns, growth of, 240; of the staple, see Staple
Trade, organisation of, 35; control of, by the crown, 242; English merchants and foreign trade, 246; encouragement of the cloth trade, 261, 262, 265; see also Staple and Merchants
Travers, John, king's clerk, treasurer's remembrancer, 347, 349; constable of Bordeaux, 398
Treasurer, of the exchequer, see Exchequer; of the Wardrobe, see Wardrobe, keepers of the
Trent, William, keeper of the exchanges, 94n, 364
Trivet, Nicholas, his *Annals*, 8 and n, 172n
Trokelowe, John, his chronicle, 7 and n, 10
Truro, staple town for tin, 261n
Trussell, William, sheriff, 101n
Turner, Mr. G. J., his *Forest Officers* and *Select Pleas of the Forest*, 359; his *Year Books of Edward II*, 55n, 336 and n, 341, 342, 343, 367 and n
Tutbury, Lancaster's castle of, 119, 121

Ugolini, Ugolino, agent of the Frescobaldi in Gascony, 216, 397
Ulster, Richard de Burgh, earl of, lieutenant of Ireland, 384, 387
Umfraville, Robert of, see Angus, earl of
Universities, collegiate foundations at, 239-40; see also Oxford, Cambridge and Dublin
Unwin, Prof. G., 241n, 244n
Uzeste, church of, 217 and n, 218

Valence, Aymer de, see Pembroke, earl of
Valois, Charles of, his aggressions in Gascony, 214, 223, 224
Verdon, Theobald of, baron, justice of Ireland, 385, 387
Vescy, Lady Isabella de, 96 and n
Vienne, the archbishop of, 233; the council of, 230, 388
Villandraut, church and castle of, 217 and n
Viollet, M. Paul. *Histoire des Institutions Politiques et Administratives de la France*, 40

Wake, Thomas, keeper of the forest, 360
Walden, Humphrey of, knight, 336; appointed baron of exchequer, 335n, 336, 340, 344
Wales, Edward I and, 36; disturbances in, 103, 142; the principality quiet, 138; accounts of, 196; representation in parliament, 151, 211 and n; ordinances for north and south, 210; policy of Edward II in Wales, 209-211; and Chester, officers of, 374-384
Wales and the March, policy in, 34; lords of the march join the middle party, 117; Edward I and the march, 137; the march of, 136; disturbances in, 137; policy of the lords of the march, 138; custom of the march,

138, 141, 142, 144; political influence of the lords of the march, 143; their support of Badlesmere, 148; earl of the march of, 153; aggregations of land in the march, 156; feudalism in the march of, 209
Waleys, Augustine le, king's clerk, keeper of the exchanges, 365
Walisshe, Annote la, launderer, 312
Waltham, Roger of, keeper of the wardrobe, his part in reform, 159, 160, 355
Walwayn, Mr. John, king's clerk, escheator, 361, 363, 364; treasurer, 127, 128n, 332
Wardrobe, the office of, 30, 40, 42, 43, 170, 176; following the crown, 54; under Edward I, 62-72; organisation of, 64, 65; a *camera clericorum*, 66; its share in administration, 69; departments of, 71; dispossessed clerks in the exchequer, 107; reform of, 157; its connection with the privy seal, 167; the chamber independent of, 174; reforms under Edward II, 175-180; ordinances of, 175; decline of, 179-180; hanaper separated from, 186; the exchequer and the, 189; separation of departments, 197; seal kept in, 322; purveyances certified in, 298, 302, 316; accounts of, deficit in, 37 and n; revenue accounts, 51, 52, 82 and n; chamber revenues in, 169; *foreign accounts*, 178; and accounts of the great seal, 186; *receipts*, 187; 195, 196, 198, 199 and n, 201, 202, 203, 204; household accounts in, 306, 314, 315, 316; chief butler's account in, 314; accounts of the kitchen, 290; clerks of, 61, 65, 66; oppose the ordinances, 106, 311, 355; cofferer of the, 65, 272, 273, 311, 315; list of cofferers, 356; clerks of the cofferer, 273; controllership of, and the keepership of the privy seal, 108, 162; controller of the, 65; and keeper of the privy seal, 65; to be appointed in parliament, 93; controllers, 177, 271-2, 273, 290, 293, 305, 311, 316, 317; list of, 355; keeper or treasurer of, 53, 65, 68; to be appointed in parliament, 93; 178, 179, 270, and 271-318 *passim*, 314, 315, 322, 324n; list of keepers, 355; officers of, 97, 351, 353; launderers, 312; *ostiarius*, 65, 66, 276; *sub-ostiarius*, 66; usher, 274, 276; records of, 2-4, 186, 190, 193; silver in the, 296; seal of the, see privy seal; the great, 71, 177; its keepers, 357; the privy, 71, 72; of Edward of Carnarvon as prince of Wales, 72, 73; of queen Isabella, 72 and n; of Thomas of Lancaster, 72; see also Great Wardrobe, Privy Wardrobe, Chamber and Household
Warenne, John, earl of, see Surrey, earl of
Warin, John, king's clerk, chamberlain of the exchequer, 351
Warley, Ingelard of, king's clerk, keeper of the wardrobe, 73, 81, 355; accounts of, 82, 97; loses keepership, 102 and n; baron of the exchequer, 107, 108, 169, 336; chief baron of exchequer, 339, 341, 343
Wards of the king, 280; see also Household
Warwick, earls of, as hereditary chamberlains, 48
Warwick, Guy Beauchamp, earl of, 11 and n; 13n; character of, 17, 18, 49 and n; in opposition to the king, 86, 95; treachery of, 99; king's principal counsellor, 104; hereditary chamberlain of the exchequer, 67, 107, 349, 350
Wayte, Richard le, escheator, 363
Welford, Geoffrey of, chancery clerk, keeper of the seal, 325
Well, Robert of, king's clerk, controller of Scotland, 392
Wellesworth, Roger of, king's clerk, escheator, 363
Wells, bishop of, see Droxford, John
Welsh war, 1282-4, 69
Welsh, their dislike of Despenser, 142
Welshpool, fighting for, 103
Westminster, parliament at, see Parliament
Westmorland, an hereditary sheriffdom, 101n, 129
Weston, Mr. John of, king's clerk, chamberlain of Scotland, 392
Weston, William of, in Gascony, 222; escheator, 364
Wettenhall, Adam of, king's clerk,
Wigton, Gilbert of, controller of the chamberlain of N. Wales, 381 wardrobe, retains office, 1318, 126, 270, 355; assists in drafting household ordinance of York, 131, 270; gives up controllership, 136; keeper of the great wardrobe, 357

Willard, Prof. J. F. *Taxation on Moveables*, 43n, 237
Winchelsea, Thomas of, archbishop of Canterbury, 20, 32, 37, 70, 79, 86, 91; excommunicates Langton, 98, 100, 228; death of, 230
Winchester, bishops of, see Assier, Rigaud of; Sandall, John; Stratford, John
Winchester, earl of, see Despenser, Hugh le, the elder
Winchester, Mr. Elias of, clerk, baron of Dublin exchequer, 335n
Winchester, staple town in 1326, 261n
Wingfield, Roger of, king's clerk, 172
Winter, John, canon of Carmarthen, 383n
Wisham, John of, knight, seneschal of Gascony, 396
Wodehouse, Robert of, wardrobe clerk, 336; cofferer of the wardrobe, 356; controller of the wardrobe, 160, 355; keeper of the wardrobe, 355; baron of exchequer, 335n, 343
Wogan, John, knight, justice of Ireland, 384, 385
Woodstock, Edmund of, see Kent, earl of; ordinance of, 270, 307
Wool, staple of, 211 and n; see also staple
Worcester, bishops of, see Reynolds, Walter; Maidstone, Walter; Cobham, Thomas
Worcestershire, Guy, earl of Warwick, sheriff of, 1298-1315, 101n
Wyvill, Robert of, queen's clerk, keeper of privy seal, 327, 357

Yarmouth, town with cocket seal, 243n, 249n
Year Books of Edward II, 8 and n, 238 and n; see also Maitland, F. W., Turner, G. J., and Bolland, W. C.
York, archbishop of, see Melton, William of
York, papal taxation in province of, 233; staple town in 1326, 261n; revised taxation of province of, 236; parliaments at, see Parliament
Yskennin, lordship of, secured by Despenser 154

PUBLIC
DEPTFORD
LIBRARIES